

Chapter 801 - Announcing the Result of the Battle

MGA: Chapter 801 - Announcing the Result of the Battle

“Bastard, why aren’t you thanking Lord Earth King?” Old Liu’s expression turned to joy, then he quickly kicked the seventh brother.

“Thank you Lord Earth King, thank you Lord Earth King!” He hurriedly kowtowed in gratefulness, and judging by his appearance, he truly did seem to know his wrongs.

As for Xuan Xiaochao and the others, they were smart people. Even though they loathed the betrayal, when the Earth King himself spoke like so, they could naturally say nothing about it. So, they just acted as if they saw nothing.

After all, the current Crippling Night Demon Sect was in pieces. They were already akin to scattered sand, all divided, so they should join hands and work together, not continue fighting within the sect.

After dealing with the seventh brother’s business, the Earth King grinned smugly, and said, “Let’s go. It’s time to announce to the world the result of the battle of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.”

As he spoke, he took a special look back at Chu Feng as well as the Royal Armament in his hand. At that instant, his grin grew wider because he looked very forward to how everyone would react when they heard Murong Xun’s Royal Armament had landed into Chu Feng’s hand.

Afterwards, with the Earth King leading the way, Chu Feng and the others finally returned to the surface of the Depraved Ravine.

In this battle, the Crippling Night Demon Sect had lost quite a few of their members. Of the over two thousand experts, nearly five hundred died.

Over a thousand were injured was well.

However, no matter if they had serious injuries, or light injuries, as long as they still had a breath of air in them, they remained upright in the air, showing the majesty and might of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

At that moment, all of the observers were there. Shocked expressions were all over their faces, and as they looked at the experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, their eyes were full of respect.

It was because they had personally seen the entirety of that battle. Although they didn't know what happened deep underground, they had seen the Eighth Immortal escaping in a hurry with Murong Xun and Murong Wan, completely ignoring everyone else from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. That was why the entire army of the Immortal Execution Archipelago they sent here—over a thousand experts—were nearly all defeated.

That battle was very intense. Not only were there confrontations to the death of Martial Lords, there was even the fight between two Martial Kings. It was truly a feast for their eyes.

They had also truly seen the power of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Exactly how powerful? So powerful it defeated the current overlord—as recognized by the public—of the Eastern Sea Region, the “Immortal Execution Archipelago”.

No matter how everyone speculated the strength of the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the Crippling Night Demon Sect used facts today to tell the world who was the true ruler.

Although the current Crippling Night Demon Sect was in pieces, if they reunited, they would still be invincible!

“Look! It's the Earth King! The Earth King and the others have come out!” Suddenly, someone shouted. He saw them fly out from underground and in the end, stand at the very front of everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“As I thought, they’re still more experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect that we haven’t seen! So they were underground... and there were even ten peak Martial Lords hidden! It should be them who took care of the Ninth Immortal, right?”

After seeing the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, some people made guesses as to why the Ninth Immortal never showed up again after leaving.

“Look! Who’s the young person walking together with Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming? The silver-coloured spear in his hand looks exactly the same as Murong Xun’s Royal Armament!”

However, when people saw Chu Feng, as well as the silver-coloured spear in his hand, they were devastatingly stunned.

“My gods, isn’t that Wuqing? Wuqing, who placed first in the Misty Peak, and is acclaimed as an extraordinary genius? Why is he walking together with the Crippling Night Demon Sect? Could he be a part of them?” Soon, someone recognized that he was Wuqing.

“He’s Wuqing? He’s so young! Judging by his appearance, he should just be a bit over twenty years old, right?”

“I’ve heard that this child has absurd fighting strength! Although he is only a rank two Martial Lord, he can even defeat rank five Martial Lords! Because the World Spirit who made a contract with him is from the Asura Spirit World!”

“Hmph. He not only has outstanding talent and exceptional fighting strength, he is even a person who fears nothing. Back then, I had personally seen Zhan Feng, the son of the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s Second Immortal, crippled because he was bothering his friend, Chun Wu!” After recognizing Wuqing, they were even more shocked. Some also started to spread Chu Feng’s glorious achievements.

“My gods, it is truly the exact same! Could that be Murong Xun’s Royal Armament?” However, the thing that attracted more attention was still the silver-coloured spear in Chu Feng’s hand.

“Impossible. Although their appearances are the same, the atmosphere surrounding them is different. The silver-coloured spear in Wuqing’s hand is just like a normal armament. Not to mention having the airs of a ruler descending into this world, which a Royal Armament has, it is inferior to even an Elite Armament.”

But soon, people discovered that the silver-coloured spear in Chu Feng’s hand didn’t have the might Murong Xun’s Royal Armament had.

“Right right right! It is definitely fake. How could Royal Armaments be that common? Moreover, why would Murong Xun’s Royal Armament be in his hand?” When they heard those words, most people felt that the Royal Armament in Chu Feng’s hand was fake.

“Everyone, thank you for coming the distance to watch this spectacle. Perhaps today’s battle was a bit different from what you’ve all expected, but I am certain that today’s battle was much more exciting than what you’ve all expected.” Just at that moment, the Earth King spoke. He had a smile on his face as he looked at the crowd, and he said very proudly, “I must admit that in today’s battle, the Crippling Night Demon Sect has suffered heavy losses. There is a total sacrifice of four hundred and eighty-six brothers, and there are innumerable injured. Almost on every single brother’s body, there are light or serious injuries. For defending the honor of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, they’ve shed their own blood.

“However, we have won. The brothers of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, with their blood, and even with their lives, protected the territory of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and protected the honor of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“We completely defeated the overconfident and foolish Immortal Execution Archipelago, who wanted to seize our land. We killed over a thousand of their experts, and even the Ninth Immortal has died by our hands. We used strength to tell them what sort of price they will pay by making the Crippling Night Demon Sect an enemy.

“Even the arrogant young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Xun, could only escape by relying on the Eighth Immortal’s

sacrifice. I'm sure everyone has seen that. This... is the Crippling Night Demon Sect. No matter who it is, those who dare offend us will pay the price of blood."

The Earth King's words were filled with emotion, and he made it so the Crippling Night Demon Sect was the righteous one and the Immortal Execution Archipelago a greedy dog. The last few sentences especially indirectly told everyone that though the Eighth Immortal was able to escape, he was, in reality, fated to die.

Chapter 802 - Mastered Royal Armament

MGA: Chapter 802 - Mastered Royal Armament

“What? The Eighth Immortal sacrificed his own life, so that’s why he looked like that?”

“No wonder. No wonder the Eighth Immortal became that powerful. So he was fighting by burning up his own life. Doesn’t this mean the ones able to safely escape were only the siblings Murong Xun and Murong Wan? The Eighth Immortal is also destined to fall because of this battle?”

“Heavens! This is unimaginable! Not only did the Immortal Execution Archipelago lose over a thousand Martial Lords due to this expedition, they even lost the Eighth and Ninth Immortal! These are truly heavy losses!”

Indeed, after hearing the Earth King’s words, everyone was even more shocked. Although a thousand-plus Martial Lords was a frightening number, to the Immortal Execution Archipelago that was akin to the sun in the sky, it actually wasn’t much.

The Eighth Immortal and the Ninth Immortal, on the other hand, were different. The Nine Immortals were titled as the strongest fighting strength of the Immortal Execution Archipelago—they were the nine true generals of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. In this battle, they had lost

two

of these generals. This was a true heavy loss.

“Although the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago are in conflict, I must say a single person’s death in today’s battle was not something I had wished for—the granddaughter of the head

of the Nine Immortals, Ya Fei.” The Earth King feigned sympathy and spoke with a face of pity.

“Ya Fei? One of the three great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region, Ya Fei? She also died?”

“Yeah! Ya Fei and Murong Wan entered underground together, but I haven’t seen her come out. Could she have truly died?”

“That can’t be true, can it? Ya Fei is dead? That is truly quite a pity, a beauty like that to have...”

Upon hearing that Ya Fei had died already, the people on scene were astonished, and all of them felt pity. After all, even though such a great beauty like Ya Fei was unrelated to any of them, she being alive was still a beautiful scenery to behold. It was quite a pity for her to have died.

“I’m sure everyone must think that her death was due to the Crippling Night Demon Sect. However, you are wrong. The true murderer of Ya Fei isn’t anyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. It is Ya Fei’s fiancé, the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Xun,” said the Earth King.

“What? It was Murong Xun who killed Ya Fei?”

“How is that possible? Why would Murong Xun kill Ya Fei? What exactly happened?” The crowd was like a frying pan as they instantly exploded with discussion. They felt that such news was extraordinarily unbelievable.

“Perhaps you feel disbelief, but if you had seen Murong Xun’s side of insanity, you will know how coldhearted of a person he is, the so-called number one genius of the Eastern Sea Region.

“Lady Ya Fei was indeed killed by him. He didn’t even leave a complete corpse behind. As for why, it’s because he discovered that Ya Fei was disloyal to him. So, that’s why she was killed.

“However, he had paid the price for this, because his Royal Armament was taken by Wuqing. The sixth Royal Armament of the Immortal Execution Archipelago no longer belongs to them, but to Wuqing.” As the Earth King spoke, he looked at the silver-coloured spear in Chu Feng’s hand.

“That isn’t true, is it? The silver-coloured spear in Wuqing’s hand is truly Murong Xun’s Royal Armament?”

“It was Wuqing who took it from Murong Xun? How is that possible? The difference in their cultivation levels is enormous! How was Wuqing able to take the Royal Armament from Murong Xun?” They were all dumbfounded, feeling that it wasn’t real.

“I know that perhaps you don’t believe this is real. That is understandable.

“It’s because you’ve felt the powerful might of the Royal Armament when it was in Murong Xun’s hand. Yet, as Wuqing holds it, there is no such thing.

“However, you must not know that Royal Armaments have awarenesses. Before recognizing its master, sometimes Royal Armaments will intentionally conceal its own aura. In times like those, in the perspective of normal people, they will appear to be like a normal piece of useless steel. They will appear completely worthless. Only true experts would be able to see its essence.

“However, after the Royal Armament recognizes one as its master, it will give the master its power in varying levels. Then, in accordance to the strength of the master, it becomes stronger or weaker.

“In reality, Mastered Royal Armaments typically only exist within the realm of Martial Kings or above, because those who are not Martial Kings will have great difficulty controlling the power of a Royal Armament. Or, perhaps, they are unsuited for using the Royal Armament, and thus they wouldn’t be able to receive its approval.

“However, there are also two possible circumstances in which the Royal Armament approves of a person weaker than itself. The first is by force: a

Martial King uses forceful methods to assist the person that the Royal Armament does not approve of.

“Truthfully speaking, Murong Xun is that person because I can tell that he simply hasn’t truly received the approval of the Royal Armament. It was merely forced to serve him.

“The second possibility is that the person who wishes to obtain the Royal Armament has extremely exceptional talent. Despite being below a Martial King, that person would still receive the approval of the Royal Armament.

“And I feel that Wuqing is this person with exceptional talent, because he is a publicly recognized genius in the Eastern Sea Region. He not only possess powerful fighting strength, he is also the only person in the Eastern Sea Region to have made a contract with a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World.

“His talent is unprecedented, and I doubt there will be any in the future that can match his. He is, without a doubt, the strongest genius in the Eastern Sea Region. Even that Zi family’s Divine Body may not be comparable to his.

“Although Wuqing’s current cultivation is less than Murong Xun’s, this is only because his time in cultivation is short.

“I’m certain when he reaches Murong Xun’s age, his cultivation would be one that Murong Xun could only dream of, one that he could never obtain in his life.” The Earth King spoke with extreme passion.

“Yeah! Wuqing is still young right now. If he was truly at Murong Xun’s age, his strength would really defy all logic!” After hearing the Earth King’s words, the people in the crowd also nodded.

He was very pleased by the crowd’s reaction. So, he cast his gaze at Chu Feng, and said with a smile, “Wuqing, I’m sure you know how to subdue this Royal Armament. How about you do it and show it to everyone?”

“It will also widen the horizons of everyone here. Let them see what the might of a Mastered Royal Armament appears like.”

“Mm.” Chu Feng nodded. In the instant he held the Royal Armament, he knew how to determine whether it would be willing to serve him or not. It was very simple: just meld his aura within.

However, that was very dangerous. The Royal Armament was so powerful, and Chu Feng was currently so weak. If it approved of Chu Feng, it was equal to suppressing itself because it didn't matter how much more powerful the Royal Armament, it would still change due to the strength of its master.

With the Royal Armament in his hands, even though it would greatly increase Chu Feng's fighting strength, the true power of the Royal Armament could not be used.

So, if it recognized Chu Feng as its master, Chu Feng could benefit a bit from it.

However, if it didn't approve of Chu Feng, then he would receive backlash—which might even lead to death. At least, the Royal Armament possessed the ability to take away Chu Feng's life.

But Chu Feng was confident. Even the Demon Sealing Sword approved of him, so why would he be afraid that the Royal Armament

wouldn't

approve of him?

As such, under the gazes of countless people, as Chu Feng held the silver-coloured spear with one hand high up, he willed a strand of his aura into the Royal Armament.

BOOM

In an instant, the sky darkened. Violent winds arose, and black clouds swirled about. Lightning flashed, and in but a moment, chaos was

everywhere.

Everyone's figures were submerged. The only thing they could see was Chu Feng who stood in the air, holding the Royal Armament.

It was as if the world had been ruled over, and it was as if Chu Feng were the ruler of this world.

Chapter 803 - Absolute Submission

MGA: Chapter 803 - Absolute Submission

The lightning in the air surged about, and black clouds permeated the air. Other than the light due to the lightning in Chu Feng's position, the entire sky was dark. The might of the Royal Armament was shown without restraint.

“This is so powerful. It is simply many times more powerful than when Murong Xun revealed the Royal Armament before. Is it because this is the true power of the Royal Armament, or, like the Earth King said, because it truly approved of Chu Feng?” Such a change made the crowd sign in admiration.

hmm However, just at that moment, the might that flooded the sky abruptly shrank. With Chu Feng as the center, it started entering Chu Feng's body like a vortex.

As it entered Chu Feng's body, Chu Feng's long hair fluttered about. Lightnings emerged into his eyes, and the might of a ruler descending from above emanated from his body.

Most importantly, the symbols on the silver-coloured spear started endlessly flashing layer by layer. Everyone could feel that the silver-coloured spear was connecting with Chu Feng, and channeling powerful energy into Chu Feng's body.

“This feeling...” Even Chu Feng's eyes lit up when he felt the power of the Royal Armament surging into his body.

With the channeling of such energy, Chu Feng's aura actually started to rapidly rise. With the three lightnings, Chu Feng was now a rank two Martial Lord.

Soon, he made a breakthrough. Everyone could feel that Chu Feng's aura was one of a rank three Martial Lord.

After Chu Feng became a rank three Martial Lord, the energy also started diminishing. In the end, the clouds dispersed, the lightning faded away, and the sky and earth also returned to their former state. However, what changed were the expressions of the people, as they were dumbfounded with widened mouths.

They could all feel that the Royal Armament in Chu Feng's hand was completely different from before. The unique might of a Royal Armament once again appeared.

Since Chu Feng's cultivation wasn't at the peak, the current might of the Royal Armament was not as powerful as Murong Xun's. However, it exuded an odd feeling: when the Royal Armament was in Chu Feng's hand, it seemed to be more obedient. It seemed to be absolutely submissive towards Chu Feng.

In reality, there was even shock in the Earth King's eyes. Although he already knew the Royal Armament would approve of Chu Feng, he didn't expect

this

situation to occur.

He said with a disbelieving tone, "From the legends... It's Absolute Submission!"

"Is it truly Absolute Submission?" Old Liu also couldn't help crying out when he heard that. His aged face as well was filled with shock.

"Big Brother, what does Absolute Submission mean?" asked the Gold-cloak Brothers at the same time.

"Yeah! Senior Liu, what happened? Wuqing's cultivation increased because of the Royal Armament?" Xuan Xiaochao and the others also

spoke.

In actuality, no one knew what Absolute Submission meant. Even Chu Feng himself didn't. So, everyone's gazes unavoidably landed on the Earth King and Old Liu.

“Royal Armaments possess awareness. Even though it gives its approval, it is only a cooperative relationship. It is no more than lending its power to its master, then filling itself with its master's power. That is the most typical method of Mastering.

“However, there is another method that is rather special. It is not a cooperative relationship, but rather the Royal Armament is

willing

to give its everything to this master and this master alone. It can approve of no other master, and it will die when the master dies.

“If the master unluckily passes away, the Royal Armament will be instantly destroyed as well. This method of Mastering is extremely rare, and it is named as Absolute Submission, because from that very instant, the Royal Armament is no longer the ruler of the world, but a subordinate serving its master.

“However, there are already barely any people who can obtain the approval of the Royal Armament. They must have extremely powerful strength, and extremely excellent aptitude.

“As for ones that can make a Royal Armament perform Absolute Submission, in all the records of the Eastern Sea Region, ever since ancient times, there has not been a single person who has been able to do that,” said the Earth King gravely.

“What? There's something like this? Ever since ancient times, no one has been able to make a Royal Armament absolutely submit?”

“Doesn’t this mean that the Royal Armament in Wuqing’s hand is in Absolute Submission? If that’s true, isn’t he the only person who could cause a Royal Armament to absolutely submit in the Eastern Sea Region?”

When they heard those words, another commotion arose in the crowd. Not only from the observing crowd, but also from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. At that moment, they all cast their gazes closely on the Earth King, awaiting his answer.

“A clear indication of Absolute Submission is that the Royal Armament will give a portion of its power to the master, representing its decision in submission. Wuqing’s cultivation instantly rising has proven everything already,” said the Earth King.

“Heavens! Doesn’t this mean that the Royal Armament is truly in submission towards Wuqing?”

“Impressive, too impressive. As expected of an exceptional genius such as him. How enormous is this Wuqing’s potential? How powerful is his aptitude?”

After receiving the confirmation, the crowd boiled with excitement. Everyone subconsciously cast their gazes at Chu Feng. Moreover, sincere respect and admiration filled their eyes which glinted with a fiery glint.

With everything that had happened, they had to reassess the young man Wuqing, because he seemed to be much more powerful than the rumours said. Not only had he made a contract with a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World, a Royal Armament was in Absolute Submission because of him.

He did so many things from the legends!

They had to admit that Chu Feng’s talent truly reached an inestimable stage. If this young man were able to develop, he would most definitely become a great character in the Eastern Sea Region who would be immensely powerful.

“Submissive to me, huh? Silver Dragon Spear, you’ve given me quite the surprise.

“But don’t worry. I will absolutely not disappoint you. I will let you know you’ve followed the correct master.” Holding the Silver Dragon Spear in his hands, Chu Feng joyfully smiled.

Silver Dragon Spear was the name of the armament. In the instant he successfully received the approval of the Royal Armament, Chu Feng learnt of its name.

Moreover, what Chu Feng learnt of was not only its name, but also the power of the Silver Dragon Spear.

Despite being a typical Royal Armament, it was still very powerful. That being said, Chu Feng was simply unable to use the true power of the Royal Armament. With it, in addition to his current cultivation of a rank three Martial Lord, even if his opponent were a rank six Martial Lord, Chu Feng would still be able to put up a fight. Even if he couldn’t defeat that person, he would still be able to escape uninjured.

It was because the Royal Armament was the same as Elite Armaments and Incomplete Royal Armaments. The wielder’s strength would increase due to the armament. In the instant one held the Royal Armament, their entire fighting strength would receive a huge increase.

Chapter 804 - A Sincere Invitation

MGA: Chapter 804 - A Sincere Invitation

After announcing the results of the battle, letting the world know of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's brutal defeat, and letting them experience Chu Feng's powerful aptitude, the Earth King drove out the observers from the Depraved Ravine.

They also reactivated the Sealing Spirit Formation over the Depraved Ravine. Since they already knew the method of activation, doing it again proved no difficulty to them.

As for the Demon Sealing Sword, putting aside that there was simply no one who could approach it due to the Spirit Formation, even if one could, pretty much no one could take it away. So, the Earth King and the others were not worried because they knew very well the immense power of the sword.

“Wuqing, the Immortal Execution Archipelago's been horrifically defeated this time, so they will most definitely retaliate. I'm sure they will send an army soon, so let us quickly leave this place first,” the Earth King said to Chu Feng after examining the formation, confirming there were no holes and that it was fully activated.

“Mm.” Chu Feng nodded, then left with the Earth King, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, and Xuan Xiaochao and the others. As for the others from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, they hid their identities and blended in with the several tens of thousands of people who came to watch the spectacle, leaving together with them.

When everyone left, the Depraved Ravine was so silent it was a bit odd. One could only hear bursts of wind; it was completely quiet otherwise, to the point it was even a bit frightening.

However, just at that moment, outside the Spirit Formation, there was a squirming in the air. Quickly after, two people appeared.

They were both female. One was middle-aged with suitable clothes for her appearance, while the other was a sweet and beautiful young woman.

Both of them came from the Misty Peak. The young one was Chun Wu, and the middle-aged one was the guardian of the Misty Peak, one of the most influential characters of the Eastern Sea Region, Lady Piaomiao.

At that moment, Lady Piaomiao was standing in the air. She held a broken mud jar, and she was staring in the direction Chu Feng and the others left at with her fierce eyes. After a long while, she said, “Chu Feng’s talent has surpassed my expectation. No wonder, no wonder...”

“Master, do we let Chu Feng and the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect go just like that? We don’t need to follow him?” asked Chun Wu a bit worriedly. She didn’t understand the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect well, so she wasn’t too reassured.

“There’s no need. Although sometimes the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect don’t choose what methods they use to achieve their goals, they do emphasize righteousness. They won’t take away Chu Feng’s Royal Armament, nor will they harm Chu Feng.

“After all, Chu Feng had helped them out greatly this time. One could almost say it was he who saved all of their lives. They barely have enough time to thank him, so why would they harbour malicious intents?” Lady Piaomiao said.

“But Master, when they were in the underground palace before, didn’t you say the Earth King would definitely kill him if Chu Feng pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword?” Chun Wu said.

“Hoh...” Lady Piaomiao calmly smiled, then said, “The Demon Sealing Sword is very significant to the Crippling Night Demon Sect. I had once heard that before the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect passed away,

he had once said the Crippling Night Demon Sect would be led by whoever was able to pull out the Demon Sealing Sword.

“However, not to mention being able to pull out the Demon Sealing Sword, there is not even anyone in the Crippling Night Demon Sect who can approach it. If Chu Feng had truly pulled it out, wouldn’t that mean the Crippling Night Demon Sect would be led by a brat none of them were familiar with?”

“Putting aside the fact that the Four Protectors wouldn’t be willing to, even the scattered disciples of the Crippling Night Demon Sect wouldn’t be willing to. As a higher-up of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, the Earth King most definitely knew that.

“So, if Chu Feng had truly pulled it out, for the sake of the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s stability, he would have killed Chu Feng because he would not allow the Crippling Night Demon Sect to be controlled by an outsider. After all, to the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, only the Four Protectors are qualified to lead the Crippling Night Demon Sect,” Lady Piaomiao explained.

“But Chu Feng still received the protection of the Demon Sealing Sword—he already did something they were all unable to do. Would they not kill Chu Feng right now for the peace of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and to avoid future problems?” Chun Wu was still worried.

“Like I said, the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect emphasize righteousness. As long as their forbidden issues are not violated, there will definitely be nothing that will happen to Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng is also very smart and he didn’t pass that line. So, the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect will not kill him. Not only that, they should also want to pull him into their sect. After all, they aren’t fools. No matter who, they would want to get closer to a genius like Chu Feng,” Lady Piaomiao explained.

“I understand.” Only after hearing all that was Chun Wu more at ease. However, when she looked at the broken mud jar hand, she lightly frowned

and asked with great confusion, “Actually, I still have one thing I don’t understand. Master, why did you hiddenly save her?”

“Perhaps keeping her will be useful.” Lady Piaomiao made an unfathomable smile, and as she spoke, she also looked at the broken mud jar in her hands.

On the surface, the mud jar appeared very ordinary. It was even horribly broken. However, inside, countless blinding runes flickered. Their light reflected off one another, forming several powerful formations.

In the very center of those formations, there was actually a perfect, undamaged Consciousness lying peacefully.

Not to mention Chu Feng, even the Earth King didn’t detect Lady Piaomiao nor Chun Wu in the slightest. So, after sealing the Depraved Ravine, they left without a worry.

After passing through the Stone Forest of Death, they travelled for several tens of thousands of miles before setting up camp on a mountain range. Actually, they didn’t really need to rest due to their cultivation levels, but it was just that the Earth King had something he wanted to discuss with Chu Feng.

After setting up camp, Old Liu ordered the eighth and ninth brother to find some food. When they did though, it was already deep into the night.

However, the eighth and ninth brother were very competent in their searching. Not only were there meat and vegetables, there was even wine.

At that moment, despite being already late in the night, as they sat on the apex of a mountain peak, within the scenery of the night, there

was

a special type of ambience as they drank wine and ate meat, especially after such a perilous battle. Such a life did become an extravagant sort of enjoyment.

“Wuqing, I have a request. I just wonder if you can agree to it or not?” Suddenly, the Earth King smiled and looked at Chu Feng. Moreover, everyone all put down the wine bowls in their hands and orderly cast their gazes at Chu Feng.

“Senior, just speak your mind. As long as I, Wuqing, can do it, I will not refuse,” replied Chu Feng with a smile.

“Wuqing, your talent is outstanding. You are a genius extremely rarely seen in the Eastern Sea Region. Representing the Crippling Night Demon Sect, I would like to invite you to join us. I wonder... do you agree or not?” said the Earth King sincerely.

Moreover, as he spoke those words, his eyes were full of hope, yet also contained a bit of worry. He was afraid—afraid Chu Feng would refuse. After all, he was such a rare genius. Everyone knew Chu Feng’s future was inestimable. Even if he refused, it was within reason.

It was actually not only the Earth King who worried. Old Liu, Xuan Xiaochao, Fu Fengming, You Tonghan, and almost everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect who were there worried.

Because they really hoped Chu Feng could enter the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

Chapter 805 - Uniting the Crippling Night Demon Sect

MGA: Chapter 805 - Uniting the Crippling Night Demon Sect

Chu Feng seemed to have already expected the Earth King's invitation. In addition, since the day he paid respects to Qiu Canfeng, becoming his disciple, he already took himself as a part of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. So, there was simply no reason to refuse.

As a result, Chu Feng unhesitatingly responded, "In the Crippling Night Demon Sect, experts are as common as clouds. It is the number one sect in the Eastern Sea Region. To be able to join is my honour! I can't even thank Senior's generosity quick enough, so how could I possibly refuse?"

"Haha, good, good, good!"

"To be able to have a person like you, the Crippling Night Demon Sect will definitely be much more powerful in the future! With all of you representing the younger generation, we old ones can be at ease! Hahaha..." The Earth King was elated when he heard Chu Feng's reply, and his smile on his aged face made it seem like a steamed bun.

As he spoke, he even looked at Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming. In his eyes, there were relieved emotions. He would have no need to worry the Crippling Night Demon Sect lacking any successors with these young ones here.

"Brother Wuqing, I welcome you for joining us. From now on, you truly become a part of our family."

Xuan Xiaochao raised his wine bowl, and toasted Chu Feng. At the same time, You Tonghan and Fu Fengming also toasted him. It could be seen that they didn't have any sort of envy, and instead, they welcomed him

earnestly from the bottom of their hearts. That was truly a rare scene to behold.

“Brother Wuqing, I’ve heard you have a very powerful master. If I may ask, who is your master, to be able to develop such an excellent disciple such as yourself?” asked Fu Fengming expectantly.

“Senior Fu Fengming, it’s not that I want to hide it, but my master has forbidden me from saying his name. So, I do ask for your forgiveness,” said Chu Feng with a calm smile.

The Four Protectors were not on good terms with one another; they even viewed each other as enemies. Moreover, Chu Feng didn’t trust Fu Fengming and the others completely, so naturally, he would not tell them he was Qiu Canfeng’s disciple.

Also, Qiu Canfeng did tell Chu Feng to not tell anyone else in the Crippling Night Demon Sect where he was located, with the exception of Fu Liansheng. As such, Chu Feng had to diligently handle this issue.

“Hah, no matter, no matter! It’s your secret after all,” You Tonghan said unworriedly.

However, Fu Fengming lightly furrowed his brows. Then, he said, “Mm, the order of one’s master is akin to the size of the sky. That’s understandable. However, Brother Wuqing, since you’ve entered the Crippling Night Demon Sect, I do hope you can treat us as we treat you. If I may ask, what is your true name?”

“Yeah! Brother Wuqing, what are you called? And don’t say you’re truly called Wuqing!” You Tonghan also curiously looked at Chu Feng when they heard those words.

As he faced such gazes filled with desire, Chu Feng thought for a while, and decided not to hide it. He said, “Wuqing is indeed not my real name. I am Chu Feng.”

“Chu Feng? Good name, good name.

“Brother Chu Feng, don’t worry. You must be hiding your name because you have some sort of unspeakable hidden trouble. We won’t reveal this information.”

After knowing Chu Feng’s name, Fu Fengming and the others didn’t ask much and instead, starting chatting with him.

Then, later on, the Earth King and the others seniors went to rest. Only Chu Feng, Xuan Xiaochao, Fu Fengming, and You Tonghan remained up.

They chatted for a very long time, and the more they did, the more absorbed they got. Chu Feng not only felt that the three of them were rather decent, the three of them also respected Chu Feng quite a bit.

The four of them even called each other “brothers”, and with the power of wine, Chu Feng started revealing his admiration towards the Four Protectors, taking the opportunity to find out Fu Liansheng’s whereabouts.

“Brother Fu Fengming, my respect towards Senior Fu Liansheng is like an endlessly surging river, and also like the uncontrollable flooding of the

Yellow River

.

“To be able to see Senior Fu Liansheng would be a wish I, Chu Feng, always desired for. Brother Fu Fengming, would it be possible for you to introduce me to Senior Fu Liansheng?” Chu Feng looked at and asked Fu Fengming.

“This...” However, when he heard those words, Fu Fengming furrowed his brows slightly.

A forehead of vertical black lines

made it seem that he was in a very awkward situation.

“Ahh, Brother Chu Feng, it’s not that we want to lie to you, but as the disciples of the Protectors, even if others don’t know where our masters

are, would we

not

know?

“However, our masters have very odd natures. They disallow us from telling anyone their locations. No matter who, it isn’t allowed.

“So, it’s not that Fu Fengming doesn’t trust you and isn’t willing to bring you to see Senior Fu Liansheng, it’s just that he truly doesn’t dare to.” You Tonghan helped Xuan Xiaochao explain when he heard Chu Feng’s words.

“Ah, I see. Brother Fu Fengming, I didn’t know about that, so I have offended you. Just ignore what I just said.” Chu Feng could tell that they didn’t seem to be tricking them, but he still intentionally put up a dispirited expression.

“Brother Chu Feng, you don’t need to be disappointed. At present, the Crippling Night Demon Sect has nearly reunited. My master will show himself. Since you are also a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, you will see my master sooner or later,” Fu Fengming said.

“Reunite the Crippling Night Demon Sect?” Chu Feng was taken aback.

“Mm. There was a reason why we set up a trap to lure the Immortal Execution Archipelago here.

“At present, the Crippling Night Demon Sect is in pieces. However, the Immortal Execution Archipelago views us as the biggest threat to them and they are hiddenly searching for the whereabouts of our members. After doing so, they kill them. Their goal is to hiddenly remove us, a future problem for them.

“If the Crippling Night Demon Sect does not fight back, then we will be in grave trouble. Our masters also know about this issue, so the reason we showed ourselves is actually due to the orders of our masters.

“Since they have very important statuses, they will temporarily avoid showing themselves. However, we three can represent them three. Look here: this is the Protector’s Badge. We will use this to reunite the Crippling Night Demon Sect.” As Fu Fengming spoke, he took out a special badge. You Tonghan and Xuan Xiaochao also took out theirs.

“But the Crippling Night Demon Sect has been split up for so long! What are all of you preparing to do?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“The Immortal Execution Archipelago views us as a huge enemy so they have already started eradicating the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect—our brothers. However, since they have been secretly doing this, many still do not know about it. After all, following ten-something years of peace, they have already gotten used to their current comfortable life.

“Right now, we want to put the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago into a permanently conflicting relationship, so that those who’ve accustomed to the serene life will feel danger. Only then would they return to the Crippling Night Demon Sect sooner,” Fu Fengming explained.

“Is that successfully progressing?” Chu Feng’s words were on the most crucial part.

Fu Fengming and the others looked at each other, but all helplessly shook their heads and said, “If our masters appeared, then that would be better. After all, they possess great reputation and they are existences everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect revere.

“However, us, on the other hand... It’s too difficult. Our cultivations are after all too weak, nor do we have much fame. Even with our masters’ badges, it is very difficult to convince the young ones.

“Senior Earth King initially refused to come this time. So, that’s why we didn’t hope for his arrival. His appearance was actually quite a joyful surprise.

“However, we have made a good start by defeating the Immortal Execution Archipelago greatly in the Depraved Ravine. Moreover, we’ve set up an opposing relationship with them.

“I’m sure there will be more and more who will be willing to join our ranks, and this is all thanks to Brother Chu Feng. It’s all because of you that we were able to obtain victory! You’re the one who contributed the greatest.”

After speaking, when You Tonghan and the others looked at Chu Feng, there was unavoidably a bit more gratitude in their eyes.

Chapter 806 - Change in the Zi Family

MGA: Chapter 806 - Change in the Zi Family

“Brothers, you think too much of me. It’s because of your complete plan that the Immortal Execution Archipelago were defeated. I just exerted a minimal amount of strength,” Chu Feng said with a bit of embarrassment.

“The reunion of the Crippling Night Demon Sect cannot be rushed. Long discussions and planning are still required, so let’s take it slow. When the time is ripe, when our masters appear, that is when we let the world know the true strength of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.”

“Right right right, we’re just doing some preparation. The true show is for the Four Protectors.” Fu Fengming nodded his head in agreement.

“Ahh, we just don’t know where Senior Qiu Canfeng is,” You Tonghan suddenly said.

“Senior Qiu Canfeng is definitely still in the Eastern Sea Region. As long as we make some movement, he will certainly know about it. At that time, he too will naturally show himself,” said Fu Fengming with a smile.

“That’s right. Senior Qiu Canfeng is the head of the Four Protectors. He is completely loyal to the Crippling Night Demon Sect, so in critical moments of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, he will definitely show himself.” Xuan Xiaochao also spoke.

Judging by their attitudes, Chu Feng could tell at least the three of them respected Qiu Canfeng a lot, despite what their masters felt.

“Come come come! Let’s put aside reuniting the Crippling Night Demon Sect. I’ll tell all of you an interesting thing,” You Tonghan said suddenly with a mysterious smile.

“Brother Han, what interesting thing do you have now? Don’t keep us in suspense and tell us!” urged Xuan Xiaochao.

“Murong Xun has two fiancées; one is Ya Fei, and I’m sure all of you know who the other one is, right?” said You Tonghan smilingly.

Chu Feng heart was shaken when he heard that, because he subconsciously knew You Tonghan’s subsequent words were possibly related to Zi Ling.

“Of course I know! Isn’t it the Divine Body of the Flower Valley’s Zi family? I remember that this Divine Body was very mysterious. Shortly after being born, she disappeared. But recently, I’ve heard she’s reappeared in the Zi family. She was called Zi Yu’er before, and now she’s called Zi Ling.

“I also heard that this legendary Divine Body doesn’t have many accomplishments in cultivation. It could even be said she’s very weak, no different from an ordinary person.

“So, many people speculate that the Zi Ling in the Zi family right now isn’t the true Divine Body.

“Very possibly, the true Divine Body was secretly sent to the Immortal Execution Archipelago when she was born, and has always been in development. As for the current Zi Ling in the Zi family, she is no more than a substitute.” Shortly after speaking, he asked again, “Brother Han, could it be that you have new discoveries?”

“Heh, I don’t know if that Zi Ling is the true Divine Body or not, but on the road, I coincidentally passed the Zi family. So, out of curiosity, I snuck in. I wanted to see what sort of appearance Murong Xun’s other fiancée had, whether she’s worthy of the title of being one of the three great beauties,” You Tonghan said as he chuckled.

“Brother Han, what did that Zi Ling Look like? How did she compare to Ya Fei?” Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming had intrigued expressions on their faces.

“Beautiful. Absolutely beautiful. Ya Fei can’t even compare to her. To be honest, it was the first time I saw such a beautiful lady. Even women in paintings are inferior to her; she is even like the fairies from the legends!” You Tonghan’s face expressed his recollection, and as he spoke, he couldn’t even help gulping.

“She’s that beautiful? Then just learn from Brother Chu Feng here and do it

to her,” Xuan Xiaochao said with a shameless smile.

“Heh, to be honest, I did have that thought back then. However, after all, that girl is different from Ya Fei. With a glimpse, you could tell she was a kindhearted lady. No matter how I dislike Murong Xun, I can’t dirty her for no reason at all,” You Tonghan said.

“Brother You Tonghan, what interesting thing did you discover in the Zi family?” Chu Feng asked impatiently. He was truly concerned what occurred in the Zi family, because Zi Ling was one of the people he was most worried about.

“Heh, getting the point right away, huh? When I went, the Zi family was still having some internal argument! The patriarch of the Zi family was in a complete mess when disputing with Zi Ling’s parents. It seemed to be because Zi Ling’s parents didn’t want to marry Zi Ling off to Murong Xun, yet the patriarch himself didn’t agree so he wasn’t willing to let them go,” said You Tonghan.

“Oh? There’s something like that? Why didn’t they?” Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming were also interested when they heard that.

“The specifics I don’t know, but I just know that later on, the patriarch locked up Zi Ling’s parents and Zi Ling herself as well,” said You Tonghan.

“What next?” Chu Feng asked quickly.

“I don’t know what came next. Back then, I was in a hurry so I didn’t listen carefully.

“I just know that Zi Ling’s parents suddenly didn’t want to marry Zi Ling off to Murong Xun. This is indeed an interesting case. Perhaps we can even use this to stir up some trouble in Murong Xun’s wedding day.” You Tonghan smirked.

“Mm, if that is true, then we can indeed stir up trouble. However, there seems to still be three years until the day of marriage. I wonder if the Immortal Execution Archipelago will still exist or not then,” Fu Fengming said.

All three of them didn’t pay too much attention to that matter, because to them, Zi Ling’s survival was irrelevant to them.

Just as You Tonghan said, that was merely something interesting to them. Give it a listen, be entertained for a bit. Then, it’s done. None were too attentive.

However, Chu Feng was entirely different. Who was Zi Ling? She was Chu Feng’s fiancée! Why was he looking for Fu Liansheng? Why did he have to save Qiu Canfeng? When all’s said and done, his most fundamental goal was to save Zi Ling.

So, after knowing about that, Chu Feng’s heart was in chaos. He hurriedly asked, “Brother You Tonghan, did you truly sneak into the Zi family? Did the Immortal Execution Archipelago not arrange experts to guard the Zi family?”

“I don’t think they did. At least, when I went over, I didn’t see any people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago,” You Tonghan said.

“Although experts are as common as clouds in the Immortal Execution Archipelago, as they grow larger, more important territories appear. Those important territories also require peak experts for guarding.

“So, they simply cannot send too many experts to the Zi family. At least, Martial Kings wouldn’t be sent there to protect them.

“After all, there are only so many Martial Kings in the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They wouldn’t spend such an enormous battle force to look over a tiny Zi family. In the end, she is only a fiancée,” Fu Fengming analyzed.

“Eh? Brother Chu Feng, why are you so interested in the matters of the Zi family? You wouldn’t be thinking to also take down Murong Xun’s other fiancée, right?”

Xuan Xiaochao grinned as he spoke. At the same time, Fu Fengming and You Tonghan did the same as they looked at Chu Feng. Clearly, their memory of Chu Feng taking down Ya Fei and Murong Wan was still crisp clear.

Chapter 807 - Saving Zi Ling

MGA: Chapter 807 - Saving Zi Ling

“Brothers, you truly know how to make a joke. I don’t feel any resentment towards that Lady Zi Ling, so why would I harm her? I am only curious.” Chu Feng shook his head embarrassedly, but his heart was very shocked.

Before, he always felt that Zi Ling could have possibly been taken into the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Even if she wasn’t, then the Zi family should definitely have large numbers of guards.

But, according to You Tonghan, Zi Ling was not only in the Zi family right now, there weren’t experts too powerful guarding. At least, there wasn’t anyone stronger than You Tonghan, otherwise, he wouldn’t have been so free in entering and exiting.

So, Chu Feng now had a plan. Since the Immortal Execution Archipelago didn’t send peak experts at the Zi family, then Chu Feng had to head over to the Zi family. He prepared to save Zi Ling.

If he could truly save her, then the heaviest stone in Chu Feng’s heart would be shattered.

That night, they stayed on the mountain range for resting. After chatting for a long time, since they all had their own matters to deal with, in the morning the next day, they prepared to go their own ways.

“Wuqing, since you’ve agreed to join the Crippling Night Demon Sect, I have to leave a mark on your back. It is not only convenient, in the future, it would be easier to identify other members. I would also be able to find you through the mark,” said the Earth King before splitting up.

“Mm.” Chu Feng had already expected that. So, without saying anything more, he stripped away his clothes, revealing his well-built back to the Earth King.

He knew he was preparing to imprint the special mark into his body. Since he already joined the Crippling Night Demon Sect, naturally he would not refuse.

Without delay, the Earth King started. His palm waved around and he started laying a formation. It was an enormous Spirit Formation procedure that had extremely powerful golden Spirit Formations.

As the Earth King drew it, it formed the symbol of a broken moon. Chu Feng also discovered a small detail: the Earth King even put down Chu Feng's name within the formation. That was a completely unique indication.

“Combine!”

Finally, the Earth King shouted. The formation rose into the air, and the blinding light started gradually merging together. Not only did its shape shrink by several times, it even turned black. By the Earth King's lead, it started being guided into Chu Feng's back.

hmm However, just as the mark of the Crippling Night Demon Sect's broken moon merged into Chu Feng's back, preparing to connect with his dantian, a ripple came from it.

That made the Earth King's expression change slightly. He furrowed his brows, seeming to have felt something. But, he did not stop and continued merging it into Chu Feng's body.

boom But just as the mark was about to meld with his dantian, a huge explosion suddenly burst from inside his body. And, as it did, the mark of the broken moon the Earth King spent so much effort creating immediately exploded, destroying it completely.

Even the Earth King—a Martial King—was forced several steps back. His complexion immediately turned pale, and even his body started trembling.

“Lord Earth King, are you fine?” Seeing that, the expressions of Old Liu and the others changed greatly as they hurriedly went up and supported the

Earth King.

But, he just waved his hand, indicating to the crowd he was fine. Shortly after though, he looked at Chu Feng, and said, “Wuqing, there seems to be a special power within your dantian that resisted me from merging the mark. What is it?”

“Senior, I am not certain either.” Chu Feng shook his head, his face a bit blank.

The Earth King seemed to know that it was possibly one of Chu Feng’s secrets when he saw that reaction. Since Chu Feng was unwilling to say much, he too didn’t ask much. Instead, he said, “Since it’s like so, then take this. Remember to always bring it on you. Don’t put it in your Cosmos Sack. With that, if there’s anything, we can always contact you.” As the Earth King spoke, he took out a badge. On the badge, he imprinted a special mark before giving it to Chu Feng.

That badge was black. Not only did it have the symbol of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, there was also a unique mark. As long as Chu Feng had it on him, no matter where he went, the Earth King would be able to find him.

“Thank you, Senior Earth King.” Receiving the badge, as instructed, Chu Feng didn’t put it in his Cosmos Sack but in his pocket. He knew the Earth King wouldn’t harm him; it was a crucial item used to contact the Crippling Night Demon Sect in the future.

“Then, let us go our ways. If there’s something that pops up later, I will think of methods to contact all of you,” said the Earth King.

“We’ll take our leave.” Xuan Xiaochao was in a rush to report to his master, so he left first.

Soon after, You Tonghan and Fu Fengming did the same.

“Seniors, I too will take my leave.” And since Chu Feng’s heart was full of Zi Ling, he didn’t stay there for long either. He clasped his fists at the

Earth King and the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, then leaped forward and left quickly.

“Lord Earth King, what’s different with Wuqing’s body? Even the mark of the Crippling Night Demon Sect was unable to merge into his body,” Old Liu said curiously after Chu Feng left.

“It is indeed different. In his dantian, there’s some power that resist the mark I made. It was destroyed in only an instant,” the Earth King replied.

“What sort of thing is it? It’s that powerful?” Old Liu asked again.

“I don’t know, but it was indeed very powerful.” At that instant, an odd glint flashed in the Earth King’s aged eyes. When he recalled the power sweeping out of Chu Feng’s body, strong fear added onto the glint.

Chu Feng was naturally unable to hear the conversation between the Earth King and Old Liu. After knowing that Zi Ling was imprisoned by the patriarch of the Zi family, and that there seemed to be no experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago guarding her, Chu Feng hurried towards Zi Ling without stopping.

After a while of unending journeying, Chu Feng finally arrived at the Zi family of the Flower Valley.

The so-called Zi family of the Flower Valley was not without origin. The Flower Valley was in reality a valley; it was not a large area, but within the valley there were flowers of all sorts of colours. Its name was made as such.

However, there were so many similar flower valleys in the Eastern Sea Region. So, the thing that truly made the Flower Valley famous was the Zi family, and the true thing that made the Zi family famous was the birth of Zi Ling over ten years ago.

When a Divine Body came into being, it would create a unique scene. Back then, many people had seen that scene. After the Immortal Execution

Archipelago confirmed that there was truly a Divine Body, she became the fiancée of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Although the Immortal Execution Archipelago of that time hadn't ruled over the Eastern Sea Region, it had already revealed its powerful side. So, everyone felt that the Zi family would rise rapidly in power.

After all, putting aside the legendary quality of a Divine Body, the protection of the Immortal Execution Archipelago alone meant that the Zi family was fated to become powerful.

Chapter 808 - Killing Your Entire Family

MGA: Chapter 808 - Killing Your Entire Family

The reality was the same as their predictions. The Immortal Execution Archipelago gave huge amounts of assistance to the Zi family, causing it to rise rapidly in strength.

They were initially a small family that didn't even have half a Martial Lord. Now, with the increasing numbers of Martial Lords, they became a large family which had many even in the younger generation. At present, the Zi family not only became large and flourishing, it even surpassed a few that possessed Inherited Bloodlines.

In the eyes of outsiders, the reason the Zi family had its current state was all because of Immortal Execution Archipelago. In comparison to the nearly unknown Divine Body that lacked many achievements, what everyone admired more was the Zi family's ability to obtain help from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

However, no one knew what the Immortal Execution Archipelago did hiddenly to Zi family: What they had their eyes on was actually the Divine power of Zi Ling. They didn't truly want to marry Zi Ling over; they just wanted Zi Ling to be a "gift" to Murong Xun.

However, something undeniable was that the current Zi family was rather prosperous. Not only strength wise, but most importantly, fame.

Recently, there were rumours that Zi Ling's beauty was peerless—she was ranked as one of the three great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region. That led to quite a few guests who wanted to visit the Zi family, to take a glimpse at her.

As they faced the visits from those people, even though the Zi family would filter out some, then receive those who were a bit more famous, in reality, they didn't allow anyone to see Zi Ling easily.

At that moment, Chu Feng was standing outside the Zi family. As he looked at the center of the Flower Valley, at the Zi family which had an unending stream of distinguished guests coming to and fro, with prosperity and gorgeousness evident everywhere, in his eyes, there was nothing but hatred.

whoosh, whoosh, whoosh

Although there was tight security around the Zi family, and experts were as common as clouds, it was not hard for Chu Feng to sneak in.

“Ah!” After entering, Chu Feng chose a person who had roughly the same figure as himself and struck him unconscious. Then, he took his clothes and changed his face to match that person's.

After doing so, Chu Feng inquired the location of the Zi family's prison. Moreover, using a series of techniques and lies, he snuck inside.

“Ahh—”

“Forgive me, forgive me! I've truly said everything! Ah! Stop!”

The Zi family's prison was very large, and there were all sorts of people locked inside. Some were peacefully resting—they seemed to be imprisoned for many years—some were receiving interrogation, suffering the pain of torture.

However, Chu Feng was not concerned with those people. At that moment, he used the Heaven's Eyes and spread out his Spirit power. He wanted to find clues regarding Zi Ling's location.

Yet, after searching through the entire prison, Chu Feng hadn't even seen any signs of her. But even though he didn't find her, Chu Feng found a familiar person.

There was an aged old man locked within a well-sealed room. That old man had undamaged clothing, but his complexion was a bit thin and discoloured, seeming as if he had some rather significant worry on his mind. And, he was none other than Zi Ling's grandfather, Zi Xuanyuan.

On his body, there were no fetters. The prison that locked him was different from others as well. It was not only completely intact, it was even quite exquisite. One could even say that the prison room was forcibly made into a luxurious room.

Within such a place, there was not only a delicate bed and all sorts of gorgeous commodities, there were even various delicious foods and cultivation resources placed inside, free to be used.

At that moment, Zi Xuanyuan was sitting on a chair and drinking tea, with his legs crossed. At that moment, his cultivation was also increasing; it had truly reached the peak of the Heaven realm.

However, behind him were several young men. They were likely people also from the Zi family, and most of them had the cultivation in the Heaven realm. However, one thirty-something man was already a Martial Lord—a rank one Martial Lord.

“Old man, don't refuse this only to be forced later. The patriarch wants you to convince Zi Ling, then go convince her. Act less of a master in this place. You should know very well what will happen to you if you don't listen,” said one of the young men quite unkindly. As a junior of the Zi family, not only did he lack any respect when facing Zi Xuanyuan, he spoke as if he were speaking to a criminal.

“Convince? Convince her what? Convince Zi Ling to jump into hell, so you greedy bastards can be satisfied?” Zi Xuanyuan raised his head and mockingly stared at him.

“You...” Hearing that, the young man was enraged. He raised his hand and was about to strike Zi Xuanyuan.

“Stop!” But just at that moment, the young man with the strength of a rank one Martial Lord spoke.

He seemed to be the leader of those people—after he shouted, the other men all backed away to the side, silent.

The leader walked two steps towards Zi Xuanyuan and said with a fake smile, “Senior Yuanshan, no matter what you say, Murong Xun is the number one genius of the Eastern Sea Region. Oh, how many famed, brilliant ladies wants to marry him, yet were rejected by him.

“What a rare chance this is! Why must you remain so stubborn? Go convince Zi Ling, and go convince her parents as well. Tell them to be less obstinate and ruin our entire family because of that.”

“Hmph.” Zi Xuanyuan fiercely glared at him, then ignored him and continued drinking the tea in his cup.

The man was not angered by Zi Xuanyuan’s actions. Instead, he continued saying, with a smile, “When things have progressed to what they have, it is unavoidable that Murong Xun will take away Zi Ling’s Divine power. Not to mention any of you, even if Zi Ling refuses, what can she do? Three years later, her everything will be Murong Xun’s.

“Rather than resisting and fighting back, causing the entire Zi family to fall, why not choose to go along and fulfill the desires of everyone from the Zi family?”

“Pah! How shameless.” Zi Xuanyuan opened his mouth, and a sticky lump of phlegm landed on the man’s face.

“Old thing, you are looking to die!” The other men were furious when they saw that, and as they spoke, they raised their hands, preparing to strike.

“Stop!” However, the man once again shouted and stopped them. Even so, strong rage was on his face, and dense killing intent even flickered in his eyes.

whoosh Suddenly, he extended his arm and grabbed Zi Xuanyuan's clothes. He ferociously threatened, "Old thing, my grandfather is the patriarch. If I want to kill you, no one can stop me."

"However, I'll give you a chance. Tell me the name of that trash in Zi Ling's heart and where he is. I'll spare your life then."

"Hahaha..." Zi Xuanyuan roared with laughter, then looked at the young man with a gaze of ridicule. He said, "You want to know? Go ask your grandfather! Why don't you ask him? It's your grandfather who doesn't dare to tell you, right?"

"I'm sure he knows very well perhaps if I die, nothing will happen, but if Zi Ling dies, you will all follow her."

"And as long as anything happens to him, Zi Ling will have no desire to live. So, that's why even your grandfather doesn't dare to touch him! Yet

you

so foolishly want to? You must have gotten tired of living!"

"Hmph. Less of that nonsense. If you don't tell me, I'll beat you until you do." The man went into a rage from the disgrace, and without saying anything more, he waved his big sleeve, forcing Zi Xuanyuan onto the ground. Then, pointing at him, he shouted, "Beat him. Beat him until he's near death."

Immediately after he finished speaking, the several young men all surrounded him. Pulling up their sleeves, they prepared to heartlessly beat Zi Xuanyuan up.

BOOOOOM But just at that moment, an explosion suddenly rang out. The prison gate constructed with special materials and reinforced with purple-coloured Spirit Formations was, at that moment, completely shattered.

At the same time, a foreign voice yet filled with bloodlust rang out outside the room as well.

“Whoever dares to even touch him, I’ll kill your entire family!”

Chapter 809 - Beating up the Dog of the Zi Family

MGA: Chapter 809 - Beating up the Dog of the Zi Family

Such a sudden shift in events stunned everyone from the Zi family. However, when they saw the young person who slowly walked into the prison, confidence surged back into them.

It was because the stranger before their eyes was truly too young. He didn't even seem to be close to twenty; he should have just passed puberty.

“Who are you? You dare to break into my Zi family's prison? Do you not want to live anymore?” questioned the grandson of the patriarch of the Zi family as he pointed at Chu Feng furiously. As he spoke, he even emanated his aura of a rank one Martial Lord, intentionally letting Chu Feng see how powerful he was.

“This...” However, after Zi Xuanyuan saw the person before his eyes, his expression changed greatly because he instantly recognized that the newcomer was Chu Feng.

Zi Xuanyuan panicked immediately because he knew many people from the Zi family wanted to get rid of Chu Feng. Yet, he actually came to this place. Wasn't this like a lamp jumping into a tiger's mouth?

That being said, he didn't dare to directly call out Chu Feng's name. He didn't even dare to show that he knew Chu Feng. So, he could only send a mental message in secret, “Chu Feng, why have you come here? Quickly leave! If the patriarch of the Zi family knows that you've come here, he will not let you safely leave! He will even use you to threaten Zi Ling!”

However, what made Zi Xuanyuan feel enormous helplessness was that Chu Feng acted as if he didn't hear what he just said. He simply ignored

him, and instead, cast his gaze filled with bloodlust at the young men from the Zi family. Then, he suddenly extended his hand forward, and an intense suction power surged out.

“Ahh!”

A frightened shriek rang out—one of the young men at the peak of the Heaven realm was forced over by Chu Feng.

Then, after grabbing him, Chu Feng put strength into his arm and with a snapping sound, half of that person’s shoulder was ripped away forcibly.

Afterwards, Chu Feng slammed down with his palm, and with a bang, he turned that person into a mist of blood.

“You! You are looking to die!” Seeing their companion killed, the people from the Zi family were outraged. Two of the young men burst out their power of the peak of the Heaven realm, and as they held an Elite Armament, they mercilessly slashed towards Chu Feng.

bang However, Chu Feng simply looked with disdain at their attacks. He stood unmoving.

When the Elite Armaments struck him, they actually shattered immediately. The people who attacked Chu Feng also spat out blood, their internal organs injured from the shock.

The people from the Zi family finally started reacting to that scene. How was the young man in front of him, who wasn’t even twenty, a weak, fun-to-bully person? He was simply more like a terrifying monster!

“Ahh—”

When bursts of screams rang out, the people from the Zi family personally saw Chu Feng, with his pair of hands akin to steel clamps, first cut the two young men who attacked him into pieces. Then, they saw him pull out their Consciousnesses and forcefully refined them. After seeing all that, their legs went limp, and their bodies were trembling.

“Yo-yo-you...

“Who are you? Why have you attacked us for no reason at all? Do you not know that my Zi family is protected by the Immortal Execution Archipelago?”

At that instant, the grandson of the Zi family’s patriarch quivered from fear. He could only use the shield—the Immortal Execution Archipelago—to try and scare Chu Feng.

Even though he was a rank one Martial Lord, he could feel that Chu Feng’s aura was one of a rank three Martial Lord. To have such cultivation at such age... he himself was most definitely unable to defeat Chu Feng.

Chu Feng approached the people from the Zi family bit by bit, forcing the grandson as well as the remaining young men back continuously. In the end, they were all like turtles as they were forced into a corner of the prison room, and only then did Chu Feng say, “Didn’t you want to find me? Why are you scared now that I’ve come?”

“F-find you? Brother, are you possibly mistaken? We never wanted to find you!” The grandson of the Zi family’s patriarch clearly hadn’t recognized who he was.

“Yes! It’s definitely a misunderstanding! Brother, there’s no enmity between us! Don’t completely kill us off!” At the same time, the others also hurriedly attempted to explain.

“Senior Xuanyuan, I think you should tell them who I am.” Chu Feng cast his lightly squinted gaze at Zi Xuanyuan.

But in reality, he too was standing on the spot, completely frozen. He was deeply stupefied by Chu Feng’s strength.

Barely a year had passed since they left the Eastern Sea Region, and at that moment, Chu Feng was still in the weak Profound realm. Yet, at present, even someone at the peak of the Heaven realm could not take a single strike from Chu Feng. They were so, so weak.

Even the grandson of the Zi family's patriarch—a rank one Martial Lord—trembled from fear. What did that mean? That meant Chu Feng's cultivation very possibly surpassed the Heaven realm, and entered the realm of Martial Lords. He had to admit that Chu Feng's speed of improvement was really too quick. So quick it surpassed his imagination.

At that instant, Zi Xuanyuan finally understood why Chu Feng so fearlessly dared to break into this place, and why he didn't leave regardless of his warnings.

It was because Chu Feng already had a certain amount of confidence with him. At least, he was able to easily take care of the people within the prison. So, he no longer worried, and listening to Chu Feng's instructions, he said to several people from the Zi family, "Didn't all of you want to know who the person in Zi Ling's heart is? I'll tell you right now that person is called Chu Feng, and Chu Feng is standing in front of you right now."

"What? You're the person Zi Ling loves?!"

When they heard those words, the people from the Zi family were dumbfounded. Their faces were akin to ashes as they finally understood why Chu Feng immediately starting killing them on sight. It was because he had sufficient reason.

But, what they were most shocked at was that the person they looked down at and thought they could kill at any moment was actually so powerful. He not only came to the Zi family on his own accord, he even started killing them

.

At that instant, they seemed to know why Zi Ling was so attached to that person. It was because the man called Chu Feng was indeed not simple at all. One could even say he was extremely horrifying.

“Spare me, spare me! We actually didn’t have any malicious intents, we just wanted to see what Zi Ling’s lover looked like!”

“That’s right! Zi Ling is, after all, our sister. You are, in the end, our future brother-in-law! As elder brothers, naturally we want to see our future brother-in-law!

“As they say, rather than conjecturing based on rumours, why not see for yourself? So, as seen today, Brother-in-law is truly outstanding! Sister Zi Ling truly has great judgement on people; that Murong Xun simply cannot compare to you!”

Even though they already knew who Chu Feng was, they were unwilling to die just like that. So, they quickly knelt down, and not only did they kowtow, begging for their lives, they even started fawning over Chu Feng. The grandson of the Zi family’s patriarch was no exception.

But, Chu Feng had already seen their true sides. Why would he give them any chances? He extended his hand, and after several muffled explosions, the people before his eyes became mists of blood. Only the grandson alone was left alive.

“Thank you for sparing my life, thank you for sparing my life!” Seeing that Chu Feng didn’t kill him, the grandson even thought Chu Feng was letting him off.

“Shut up!” But who would have expected Chu Feng to shout before sending a kick his way. After an “Ah!” of pain, not only did he completely fracture his jaw, Chu Feng kicked the grandson unconscious, into the pool of blood on the ground.

Chapter 810 - End of Hardships, Beginning of Fortune

MGA: Chapter 810 - End of Hardships, Beginning of Fortune

After dealing with all of them, Chu Feng looked at Zi Xuanyuan and said with some shame, “Senior Xuanyuan, I apologize. I, Chu Feng, have come late.”

“Haha, Chu Feng, I didn’t think you would have come to the Eastern Sea Region so soon, and your growth in cultivation is even so quick! Zi Ling has indeed not been mistaken. Your potential really is huge. You will surpass that Murong Xun sooner or later. Not only have you surpassed everyone in the continent of the Nine Provinces, you will surpass everyone in the Eastern Sea Region soon.”

Zi Xuanyuan already liked Chu Feng quite a bit, and seeing his accomplishments in cultivation, he was even more elated and excited. From the bottom of his heart, he felt joy for Chu Feng.

“Senior Xuanyuan, I’ve heard that Zi Ling was imprisoned. Is that true?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mm, that is true. Zi Ling is not the only one imprisoned. Right now, even her parents are imprisoned,” said Zi Xuanyuan, nodding.

“What’s going on? What exactly happened?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s not much. After I returned, I learnt that the patriarch of the Zi family already knew of the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s scheme. He already knew that the Immortal Execution Archipelago didn’t really want Murong Xun to marry Zi Ling, that they wanted Zi Ling’s Divine power.

“However, for his own advantages and benefits, he chose to conceal the truth. Even Zi Ling’s parents were tricked by him.

“So, I pretended to agree and support the marriage between Zi Ling and Murong Xun. After earning his trust, I laid a trap and made him announce what happened. As a result, many of the people from the Zi family learnt of the truth, including Zi Ling’s parents.

“After knowing about that, Zi Ling’s parents also felt endless regret. After all, they do love Zi Ling. So, they wanted to bring Zi Ling away, but they failed.” Zi Xuanyuan’s face was full of pity.

“Then, senior, do you know where Zi Ling is imprisoned right now?” Chu Feng was not concerned with Zi Ling’s parents; he was only concerned with Zi Ling.

“I know. She’s being locked in the residence of the patriarch,” Zi Xuanyuan replied.

“What cultivation does the patriarch have?” Chu Feng asked.

“The Immortal Execution Archipelago has given the Zi family many things, and the patriarch has used the resources without restraint. As such, he’s the one who benefited the most. Right now, his cultivation in the Zi family is also the strongest—he’s a rank six Martial Lord,” Zi Xuanyuan said.

“Rank six Martial Lord? Then does the Zi family have the protection of experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago?” Chu Feng asked.

“There are. The Immortal Execution Archipelago has always had experts within the Zi family, but they are very covert. We have never seen them before, nor do we know what cultivation they have.

“However, something that I’m certain is that the experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago have strength above the patriarch, because the Immortal Execution Archipelago doesn’t trust him at all,” Zi Xuanyuan said.

After obtaining that information, Chu Feng sank into thought. A rank six Martial Lord was really not enough to make him afraid—with his current

cultivation, if he brought forth everything, Chu Feng could put up a fight even against a rank six Martial Lord. So, he was not afraid of the patriarch.

However, Chu Feng had no choice but to be cautious against the hidden experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Yet, since he had come here, Chu Feng could not leave empty-handedly. No matter what, he had to give it a try.

whoosh Suddenly, Chu Feng grabbed the unconscious grandson of the patriarch who was lying within a pool of blood. Chu Feng threw him over his shoulder, and then he said to Zi Xuanyuan, “Senior Xuanyuan, please lead the way.”

“This...” Zi Xuanyuan was no fool so he could tell what Chu Feng was planning. Initially, he wanted to urge him otherwise, but recalling his stubborn nature, he decided to remain silent and led the road.

Although, on the surface, there was not a single person from the Zi family who could stop Chu Feng, since he was slightly afraid of the hidden experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he didn’t prepare to make too big of a scene.

When he left the prison, Chu Feng intentionally concealed that place, then, without anyone knowing, snuck into the patriarch’s residence.

Although there were many mechanisms inside, they were all deactivated by Chu Feng.

“This child’s Spirit Formation techniques are this skillful? How powerful has he become?”

On the road, personally witnessing Chu Feng’s techniques, Zi Xuanyuan saw Chu Feng in another new light. He was less and less able to see how powerful Chu Feng currently was.

However, what he was certain was the child, who liked stirring up trouble everywhere in the continent of the Nine Provinces, one that he could kill with merely a thought before, had now far surpassed him.

Finally, with Zi Xuanyuan leading the way, Chu Feng successfully arrived at the place where Zi Ling and her parents were locked up at. It was an underground palace constructed deep below the surface, and there were also countless defensive Spirit Formations laid there. A typical Martial Lord should not even think of coming to that place.

However, that was not difficult for Chu Feng. After Chu Feng opened the gate reinforced with Spirit Formations, a beautiful person who he hadn't seen in a long time once again appeared before Chu Feng.

Zi Ling—the little beauty Chu Feng thought of every single day and night. At that moment, her grace was still unchanged, and her sweet face, her elegant figure, as well as her innately unique aura overshadowed every single other woman in the world, and she was a person who many men went mad for.

Zi Ling was currently chatting with her parents, and she would have never expected Chu Feng to appear here. She thought it was the patriarch who came to visit her again, so she simply didn't even look at Chu Feng.

“Zi Ling.” Only after Chu Feng spoke her name, his words a manifestation of all his internal feelings, did Zi Ling's perfect body tremble once before she quickly turning her head over, casting her gaze at Chu Feng.

When she saw Chu Feng, her eyes were widened roundly, and her quivering brows and widened mouth were all signs of the shock she felt.

She only came to her senses after a good while. She leapt forward, straight up to Chu Feng, and pounced into his embrace. She tightly hugged Chu Feng, unwilling to let go. She only said, with her sobbing voice, “Is it you? Is it you? Is it truly you? This isn't a dream, right? I'm not dreaming, right?”

At that moment, Chu Feng's heart was aching and warmed. He too opened up his arms and tightly hugged the beauty in his embrace, firmly saying, “Zi Ling, it's me. I've come to find you. I'm sorry, I've let you wait for far too long. I've let you suffer far too much.”

“No, it was not long, nor have I suffered.” Zi Ling raised her head, and after looking at Chu Feng with her eyes glittering with tears, she buried her head back into Chu Feng’s chest, and hugged Chu Feng even tighter, as if afraid he would disappear if she were to let go.

No matter how arrogant Zi Ling was, no matter how she treated others, no matter how cold, at that very instant, in Chu Feng’s embrace, she was only like an obedient little girl—Chu Feng was her everything.

“Lord Father, this...” At that instant, Zi Ling’s parents were dumbfounded. They didn’t know what to do about Chu Feng’s sudden arrival.

“Shh.” However, Zi Xuanyuan indicated to them to remain silent. Then, he sent a mental message at them, “Let them enjoy this moment. These two have suffered for far too long.”

Chapter 811 - Surrounded

MGA: Chapter 811 - Surrounded

Within the underground palace, Chu Feng and Zi Ling were hugging each other, both of them silent. They just continued like that, as if doing so forever wouldn't be enough. They didn't even let each other go after a full hour.

At that instant, Zi Xuanyuan, who initially wanted to let them have their sweet time, couldn't take it any longer and finally said, "Chu Feng, let's quickly leave since we haven't been discovered yet."

"Yeah, let's quickly leave this place first!"

Zi Ling's parents also urged them. When Zi Ling and Chu Feng were embracing each other, Zi Xuanyuan sent mental messages to them and had already narrated the course of events that had happened regarding how he and Chu Feng arrived here. Zi Ling's parents already knew that Chu Feng had come to save them.

Even though Zi Ling's parents didn't dare to believe that Chu Feng's cultivation had increased by such an enormous amount in such a short period of time, when it was so openly displayed before them, they didn't have a choice to disbelieve.

"Senior Xuanyuan, we've actually already been discovered," Chu Feng said with an indifferent smile as he released Zi Ling.

"What? We've already been discovered?" Not to mention Zi Xuanyuan and Zi Ling's parents, even Zi Ling herself was shocked.

"Starting from the very first Spirit Formation in the underground palace, as long as it is deactivated, the person who laid the formation would know. So, when we entered, we were already surrounded." As Chu Feng spoke, he cast his gaze behind and shouted, "Come out. Don't remain sneaky."

“Hahaha, you’re a bit skillful. You’ve already discovered us, huh?”

At that moment, within the vast underground palace’s passages, an aged laughter suddenly rang out. At the same time, the air squirmed and a Concealment Spirit Formation gradually deactivated. Within it were several hundred people.

There were males, females, old, and young. Of those people, there were almost a hundred Martial Lords, and the rest were all in the Heaven realm. They were all a part of the Zi family, and the leader of them all was none other than the patriarch of the Zi family, Zi Dingkong.

“I’ve forgotten to introduce him to everyone. This brat here is her friend from the continent of the Nine Provinces, the fool who wants to take Zi Ling away from young master Murong Xun,” the patriarch explained to the crowd behind him with a light smile.

“So he’s that damn brat. Such arrogance of him to want to marry her. You think you’re qualified to fight over our Zi Ling against young master Murong Xun?”

After hearing the patriarch’s words, the crowd of the Zi family, regardless of gender or age, started mocking him. From their cold faces, one could tell that they were not only the dogs of the Zi family’s patriarch, they were also Murong Xun’s dogs.

“All of you, shut up! I only belong to Chu Feng. Murong Xun should not even think of getting his hands on me.” Zi Ling was enraged when she heard the crowd ridicule Chu Feng. She shouted and pointed at them.

“Zi Ling, don’t be stubborn, remain on the wrong path, and be tricked by this brat. What virtue or abilities does he have? He’s simply unworthy to be together with you.”

“Yeah! Ling’er, you must widen your eyes and not be fooled by his false act! The perfect match for you is only with young master Murong Xun!” urged the people from the Zi family. They did treat Zi Ling rather politely.

“Shut up! Don’t put me together with that Murong Xun. I will absolutely not be with him,” Zi Ling shouted again. Fury filled her beautiful face.

“Ahh, Zi Ling, you haven’t seen young master Murong Xun yet. If you have, you will know that this brat here is no more than an ordinary person who could not be more ordinary. There are simply innumerable people like him in the Eastern Sea Region. Only the young master is a peerless genius, and only he is worthy for you.

“Zi Ling, don’t worry. The young master has already notified us. In a few days, after he finishes the business he has, he will come here and visit you. At that time, you will know how excellent your fiancé is.” As if the people from the Zi family couldn’t understand Zi Ling’s words, they unceasingly praised Murong Xun.

“All of you...” Zi Ling’s brows furrowed even more from anger. Her face was flushed, and if she had sufficient strength, she would have killed all of the disgusting family members with a single strike.

“Zi Ling, don’t argue with this group of animals. Hand this over to me.” Finally, Chu Feng spoke. And after hearing Chu Feng’s words, Zi Ling obediently nodded, and backed away. She stood together with her parents and grandfather.

bang Suddenly, Chu Feng stamped down, instantly snapping one of the legs of the patriarch’s grandson.

“AHH—” He was initially unconscious, but the pain of his snapped leg immediately woke him up. First, he wailed, but after he saw the people from the Zi family, his complexion turned to joy and he loudly shouted, “Father, mother, grandfather, help me!”

“Kun’er!” At that moment, a middle-aged husband and wife changed their expressions greatly. As they cried out, they rushed towards Chu Feng and wanted to save the grandson of the patriarch, Zi Kun. Judging by their heartbroken expressions, they were most likely Zi Kun’s parents.

“If you dare to come any closer, I’ll stomp his head flat.” But Chu Feng did not give them that chance. Before they neared, a foot was placed on his face.

“Don’t!” Zi Kun’s parents immediately stopped moving, not daring to do anything hasty. Instead, they cast their begging gazes at the patriarch.

“Hoh, you want to threaten me with my grandson, then bring Zi Ling away?” In comparison to Zi Kun’s parents, however, the patriarch of the Zi family wasn’t too worried about his own grandson. Rather, in his eyes, there was a hint of disdain—it was disdain that looked down on Chu Feng completely. Even though Chu Feng’s change in cultivation made him feel greatly shocked, in his eyes, Chu Feng wasn’t even a threat.

“You’ve guessed correctly. If you want to keep your grandson’s life, you better leave right now. Otherwise, I’ll stamp his head open,” Chu Feng said with a sneer. Even though he was currently surrounded by the experts of the Zi family, Chu Feng’s expression was very calm.

The people from the Zi family had never put Chu Feng in their eyes, but when had Chu Feng ever put

them

in his eyes?

“Haha, what a joke. With your cultivation of a rank three Martial Lord, you want to threaten me?” Suddenly, the patriarch of the Zi family coldly smiled. As he spoke, his brows slanted even more inwards, and an invisible shock wave burst out from his body.

He attacked. With no more than thought, he emanated his unique pressure of a rank six Martial Lord. Like an invisible wave, it pressed itself towards Chu Feng with an unbelievable speed. He wanted to suppress Chu Feng by surprise, and thus save his grandson.

But, he had still underestimated Chu Feng. Chu Feng coldly snorted, raised his hand slightly, and with a casual wave, he shattered the patriarch’s

attack entirely with a boom.

“Since you want your grandson to die, I’ll grant you that wish.”

Immediately after, Chu Feng shifted his foot slightly on Zi Kun’s head, then pushed down. Blood gushed out in large amounts—half of Zi Kun’s head was pressed flat.

“AHH—” At that instant, akin to a pig being butchered, the scream coming from Zi Kun’s mouth reverberated within the entire underground palace.

Chapter 812 - Battle Through Levels

MGA: Chapter 812 - Battle Through Levels

Chu Feng's stamp appeared to be brutal, but in reality, the angle his foot pushed down at was

just

right. He destroyed half of Zi Kun's brain, but it was not enough to kill him. At least, his physical body could still be recovered. Chu Feng wanted to use Zi Kun's current horrid state to agitate the emotions of the Zi family.

"Lord Father, let them go! Otherwise, this animal will definitely kill Kun'er!" Seeing half of their son's brain flattened, the hearts of Zi Kun's parents ached so much tears streamed down their faces. They hurriedly asked the patriarch for help.

"Shut up! Although Kun'er's life is important, it is not as important as my Zi family.

"Kun'er, don't worry. You've made a sacrifice for the entire Zi family. I will definitely avenge you." The patriarch bit down on his teeth, then, ignoring Zi Kun's life, waved his sleeve. Layers of Martial power surged, and once again, he started initiating a horrifying attack towards Chu Feng.

"Heh, Zi Kun, it's not that I'm giving you no chance, but it's just that your grandfather really wants your life. Go, fulfill his wish."

As he looked at the attack several times more powerful than before, Chu Feng appeared as if he expected it. He made a strange grin, then, raising his leg, he kicked Zi Kun high up into the air, straight towards the swirling attack of Martial power sent by the patriarch.

“Father, don’t!” Zi Kun’s parents quickly shouted to stop him.

“Dammit!” The patriarch never expected Chu Feng would use his own grandson as a shield. Although he already prepared to let Zi Kun be a sacrifice, he wasn’t prepared to personally murder his own grandson.

So, seeing as things were progressing poorly, the patriarch quickly attempted to retract his attack. However, Chu Feng’s kick had quite sufficient strength. Before he was able to successfully retract his attack, Zi Kun had already entered his vortex of Martial power.

“AHH—”

Finally, under the gazes of the crowd, the grandson of the patriarch of the Zi family, Zi Kun, was torn into pieces by the Martial power of the patriarch himself. Not to mention flesh, there lacked even the slightest sign of Consciousness and Source Energy. Even all of his blood evaporated.

“I will have you wish you were dead!”

When his grandson was killed by his own hands, the patriarch was successfully enraged because of Chu Feng. He stopped retracting his strength, and instead, increased the power of his attack. An initial normal attack of Martial power suddenly transformed in the air, becoming a fierce, enormous mouth of flames. It widened and aimed to engulf Chu Feng.

The level of that martial skill was not high, but with the channeling of power by a Martial Lord, it was extremely terrifying. When the flames appeared, the walls of the underground palace immediately turned fiery-red, as if it too could burn anything. Even the air emitted layers of heat, and even though it wasn’t even close to them, Zi Ling and the others all felt the unblockable heat wave as they endlessly backed away.

whoosh Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly waved his big sleeve, laying two barriers in front of Zi Ling and the others. One was an indestructible

Spirit Formation, the other was the power of a rank three Martial Lord. Using them, he protected the safety of Zi Ling and the others.

After doing all that, Chu Feng gestured a spell with his left hand, and punched with his right. With the surging of Martial power, it became a huge wave that could touch the skies. As it rolled forward in the air, it was akin to a boundless ocean. Its might was not only frightening, the power it contained was very fierce as well.

It was a rank eight martial skill. When Chu Feng was robbing the resources of others, he obtained it. The reason he cultivated it was for a moment like this.

boom rumble rumble A huge explosion rang out. The flames and the wave collided into one another, and the power of two different essential types started stirring up chaos in the air. Finally, the power of the attacks from both the patriarch and Chu Feng were actually even as they both canceled each other out.

That scene had really shocked the people from the Zi family. Not only them, even Zi Xuanyuan and Zi Ling's parents were shocked as well.

They truly did not expect Chu Feng to be able to hold up his own against the patriarch of the Zi family. After all, he had said it before: Chu Feng was only a rank three Martial Lord. A rank three Martial Lord fighting on a par with a rank six Martial Lord... that was a nearly impossible thing.

“How is this brat so strong? He was actually able to cancel the patriarch's martial skill attack?!” In comparison to Zi Xuanyuan and the others, the people from the Zi family on the other side felt even greater disbelief. They were deeply astonished by Chu Feng's frightening fighting strength.

At that instant, only Zi Ling was the calmest one. There was not even a hint of surprise on her beautiful face—there was only joy. It was because she never had doubted Chu Feng's power, nor did she ever doubt Chu Feng's fighting strength. She knew Chu Feng was a genius; everything was within expectations. So, she only felt happy for Chu Feng's current achievements, because the stronger he was, the happier she was.

“No matter what method you used to raise your fighting strength, I will use my power to prove the difference between you and I. Even if you have daunting aptitude, it will not be able to compensate for the span of three ranks.”

When Chu Feng cancelled his attacks again and again, the already furious patriarch was a bit mad. As he spoke, he threw one fierce martial skill after the other endlessly at Chu Feng. Judging by the strength of the skills, he no longer seemed to aim to capture Chu Feng alive, but more to completely destroy him.

In a situation like that, even Chu Feng couldn't help but frown a bit. He didn't dare to have any traces of carelessness. No matter what, the patriarch was still a rank six Martial Lord. That had already surpassed Chu Feng's typical range of fighting, but at that moment, he still wanted to challenge his limit.

“Hehe, Chu Feng, since you're not planning to use the Royal Armament, do you want me to help you?” said Eggy gigglingly, who was always in Chu Feng's body. Seeing such shameless people from the Zi family, even the queen started being impatient, and her hands started getting itchy from intolerance.

“No need. Although he's a rank six Martial Lord, his cultivation was obtained by relying on large amounts of cultivation resources entirely. In comparison to Martial Lords of the same level, his fighting strength belongs to the weakest type. I can take this chance to test myself to see if my current fighting abilities is enough for a rank six Martial Lord.”

So, even though he did feel a certain amount of pressure, Chu Feng was not afraid. Instead, he leapt forward and starting attacking the patriarch.

boom boom boom

In an instant, the two were in a chaotic mess. Bursts of shock waves reverberated in the air, and even though the underground palace was made with special materials and reinforced by special Spirit Formations, it was unable to resist the remnants of the two's attacks. In a blink, the

underground palace was broken into pieces. From deep underground, they fought onto the surface, then into the air.

Although there weren't really many people in the Zi family, there were still several thousand. As for the experts that served the Zi family, there were several tens of thousands. As for the guests who were in the Zi family, there were countless. There were even some people who admired the fame of the Zi family and stayed outside the Flower Valley since they were unable to become guests in the Zi family.

At that moment, when it was silent and deep into the night, bursts of explosions suddenly rang out. The pitch-black sky suddenly turned into the blinding day. That naturally attracted everyone's attention. In an instant, everyone inside and outside the Flower Valley raised their heads and looked at the frightening battle in the sky.

The battle of Martial Lords was quite huge, especially when it was the level of Chu Feng and the patriarch of the Zi family. As they exchanged blows, the battle became fiercer and fiercer. Even people several thousand miles away were shocked by their battle, and peak experts from all sorts of areas were heading over with quick speed to determine what exactly was happening.

Chapter 813 - Inexperienced

MGA: Chapter 813 - Inexperienced

“Heavens! Isn’t that the patriarch of the Zi family? To have created such an intense scene... Who is he fighting against?”

“That can’t be, can it? It’s such a young man? Judging by his appearance, he should still be a teenager, right? Even if he’s not, he’s definitely under twenty years old.”

“Where did a monster like him come from? At such an age, he’s already a rank three Martial Lord, and he’s even able to fight evenly against the patriarch of the Zi family, a rank six Martial Lord! That doesn’t make any sense at all, right?”

When they saw who was fighting who, and noticed Chu Feng’s appearance and age, not a single one of them wasn’t shocked. All of them were stupefied by Chu Feng’s fighting abilities, and some even called him a “monster” immediately.

Although Chu Feng felt immense pressure when facing the patriarch of the Zi family, which made him not dare to be careless, Chu Feng used sharp detection power, the observation strength of the Heaven’s Eyes, and his absolute control over all sorts of martial skills to compensate for his deficiency in cultivation. The battle between the two was immense, and if that continued, the outcome would truly be difficult to determine.

“Dammit! What is with this brat? Putting aside his sudden burst in cultivation, even his fighting strength is this odd! Am I actually unable to defeat him? Could he truly be a monster?” Although Chu Feng felt pressured, the pressure the patriarch felt was clearly even greater.

It was not only pressure in terms of strength, it was also mental pressure. At that moment, the battle between the two had already attracted the attention of many. If it were only the people from the Zi family, then it

wouldn't be such a big deal; however, within the Zi family, there were also guests from all sorts of areas.

Before so many distinguished guests, he actually had to spend so much time fighting a brat—a rank three Martial Lord—yet he was still unable to obtain victory. That truly made him lose face... it made him lose all face.

After all, the difference between the ranks of Martial Lords was not insignificant. To be able to defeat a person whose cultivation was one level above meant he was already a rare genius. To be able to defeat a person whose cultivation was

three

levels was something unprecedented, and something that people in the future would unlikely be able to achieve.

In a situation like this, they would not only praise Chu Feng's overwhelming fighting strength and that he was a genius, they would even say that his, the patriarch's, own fighting strength was too weak, unworthy of being a rank six Martial Lord.

Not only would it help Chu Feng, it would harm himself.

“This young man is too powerful. Where did he come from? Why haven't I heard of this name before?”

“Recently, in the Eastern Sea Region, there

has

been a genius whose fighting strength is also overwhelming. His cultivation is rather close to this young man as well.”

“You're talking about Wuqing, who captured several thousand Martial Markings on the Misty Peak?”

“Yeah! Other than him, who else could it be?”

“He wouldn’t be him, right? I heard that even though Wuqing’s aptitude is exceptional, he’s already over twenty years old. This young man is clearly younger than that Wuqing!”

“That’s right! No matter how much that Wuqing is said to be strong, they are no more than rumours. This young man, however, has shown his strength right before our eyes. From what I see, he is possibly even more powerful than Wuqing!”

“This is so unbelievable. There’s actually such a powerful person in this world! From what I know, even the number one genius in the Eastern Sea Region, Murong Xun, doesn’t have the strength to fight someone three ranks above him.”

As they were looking at the rare frightening battle, what everyone was concerned with more was Chu Feng’s identity. After all, the fighting strength he showed was truly outrageous. Everyone wanted to know where the master of such an outstanding young man came from and what their name was. Because, they seemed to have a premonition that the young man before their eyes would become a peak character in the future within the Eastern Sea Region.

“I’ve got it! His name is Chu Feng, and the reason he is stirring up trouble here is for Murong Xun’s fiancée! He wants to take away Zi Ling!” Suddenly, a Martial Lord excitedly shouted. He found Chu Feng’s name from the higher-echelons of the Zi family.

“What? He’s here to take Zi Ling away? Isn’t he too daring? There’s someone who dares to touch

Murong Xun’s

fiancée? Isn’t he clearly making the Immortal Execution Archipelago an enemy?” After knowing Chu Feng’s goal here, they were even more shocked.

The battle continued, and both Chu Feng and the patriarch of the Zi family took out their Elite Armaments. Their fighting strength thus gradually

rose, and their might spread throughout the sky and the earth. If it weren't for the shielding from the experts of the Zi family, the remnants of their attacks alone were enough to flatten the Zi family. It would even be able to make holes everywhere in the Flower Valley and put it into a horrid state.

“People from the Zi family, listen up! I, Chu Feng, have come here to take away Zi Ling. No matter who it is, those who block me will die!” Chu Feng knew after today, his name would spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region. So, he no longer concealed his own name and just let everyone know what his name was and what his goal here was.

When things progressed to what they have, Chu Feng carried the intention to die if he failed. He swore to bring Zi Ling away because he knew if he failed this time, then it would be immensely difficult in the future to try again. Perhaps with Murong Xun's fierce and selfish nature, after knowing the relationship between Chu Feng and Zi Ling, he would even harm Zi Ling—that was not an impossibility.

So, as he fought the patriarch of the Zi family, he kept on sending out attacks towards the Zi family itself. With Chu Feng's fighting strength, if he wanted to harm someone, other than the patriarch himself, there was simply no one who could defend themselves in the Zi family.

boom boom boom boom In an instant, the carefully constructed vast palaces of the Zi family started collapsing one after the other. There were even some people from the Zi family affected by it and died within.

“What ruthless methods. It seems that this young man called Chu Feng truly possess malicious intentions coming here. He wouldn't truly want to take Zi Ling away and eradicate the Zi family as well, right?”

Seeing that Chu Feng started to attack the people from the Zi family, and that the patriarch could do nothing about it, some people started to feel that perhaps the patriarch could do nothing to Chu Feng either. Likely, today, the Zi family was in grave danger.

“You little scoundrel! Seeing that you're young and ignorant, I chose to tolerate your actions and avoid killing you. Yet, now you so spitefully kill

my family. Today, I will personally kill you.”

The patriarch had exchanged blows with Chu Feng for quite a while yet was unable to occupy the advantage. He felt he had no more face, so he could only find an excuse. And, since he declared to the crowd he would personally kill Chu Feng, he would have to immediately take out a weapon—a trump card—to kill Chu Feng in front of the crowd. Otherwise, he would not be able to convince the crowd and he would have thoroughly disgraced himself.

So, with the flashing of light from the patriarch’s wrist, a jade-green longsword appeared.

When it did, the patriarch’s entire demeanor became completely different. His strength actually rose by several times, and it was all because of the jade-green longsword in his hand, which seemed as if it were made by a thousand years of bone-biting cold and rare jade.

“This aura... It’s an Incomplete Royal Armament! There’s no mistake, it’s definitely an Incomplete Royal Armament!”

“Heavens! How precious is an Incomplete Royal Armament! How many peak Martial Lords are unable to obtain an Incomplete Royal Armament with their life’s savings? Yet, this patriarch of the Zi family, with the cultivation of only a rank six Martial Lord, now possesses an Incomplete Royal Armament?”

“The Immortal Execution Archipelago! It must have been given to him by the Immortal Execution Archipelago! However, why does the Incomplete Royal Armament in the patriarch’s hand seem more for a female?”

When he took out his Incomplete Royal Armament, it immediately made a commotion because Incomplete Royal Armaments were truly too precious. Unless it were a peak genius of a peak power, it would be impossible for someone to possess an Incomplete Royal Armament being at a realm such as rank six Martial Lord. That was truly a rare scene to see in the entire Eastern Sea Region.

“Damned old bastard. This Incomplete Royal Armament was clearly a gift the Immortal Execution Archipelago sent to Ling’er, yet he took it as his own!” Zi Ling’s mother cursed furiously when she saw the exquisite jade-green longsword.

“Hahaha, you poor brat from the mountains, do you know what this is? You must have never seen something like this before, right?”

“Today, I’ll let you die at an appropriate place. Before death, I’ll widen your horizons. In this world, the strongest weapon is called Incomplete Royal Armaments! In comparison to my Incomplete Royal Armament, your Elite Armament is like a piece of garbage!”

Holding the sword, and hearing the words of praise from the crowd, the patriarch instantly felt all face return to him. At the same time, he also started having confidence and boasted at Chu Feng.

“Hohoh...” However, Chu Feng indifferently smiled at the patriarch’s flaunting.

“What are you laughing at?” The patriarch was enraged when he saw that. He originally thought Chu Feng would tremble in fright from his Incomplete Royal Armament, but he didn’t expect him to remain so calm, and even return such a disdainful smile. How could he tolerate that? Even his organs were about to explode from anger.

“Yeah! What is he laughing at? He wouldn’t fail to recognize this Incomplete Royal Armament, and don’t know how powerful it is, right?” In reality, it was not only the patriarch who was confused. Every observer was puzzled as well.

As he faced the crowd’s dazed gazes, Chu Feng calmly spoke. He said, “I’m laughing at you, who’s like a frog at the bottom of a well, inexperienced at the matters of the world.”

Chapter 814 - Might of the Royal Armament

MGA: Chapter 814 - Might of the Royal Armament

“Arrogant brat, you dare say I’m inexperienced? The salt I’ve eaten is more than the rice you’ve eaten. The bridges I’ve walked across are more than the roads you’ve walked.”

Initially, he wanted to flaunt his Incomplete Royal Armament to Chu Feng, but what he didn’t expect to obtain from Chu Feng was disdain and humiliation. That really pulled the patriarch’s last straw. His smug face instantly turned blue from anger.

“It’s only an Incomplete Royal Armament, yet you call it the strongest weapon? Then where would you place Royal Armaments? Is this not ignorance? Is this not inexperience? Everyone, you comment on this logic.” Chu Feng face was full of disdain, and his gaze was as if he were looking at a bumpkin.

“He’s correct! Although Incomplete Royal Armaments are strong, they are only imitations. Royal Armament are the strongest weapons in this world. Before one, Incomplete Royal Armaments are indeed nothing.” Indeed, after Chu Feng spoke, there were many who agreed with him.

And when he saw the observers discuss in whispers endlessly, the patriarch’s face turned even more unsightly. Even his mouth couldn’t help twitching, and he could only defend himself in a cold tone, “What do you know? Although Royal Armaments are powerful, there are only so many in the Eastern Sea Region. Besides, the might of a Royal Armament isn’t something a brat like you can witness. To you, Incomplete Royal Armaments are the strongest weapons, enough to completely turn you into dust.”

After speaking, the patriarch didn't waste any more of his breath and with the flick of the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand, he started attacking Chu Feng. He prepared to immediately kill him, not giving him any chance whatsoever.

When things had progressed to the way they did, he had to admit that he underestimated the brat in front of his eyes. The boy, who came from the tiny place called the continent of the Nine Provinces, who he could have also easily disintegrated into dust, now became an extremely troublesome figure. He could not be left alive to cause more troubles in the future.

whoosh bzbzbz

When he waved his sword, Martial power immediately surrounded it, as if all the Martial power in the vicinity were available for him to use. It formed a destructive sword of energy, and as the jade-green sword of energy pierced through the air, layers and layers of frost that could freeze everything started materializing in the air. In the places it passed, not an inch of grass survived. Even space itself was frozen by it, and everyone could feel its unstoppable might. The Incomplete Royal Armament was indeed very powerful.

“This isn't good.”

Feeling such terrifying power, Zi Xuanyuan and Zi Ling's parents all couldn't help breathing in deeply. They all broke out in a cold sweat for Chu Feng.

Even Zi Ling lightly knitted her brows. On her beautiful face, there was a grave expression. Within her tightly clenched right hand, there was already a sharp dagger. She had initially planned to threaten the patriarch with her life when Chu Feng in peril, but when she saw Chu Feng's fearless expression, she didn't do that because from her understanding of Chu Feng, she felt he should have a way of dealing with it.

However, the attack from the patriarch was really too terrifying. So, she also wanted to know what method Chu Feng had to defend against that. As

she looked forward to it, she couldn't help murmuring, "Chu Feng, how powerful have you become now?"

Zi Ling believed in Chu Feng, but that did not mean others believed in him. At that very instant, almost everyone on scene felt Chu Feng was undoubtedly dead. At least, there was not a single person there who could defend against the attack that the patriarch sent Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng had already made a hint of a derisive sneer. When everything had progressed to its present state, he felt that the confrontation between him and the patriarch had reached the end. It was time to finish everything. So, he shouted, "I said you were ignorant yet you didn't accept it. That's fine. Today, I'll make an exception and widen

your

horizon. I'll let you know what a true Royal Armament is."

hmm After speaking, Chu Feng flipped his palm, and a silver-coloured spear then appeared within.

wuuaooo When the spear appeared, a furious roar permeated the sky. No matter in the air or on the ground, everything trembled.

It didn't matter if they were standing on the earth, or standing in the sky. Every single person was blown left and right, and some even fell down. The patriarch of the Zi family himself even lost his footing immediately due to the unstoppable might.

"What a terrifying sound! What is it? It's like the roar of a dragon!" Such a change made everyone on scene shocked. However, they soon understood what exactly happened.

boom rumble rumble rumble When the Royal Armament appeared, who could compete against it? After the Silver Dragon Spear appeared, not only did the might sweep throughout that area, even the sky changed colour.

In a mere instant, the sun nor moon emitted any light. The stars turned dim. Everything sank into darkness, and dense black cloud rolled over, into the sky. Thick snakes of lightning started slithering around in the air.

And absolutely everything surrounded Chu Feng. In the sky, there was no moon. Other than the slithering snakes of lightning, the only thing that everyone could clearly see was one person—Chu Feng, who stood in the air.

Chu Feng's long hair and clothes fluttered. With the silver-coloured spear in hand, he stood on the spot, as if he were a king that ruled over the world, one that none could contest against.

“Heavens! This might... how is it so terrifying!” The change before their eyes stupefied many people from fear. Even though they had some experience in the world, and had seen quite a few things, they had never seen such a terrifying atmosphere. They were truly deeply stunned by that.

“This might... it can't be mistaken. It's a Royal Armament! The thing in Chu Feng's hand is a Royal Armament!” However, within the crowd, there would always be one or two who had seen something like this. So, very soon, someone confirmed that the reason why Chu Feng had such might around him was all because of the silver-coloured spear in his hand. And, the only thing such a majestic weapon could be was a Royal Armament.

“What? Royal Armament? This brat has a Royal Armament? How is this possible? How is this possible?!” When he heard those words, the person who could not accept that the most was naturally the patriarch of the Zi family.

Standing in the air, he couldn't help taking several steps back. He was already in deep shock by the might Chu Feng showed because he, who held the Incomplete Royal Armament, could clearly feel it violently trembling in his hand at that very moment.

It was akin to a mouse seeing a wild cat; it was akin to a sheep seeing a hungry wolf; it was akin to a wild boar seeing a fierce tiger. The fear and

terror from deep itself had been displayed completely, affecting even its master. He, at that moment, no longer had any strength to fight.

“It’s a Royal Armament, it is definitely a Royal Armament! That unique, bewildering might of a ruler belongs to only a Royal Armament!” Within the disbelieving cries in the crowd, there were more and more people who confirmed that the thing in Chu Feng’s hand was a Royal Armament.

However, when a white-haired old man with glittering eyes—a rank five Martial Lord—spoke with a shocking tone, almost everyone in the entire Flower Valley was stunned.

“I know who this person is! I know who Chu Feng is! He is the genius who shocked the entire Eastern Sea Region, the one who captured six thousand Martial Markings in the Misty Peak, the monster who crippled the son of the Second Immortal in the Depraved Ravine, Wuqing!”

Chapter 815 - I Am Called Chu Feng

MGA: Chapter 815 - I Am Called Chu Feng

“What? What did you say? You said he’s Wuqing?”

“Senior, you can’t say whatever you want to say! Although this Chu Feng does have powerful fighting strength, and his techniques are outstanding as well, there seems to be some conflicts between his appearance and Wuqing’s, judging by the rumours. Do you have proof for your words?” The white-haired old man’s words shocked everywhere, but also led them into doubt.

That was for no other reason but because Wuqing’s name was famous. Currently, in the Eastern Sea Region, everyone knew that there was a genius called Wuqing who appeared in the Eastern Sea Region, coming from the Misty Peak’s Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

At that moment, there was a never-ending stream of rumours regarding Wuqing. There were all sorts of things said from those rumours, but something undeniable was that Wuqing had already been titled as an existence that would be compared to Murong Xun in the future.

Although there were many people who hadn’t seen Wuqing before, that name had been raised to a very high level. It would not even be outrageous to call him to be a legendary person.

And, when the so-called legendary person appeared before their eyes, it would always make people feel as if they were in a dream. They would feel it was not real, and they themselves wouldn’t even believe it was real.

“Hmph. I just came back from the Depraved Ravine, and witnessed the great battle between the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the

Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“During the battle, the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago had taken out a Royal Armament, but later on, the Royal Armament was seized away by Wuqing.

“Moreover, I personally saw Wuqing Mastering the Royal Armament. It was initially Murong Xun’s Royal Armament, but not only did it approve Chu Feng as its master, the state of Absolute Submission, from the legends, also appeared.

“Do any of you know what Absolute Submission is?” The old man swept his proud gaze over the crowd.

At that moment, they were already frozen. They were deeply stupefied by the old man’s words, and when they saw his gaze sweep over them, they all shook their heads. With their experiences, how could they have heard of Absolute Submission?

After seeing the crowd’s unknowing reply, the white-haired old man breathed through his nose, his attitude becoming even more arrogant. He said quite smugly, “Looking at all of you, it seems that no one knows. Today, I’ll explain this to you and teach you something.

“Royal Armaments are aware, so their process of approving one as a master is different from Elite Armaments. The most typical Mastering is actually only a cooperative relationship.

“That means if a person has successfully been approved by the Royal Armament, it will lend its power to its master, and at the same time, it will fill itself with its master’s power. If, one day, the master dies, or if their connection is forcibly severed, then the Royal Armament would break that cooperative relationship and regain freedom. It would then be able to choose another master.

“However, Royal Armaments have another method of Mastering, which is Absolute Submission. This Absolute Submission is when a Royal Armament is truly, sincerely, willing to serve its master. It will live and die

as its master lives and dies. For the rest of its lifespan, it can only have that one master.

“No one can take it away from its master. Even if it is, it would not serve others. If its master dies, it will disappear along with them.

“This Absolute Submission exists only in legends. There has never been a person in the Eastern Sea Region who was able to make a Royal Armament into a state of Absolute Submission. No matter if it’s the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect which shocked the Eastern Sea Region, or the genius of the Burning Heaven Church, Huangfu Haoyue, none of them were able to make their Royal Armament into a state of Absolute Submission. Even the current head of the Immortal Execution Archipelago cannot.

“But Wuqing has done it. Back then, those who were in the Depraved Ravine all personally saw this shocking scene. I’m sure this will spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region soon, and at that time, you will all know whether what I said was true or false.

“Right now, no matter might or shape, the Royal Armament this Chu Feng brandishes is the exact same as the Royal Armament Wuqing took away from Murong Xun. So, I determine that this person must be Wuqing. Otherwise, it’s impossible for him to use this Royal Armament.”

The white-haired old man’s words were quite logical. Moreover, they were spoken very loudly, letting everyone inside and outside the Flower Valley hear them clearly.

Moreover, his words were akin to a thunder in a clear sky. No matter if it was the people from the Zi family, or outsiders, all of them were shocked.

Putting aside what happened to the battle between the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago in the Depraved Ravine, Wuqing taking away Murong Xun’s Royal Armament and making it in Absolute Submission was enough to completely shock them. Because, if it were true, then it would truly be too shocking.

Before, everyone was even taking Wuqing and comparing him with Murong Xun. They all felt that the two were rare geniuses, and that Wuqing, in the future, would possibly become Murong Xun's greatest opponent.

However, if the old man's words were true, didn't that mean Wuqing had already surpassed Murong Xun? Otherwise, how would he have gotten the Royal Armament from Murong Xun's hands?

Then again, what cultivation did Murong Xun have? Everyone knew he was a rank eight Martial Lord, but what about Wuqing? Even if the Chu Feng before their eyes was Wuqing, he was at most a rank three Martial Lord. A rank three Martial Lord defeating a rank eight Martial Lord... that was simply an impossible feat!

In an instant, all sorts of shocked expressions and questions echoed inside and outside the Flower Valley. Something certain, however, was that everyone was thoroughly shocked by the white-haired old man's words.

"If I may dare ask, the young man who is fighting the patriarch of the Zi family, are you truly that Lord Wuqing?" Being confused, some fearless curious person actually asked Chu Feng directly. Moreover, he had a very respectful attitude, not daring to offend him in the slightest.

When he spoke, almost the entire Flower Valley went silent. Almost everyone went quiet and stopped breathing. They looked towards Chu Feng, awaiting his answer. Even the people from the Zi family were no exception, because the question of whether Chu Feng was Wuqing was really too important.

Due to everything that had occurred, Chu Feng already prepared to announce the truth. So, he didn't bother hiding it anymore. He calmly smiled, then covered his face with his sleeve. After putting it back down, his face had greatly changed. He became a young man roughly twenty years old—that appearance was the exact same as Wuqing's.

After changing his appearance, Chu Feng smiled and looked at the white-haired old man, then said, "Senior, do you recognize me?"

“I do, I do! You’re Wuqing, this is Wuqing true appearance! Everyone, quickly look! This is Wuqing’s appearance! This Chu Feng is indeed Wuqing!” Seeing that Chu Feng was actually talking to him, the white-haired old man was endlessly excited, as if it was some glorious event.

“What? This is Wuqing? He changed his appearance! Doesn’t this mean he is truly Wuqing?!” At that instant, bursts of yells started ringing inside and outside the Flower Valley. Putting aside his changed appearance, his conversation with the old man already represented everything.

“No.” However, just at that moment, Chu Feng calmly smiled. Then, his sleeve covered his face again, and he returned to his actual face of Chu Feng. Only then did he say, “I am Wuqing, and I am also Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng is not Wuqing. Wuqing is Chu Feng.

“I don’t mind telling everyone one thing. The Wuqing on the Misty Peak is indeed me, and the Wuqing in the Depraved Ravine is also me.

“However, Wuqing is only a fake name I made up; I didn’t think everyone would pay so much attention to me. With how things have progressed, I cannot bear tricking everyone any longer. Actually, Chu Feng is my real name, and the current me is the real me. I... I am called Chu Feng.”

Chapter 816 - You Think You Can Stop Me

MGA: Chapter 816 - You Think You Can Stop Me

“Huaaa—”

When those words were spoken, it naturally stunned everyone because they had now clearly confirmed his identity. Moreover, it also announced to the crowd a surprising truth.

Wuqing was originally Chu Feng, and the actual age of this exceptional genius was even younger than the fake identity! That also meant this genius was even more powerful than they had all expected. His cultivation aptitude was simply incomparable.

“He’s actually that Wuqing! This...”

At that instant, when the outsiders heard that truth, they were shocked. When they looked at Chu Feng, their eyes contained a bit more admiration and respect.

However, when the people from the Zi family heard that truth, they were terrified. After all, their Zi family was a family that had some fame in the Eastern Sea Region. Moreover, there were many people who visited them, and as such, they had very up-to-date news about the world. So naturally, the matters of the Eastern Sea Region were known as well as their own fingers.

Thus, the Zi family had already heard of Wuqing and the rumours surrounding him. Although they didn’t feel that he was equal to Murong Xun, they couldn’t deny that Wuqing was indeed a genius.

There were even a few young people in the Zi family who viewed Wuqing as an idol. Some young women, who hadn’t even seen Wuqing, felt

adoration towards him, taking him as a lover in their dreams.

Even the seniors of the Zi family were forced to consider Wuqing's existence with importance, and even the patriarch of the Zi family personally made an order, telling the people from the Zi family that, regardless of the relationship between Wuqing and the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they themselves could not offend Wuqing.

But now, but right before their eyes, but at this very instant...

Chu Feng, who was an eternal enemy to their Zi family, was actually Wuqing, whose name was known throughout the Eastern Sea Region, an existence which the Zi family feared. How could they bear such significant news? How could they accept such significant news? How should they even face such significant news...

Fear—an indescribable fear spread throughout the Zi family. No matter who it was, they could not fight back the fear. Even though their Zi family had the protection of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, at that moment, they still felt infinite uneasiness.

The reason for that was because everyone knew the reason why Wuqing's name could spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region was not only due to his personal aptitude, it was also due to his mysterious background.

Even Lady Qiushui, the Martial King, and Lady Piaomiao, such an influential person, announced they were protecting Wuqing, and regarding his mysterious master... who knew what sort of person he was.

However, what they did know was Wuqing's background represented something extremely horrifying.

So, the Zi family knew very well they could not afford to offend Wuqing, but no matter what, they didn't think that, from the very start, they had already offended this monster-like existence. Today, it seemed a disaster was heading their way.

“What’s this now? Patriarch of the Zi family, since you’re holding the strongest weapon, why are you trembling?” Chu Feng smiled and looked at the patriarch.

When they heard those words, the crowd once again looked at the patriarch. Only then did they discover that the patriarch’s body was indeed endlessly trembling at that moment.

The grand leader of the Zi family... where did his domineering aura which looked down on everything run off to? He was simply like a frightened rabbit; his arrogant demeanor was no more.

But, his situation was understandable. After all, who

wouldn’t

be afraid if they angered a person such as Wuqing? No, to be precise, a person such as

Chu Feng.

“Why are you silent now? Wasn’t your face full of arrogance before? Come! Widen my horizons! Let me have new experiences! Let me see the power of your ‘strongest weapon’!” As Chu Feng held the Royal Armament and walked in the air, he pressed towards the patriarch of the Zi family with his powerful might.

The world shook for each step Chu Feng took. The incomparably powerful might of a ruler swept out layer by layer. Even the patriarch of the Zi family, a rank six Martial Lord, felt enormous pressure, and he was forced continuously back.

He knew very well that Chu Feng currently was not someone he even had hopes of defeating.

“Old Feng, Old Lei[1], when are you going to stop watching?!” In a terrified state, the patriarch shouted and was actually asking for help.

“Hahahaha...” And when the patriarch finished speaking, an odd laughter rang out in the sky.

Within such laughter, two boundless auras crashed down from above. It caused the black clouds covering the air to disappear completely, and the lightning surging around to disperse. They suppressed Chu Feng’s Royal Armament.

“This might... there are more experts in the Zi family!” When they heard the laughter filled with suppressing power, everyone felt much more shocked.

“The ones I’ve been expecting have finally come.

“Two rank seven Martial Lords... It’s a bit better than what I had thought.” However, Chu Feng was already prepared for that situation. So, he did not express any surprise. He suddenly put the Silver Dragon Spear onto his shoulder, and jabbed it towards the patriarch of the Zi family. A silver-coloured ray of light then shot out from it.

“Dammit! Quickly save me!” The patriarch was alarmed when he saw that, and his expression changed so quick it made a

swish

sound

Even though he already knew he was no match for Chu Feng, he didn’t expect this strike to be that frightening—so much he didn’t even have a chance to defend himself.

“You useless thing! The Immortal Execution Archipelago has wasted so many resources on you.” At the same time the patriarch asked for help, a mocking voice also rang out. Simultaneously, from the Zi family, two streams of light shot out, and immediately arrived before the patriarch.

It was two old men; they had the exact same appearance. With a glance, one could tell they were twin brothers, but each of those twin brothers lost a single eye. One lost his left, one lost his right.

But even though both of them only had a single eye, they did not possess weak auras. As Chu Feng said before, they were rank seven Martial Lords.

whoosh After both of them appeared, one of them casually waved his hand and boundless Martial power swept out, easily dispersing the attack from Chu Feng's Royal Armament. A rank seven Martial Lord was indeed many times more powerful than a rank six Martial Lord.

“Brat, there's a road to heaven you don't take, yet there's a road to hell you take. Not only did you take my young master's Royal Armament, you dare to come and take his fiancée! You are truly looking to die,” said both Old Feng and Old Lei.

Even though they revealed killing intent on the surface, their hearts were incomparably excited. They didn't know what happened in the Depraved Ravine, but they recognized that Royal Armament—it was indeed Murong Xun's.

In addition, Chu Feng had already made the Immortal Execution Archipelago lose face before in the Misty peak. Today, if they were able to defeat him, it was a great achievement in and of itself. If they were able to take back the Royal Armament, then they would not only have accomplished an enormous deed, they would even receive great rewards. How could they

not

be elated?

Chu Feng was rather smart so he immediately saw what their little plan was. But, he didn't mind things like those. In this moment, he only wanted to save Zi Ling, and clearly, as long as he could defeat the two old men, he would finish today with that accomplishment.

So, Chu Feng subconsciously tightened his grasp on the Silver Dragon Spear, and an even more powerful might spread out from his body. At the same time, the Spirit Formation Gate opened, and Eggy, the Asura World Spirit, was also released by him. With her bewitching and beautiful appearance, she appeared within the crowd's line of sight.

“You two old things, you're correct. I, Chu Feng, have come here to take Zi Ling away. But, you think you can stop me, just with the two of you?”

Chapter 817 - The Queen Showing Her Power

MGA: Chapter 817 - The Queen Showing Her Power

“Hoh, I even thought some impressive existence would be released, but it’s only a rank two Martial Lord World Spirit! With just this bit of strength, you want to take Lady Zi Ling away from us? You must be too naive!” After seeing Eggy, Old Feng and Old Lei both roared with laughter—a very derisive one.

“Chu Feng, the old guy on the right is laughing too uglily. Hand him over to me first. You delay the one on the left, and after I take care of the right one, I’ll come take care of him. No problem, right?” Eggy said with a sweet smile.

“There’s no problem at all. With this Royal Armament, even if I cannot defeat him, at least, I won’t be defeated too soon. Quickly finish off the right one, then just come help me take care of the left one later.” Chu Feng nodded.

Although Eggy was strong, she was still only a rank two Martial Lord. Facing a rank seven Martial Lord was her limit. Even if she could reign victorious, she could not fight them both at the same time. She only remained advantageous in a one-on-one battle, so Chu Feng had to distract one of them.

Chu Feng already felt enormous pressure when facing a rank six Martial Lord with his current strength alone. As such, facing a rank seven Martial Lord would be like a fantastical story. However, with the Royal Armament, his fighting strength had increased dramatically. Therefore, Chu Feng was nearly able to defeat rank six Martial Lords with no problem, and even though he might not be able to defeat rank seven

Martial Lords, with the techniques he grasped, delaying one for a while was not difficult.

“Then it’s decided.” Eggy didn’t say anything more after hearing Chu Feng’s agreement. Endless black flames burst out, and with horrifying might, they headed straight for Old Lei. It could be seen that the queen, who had a very fiery nature, was furious.

“This might... It’s rather interesting. Brother, quickly take care of that brat. Let me face this beautiful lady a bit.”

In the instant Eggy attacked, both of them did frown slightly, as they were aware that Eggy wasn’t as simple as she appeared on the surface, but they were not afraid. When Old Lei made his move, bursts of lightning surged everywhere and attacked Eggy.

“Haha, I’ve heard that Wuqing is a genius with absurd fighting strength. Let me see today if you are as powerful as the rumours say.

“No, not Wuqing... Chu Feng! Hahaha...” As for Old Feng, with a face full of a mocking smile, he started attacking Chu Feng as well.

hoo hoo hoo

His robe fluttered and bursts of gales appeared. Not only were they created by Martial power, they moved as he commanded. They were completely controlled by him, and they made a circle in the air, surrounding Chu Feng.

He still didn’t think Chu Feng to be a worthy opponent. He prepared to use the Ruling Wind Technique to capture Chu Feng: he would thus be able to obtain the Royal Armament in Chu Feng’s hand, and also break his arrogant demeanor.

It would tell the world that regardless of the power of Chu Feng’s fighting strength, even if he held the peerless Royal Armament, when facing a rank seven Martial Lord, he would not even be able to put up a fight.

“Break!”

Yet in the end, Old Feng had still underestimated him. Chu Feng flicked the Silver Dragon Spear in his hand into the sky, and with a burst of silver light and an explosion, it destroyed Old Feng’s surrounding attack.

Following closely after, an azure light surged behind his feet, and an azure dragon appeared. With Chu Feng riding on it, it rapidly flew over. Chu Feng didn’t escape. Not only that, he even began his counterattack at Old Feng.

wuaoo

The Secret Skill, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, as if it were alive, was extremely lifelike. It didn’t just fly through the air, it made an ending number of deafening dragon roars, as though it were not a technique but a true dragon instead.

boom boom boom

And with the quick speed of the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, Chu Feng was pretty much able to dodge all of Old Feng’s attacks. Whenever he had the chance, he would take the Royal Armament and throw storm-like attacks at him.

Such a change in momentum caused the demeanor Old Feng had earlier to disappear completely. He started to feel pressure because he discovered astoundingly that Chu Feng was really too strong. So strong it surpassed his expectations: not only was a rank six Martial Lord no match for Chu Feng, even himself, a rank seven Martial Lord, found it a great difficulty to defeat him.

Most importantly, even though Chu Feng was using a delaying tactic, his attacks were still very fierce. It did not suppress Old Feng only in terms of atmosphere, it even suppressed him mentally. In an instant, it completely forced Old Feng’s carelessness away, and he did appear to be suppressed by Chu Feng.

“This is so powerful. What is that underneath Chu Feng’s feet? It couldn’t be a real dragon, could it?” When they saw the azure dragon underneath Chu Feng, there were many cries of amazement.

“Impossible. Dragons are creatures from legends! They are named as the king of all monsters, and let alone that there are no such things in the Eastern Sea Region, even if there were, they wouldn’t serve Chu Feng!”

“That’s right. This should be one of the legendary Secret Skills. I’ve heard Chu Feng possesses powerful Secret Skills, and it seems that the rumours are true indeed.” The mighty Chu Feng showed not only stunned Old Feng, it even stunned everyone else.

boom rumble rumble However, just at that moment, continual explosions came from the battle between Eggy and Old Lei. When bursts of shock waves were causing havoc, it almost destroyed all of the Zi family residences. If the people from the Zi family hadn’t moved already, it was likely most of them would have been dead or injured by now.

When they looked over, everyone was even more dumbfounded because the battle between Eggy and Old Lei could really be called the confrontation of two powerful existences. It was many times more intense than Chu Feng’s side.

bzz lala At that very instant, there were many lightning snakes surrounding Old Lei’s body. Spreading out from himself, they became a huge net of lightning that covered the sky. Within it, there was powerful killing strength. Nothing could survive within that range—not even a single blade of grass. Even if a Martial Lord entered such an attack, they would become ashes in an instant.

Yet, at present, not only was the beautiful queen, Eggy, inside the lightning net of Old Lei’s, she was able to even send a powerful attack towards him.

aooo

Her black-coloured flames were akin to a demon that lived by slaughtering. It not only had peerless might, it even made a ferocious roar.

In a situation like that, the

rank seven Martial Lord,

Old Lei, was pale and he was forced back, appearing as if he would fall at any moment.

“Powerful. This is simply unbelievable. Chu Feng’s World Spirit is actually this strong! Although it’s only a rank two Martial Lord, it has suppressed a rank seven Martial Lord. This is really unthinkable.”

“Could this be what they say: ‘A powerful master breeds a powerful servant’?” Eggy’s appearance brought astonishment to the entire crowd. They were all stunned by her frightening power.

“Hmph. What do any of you know? This World Spirit is not an ordinary World Spirit. It is a legendary

Asura

World Spirit.” Just at that moment, the white-haired old man who had gone to the Depraved Ravine once again spoke with a disdainful tone.

“What? An Asura World Spirit? From the Asura Spirit World, acclaimed to be the strongest of the Seven Spirit Worlds?” When they heard those words, all of their expressions changed greatly and they couldn’t help taking a long gasp.

boom However, just at that moment, another huge explosion rang out. At the same time, a painful cry rang out. “Brother, save me!”

That voice came from none other than Old Lei. Looking over towards him, almost everyone was stupefied again because at that moment, his hair was in a mess, and blood was all over his body. One could even see his bones on his left leg, proof that he was heavily injured.

The rank seven Martial Lord, when facing Eggy, a rank two Martial Lord, was actually defeated.

Chapter 818 - Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning

MGA: Chapter 818 - Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning

“Brother, save me, quickly!” Old Lei, who was even boasting to give Eggy a lesson, was now hysterically yelling. Even his voice was trembling; his words were filled with fear.

At that very moment, blood was all over his body. Not only was his graceful robe shredded, even his flesh was wounded as well. Where did all his arrogance go? He was already devastatingly terrified by Eggy’s ferocious attacks.

“How is this possible? That girl is

this

strong? Could it be that she’s truly a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World?” Seeing his younger brother unable to continue fighting, and also looking carefully at Eggy’s strange black flames, Old Feng’s forehead was immediately drenched with perspiration. He leapt forward and wanted to go help his brother.

“Oi oi oi, old thing, where are you going?” However, Chu Feng, who was responsible for distracting him, would of course not let him go easily. Not only did he take away that chance, he also increased the strength of his attacks towards Old Feng as he held the Royal Armament. He was simply making it so Old Feng could not even move a single inch.

“Dammit!” At that instant, Old Feng gnashed his teeth in anger, yet could do absolutely nothing. After all that had happened, he had to admit Chu Feng was really too troublesome. If the present circumstances continued, Old Lei would definitely be killed, and if he were to die, then the next

would be Old Feng himself. The situation before their eyes dictated their definite loss.

“Ahh—”

Just at that moment, Old Lei cried out in pain once again. Black flames in the shape of a sword pierced through him, making a bloody hole at his chest.

If he hadn't dodged it quick enough, it was likely that Eggy's strike would have pierced through his dantian, and destroyed his cultivation. Old Lei had already completely lost the ability to continue fighting against Eggy. What awaited him were only fiercer attacks.

“You forced this onto me, you forced this onto me!!” Old Feng too was enraged when he saw that. He suddenly started roaring those words in madness, and after doing so, he said to Old Lei, who was a step away from death, “Use that! Even if we die, we will drag this master and servant with us!”

“Mm!” Old Lei did not even have a hint of hesitation. After nodding with gritting teeth, a touch of fierce resolution flashed past his aged face. Then, the single eye that had always been closed gradually opened, and bolts of lightning were flashing inside the eye.

At the same time, Old Feng's single shut eye also opened. Within it, though there was not lightning, there were gales swirling about.

So actually, Old Feng and Old Lei didn't close their single eye because they were blind, it was because they were concealing special power. After they opened their eye, their auras also became completely different.

“Eggy, careful.” At that instant, even Chu Feng couldn't help but frown slightly. With his sharp Spirit power, and the Heaven's Eyes that could see through everything, Chu Feng discovered a tremendous change occurring within Old Feng's and Old Lei's body. The two old men definitely concealed a trump card.

“Chu Feng, you forced this onto us! You want us dead, so you shouldn’t even consider leaving alive!”

“Before we die, we will first tear your corpse into a million pieces!”

Suddenly, both of them shouted explosively. Then, from their “blind” eye, two rays of light were shot out, straight onto the surface of the ground.

“This feeling!”

Chu Feng’s complexion immediately changed because he discovered that after the rays of light were shot out, both of their bodies fell down, roughly crashing onto the ruined grounds. There wasn’t a single trace of life remaining, as if their bodies were two corpses, as if their life had entered the earth from the rays of light that shot out from their eyes.

rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble

At the same time, the land also started violently trembling. Moreover, strange patterns, like a swimming snake, quickly surged about on the ground surface. There were more and more patterns until finally, it covered the entire vast Flower Valley.

“Zi Ling, run!”

Chu Feng could no longer remain calm when he saw that. He could immediately tell it was a special technique used by the two old men. They prepared a very powerful formation.

If it were activated, even he and Eggy wouldn’t be able to defend against it because a painful price was paid in order to prepare that formation—life. The life of two rank seven Martial Lords.

“You want to run? None of you will be able to!”

However, before Zi Ling and the others were able to react to that, layers upon layers of barriers created by wind and lightning were created. They rose into the air from the borders of the Flower Valley, pierced through the

endless white clouds, into thousands and thousands of miles high in the air, sealing everything.

At the same time, two large figures rose from underground along with the activation of the formation. Those two figures, to speak accurately, didn't appear to be human, but more like gods.

It was because one was formed by bustling gales, while the other was formed by lightning. Those two powerful figures were Old Feng and Old Lei.

“Brat, do you know why the Immortal Execution Archipelago arranged us two to guard this place?”

“I don't mind telling you the truth: it's because the special techniques we cultivated can activate this Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning!”

“It can be activated only once, and it takes the price of our lives and all the cultivation we achieved in our life. So, today, even if you have wings you will not escape!” shouted Old Feng and Old Lei together.

At that moment, a fierce and furious expression were on both of their faces because technically speaking, they were already two dead men. And, the reason they were dead was all because of Chu Feng.

“Using life as a price to activate a formation? No wonder. No wonder these two said they would drag Chu Feng down even if they died.”

When they heard those words, not to mention Chu Feng, even the observing crowd were stunned. They could feel that the so-called Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning was very powerful. At that moment, no matter if it was Chu Feng, who held the Royal Armament, or Eggy, who came from the Asura Spirit World, their powerful might was completely suppressed by the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning.

At that moment, in that place, there were only two powerful existences—Old Feng and Old Lei. They were no longer humanoid. It was as if they were the gods who ruled this land. Whoever they wanted alive would live, and whoever they wanted dead would die.

“It seems that I’ve still underestimated the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Even though they only sent two rank seven Martial Lords to guard this place, these two are clearly no pushovers.” Chu Feng’s eyes glittered uneasily. He was completely aware of the present awful circumstances.

“Chu Feng, since they’ve done this, we can only fight with our lives on the line. Are you willing?” said Eggy with a smile. She had now backed away, returning to Chu Feng’s side.

“They’ve already sacrificed their own lives just to drag me down with them. What thing would I not dare to do? At most, I’ll just die. However, I don’t want her to go down with me...” As Chu Feng spoke, he looked at Zi Ling who was below because he had already thought of one possibility of retaliation.

In terms of putting lives on the line, would Chu Feng fear Old Feng and Old Lei? They, with their lives, activated the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning. However, if Chu Feng sacrificed his life, the thing he were to release would not be as simple as a formation. It would definitely surpass everyone’s imagination, because it would be a calamity.

Chapter 819 - Alone without Assistance

MGA: Chapter 819 - Alone without Assistance

The other World Spirit in Chu Feng's body had overwhelming fury. It was full of ferociousness and cruelty, and its cultivation was not sealed. If it were released, an enormous disaster upon the world would definitely appear.

However, if he did that, not only would Chu Feng die, everyone else in and near the Flower Valley would die. Even many people in the Eastern Sea Region would die. Yet, there were people Chu Feng did not want to affect by doing so. Unless absolutely necessary, Chu Feng did not want to take this step.

“You're thinking too much. With me here, there's no need for you to go down that road. It's a trump card your family left for you, not a trump card for you to end your life.” Eggy couldn't help smiling when she saw what Chu Feng was thinking.

“Eggy, then what plan do you have?” Chu Feng asked.

“Heh.” Eggy first smiled, then said, “Didn't I say before I can transfer my power to you? After obtaining my power, and in addition with your current strength, you should be able to defeat these two old men.

“However, due to the cultivation and physical body you currently possess, even though I can reduce the degree of violence of my power as much as possible, it will still lead to a serious injury on your body.

“So, you better make a good mental preparation because the backlash later will be deadly. If you cannot hold on, you will possibly die~” Even though

Eggy's tone was humorous when she spoke, there was still a few hints of worry.

“I no longer have a choice with how things are. Come. Actually, I've always wanted to feel how strong your power has become.” Chu Feng calmly smiled, and he had already opened the World Spirit Gate.

“Heh, it definitely surpasses your imagination.” Eggy smiled proudly, then leapt in and returned to Chu Feng's body.

A000 In the instant Eggy entered Chu Feng, a cry even more terrifying than the devil burst from his body.

Closely after, black flames starting appeared within his body. They first covered Chu Feng, then rapidly changed. Initially black flames, they became black runes and as those runes flashed, like armour, they covered Chu Feng's body.

Even the Royal Armament in Chu Feng's hand, the Silver Dragon Spear, was covered by the black-coloured runes, forcefully transforming it into a black-coloured spear.

When the Silver Dragon Spear was surrounded by the black flames, its power was not diminished, but was instead bursting forth with might. It was not only the Silver Dragon Spear which burst with power; most importantly, it was all of Chu Feng's power that increased several times in strength, and it had already faintly suppressed the illusory Old Feng and Old Lei.

“What's happening? What technique did he use? He's actually grasped the power of that World Spirit?” The observers were no fools and just by feeling, they were able to determine that the black-coloured flames surrounding Chu Feng originated from Eggy.

“This brat is very odd. Judging by his cultivation, how can he obtain the power of a World Spirit?” In reality, it was not only the observers who were shocked, Old Feng and Old Lei too were shocked as well. No matter

if it was cultivation, or body, Chu Feng shouldn't have been able to receive the power from the World Spirit.

“You two old geezers, let this young master here experience this Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning and see how impressive it is!” At that instant, a cold glint reflected off of Chu Feng's eyes; his confidence was multiplied.

Because, at that very moment, he was able to feel the strength of Eggy's power. It was simply power that feared nothing, one that seemed it could defeat anything. It truly surpassed Chu Feng's imagination.

Even though, due to certain restrictions, Eggy hadn't truly given her power to Chu Feng, at least, right now, his strength had been raised essentially.

boom All of a sudden, Chu Feng moved. His movement made even the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning tremble, and everyone could feel a burst of mighty pressure emanating from his body. Even outside the flower Valley, the mountains and earth were shaken.

“Brat, don't think you can do whatever you want! Since you are so impatient for death, we'll let you experience the strength of this Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning!” But Old Feng and Old Lei, who were already dead, had no reason to fear Chu Feng. They attacked at the same time, and the result of interweaved wind and lightning fought Chu Feng.

rumble rumble rumble

In an instant, explosions and rumbling resounded everywhere. Shock waves went in all directions. The air and the ground were taken over by the violent gales and lightnings, and the black-coloured flames that appeared they could consume everything. Three bursts of power filled the sky of the Flower Valley, and occasionally, there would be a remnant shock wave sweeping downwards—one that no one could defend against. The areas it passed killed everything; the battle between the three was indeed extremely intense.

But no matter how much powerful they were, an outcome had to be decided. After some exchange in blows, the side with an advantage soon showed. Chu Feng, who held the Royal Armament, possessing the power of Asura, was such a side. With his own strength, he suppressed Old Feng and Old Lei, respectively huge figures of wind and lightning, and pushed them continuously back.

“Dammit!” At that instant, their faces were very unsightly. Even though they no longer possessed a human form, one could still see the fury and bitterness in their expressions.

They painstakingly cultivated for many years, training in this Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning which required the price of life to activate. Yet, at present, they were still inferior to some brat? How were they willing to accept such an outcome!

“People from the Zi family, listen! Channel all of your power into this formation and assist us two in removing this child. If our formation fails, none of you should even think of living,” shouted the two old men suddenly when they could do nothing else. They were actually asking the Zi family for help.

“This isn’t true, is it? Old Feng and Old Lei are truly unable to continue on? Even the power they obtained with the price of life cannot defeat Chu Feng?”

Even though they already saw who was strong and who was weak, when Old Feng and Old Lei spoke those words, everyone still felt very shocked because such words were sufficient to represent the level of strength Chu Feng had obtained. The young man whose name spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region was indeed worthy of the title of “genius”.

“Zi family, attention! Without restraint, channel all of your power into the formation! Those who do not obey will be executed!”

Just at that moment, the patriarch of the Zi family also spoke. He knew how serious matters were, and even though, after knowing Chu Feng’s identity, he was very afraid, he had no other choice. They could only fight

with their lives on the line, otherwise what awaited them was nothing but death.

hmm hmm hmm hmm After the patriarch of the Zi family spoke, of course the Zi family did not dare to hesitate. All of them gave it their all and started transferring their power completely into the formation.

When layers upon layers of power was unendingly sent into the formation, the wind and lightning that Old Feng's and Old Lei's bodies were composed of also became stronger and stronger. Their auras started to rise as well, and when they attacked again, they made even space itself collapse. The sky changed colour, and the black-coloured flames Chu Feng had were oppressed, and actually starting pressing back towards Chu Feng.

“Haha, damn brat! You are standing now alone with no help. However, we have the entire Zi family! Let's see how you will defeat us two!” After their increase in strength, Old Feng and Old Lei laughed in madness. They could tell that, despite very strong, Chu Feng was at his limits. So, he was undoubtedly soon to be defeated.

“Heh.” But just at that time, Chu Feng made a sneer. Then, his eyes turned blood-red, and he coldly said, “Are you certain I am standing alone with no help?”

“You...” And after seeing the change that happened to Chu Feng, the extremely excited pair of old men immediately froze. Their bodies trembled, and an indescribable feeling of uneasiness started spreading from their hearts, permeating their entire body.

Chapter 820 - Should I Kill Him

MGA: Chapter 820 - Should I Kill Him

At that instant, Chu Feng's eyes were blood-red, akin to scorching-red steel. They emitted an odd glint, yet resembled lava from deep underground, containing destructive power.

Soon, rows of fiery-red cracks appeared on the armour Chu Feng made by the black-coloured flames. The cracks were like rivers of magma flowing on black dirt in varying paths.

Most importantly, when such changes were occurring, Chu Feng's aura once again increased. Hurricanes made by the black-coloured flames swept out of his body, and as they brought about chaos, the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning which sealed that land appeared as though it were about to collapse.

“You said I'm alone with no help, but I can tell you very clearly that I, Chu Feng, have never been alone and never with no help because in my body, I've always had a queen who fought by my shoulder, and lived with me always.”

boom Suddenly, Chu Feng jabbed the spear abruptly at Old Lei. A black-coloured pillar of light then shot out of the tip of the spear, and, amidst such horrifying might, Old Lei's body exploded with a bang.

When the lightning snakes filling the air scattered about in the air, Old Lei's aura also became smaller and smaller. When the final lightning snake disappeared, along with it was the complete disappearance of Old Lei's aura.

hmm Simultaneously, the power of the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning was instantly cut by half. It lost its former feeling of indestructibility.

boom When he saw that, Chu Feng flicked the spear in his hand into the air, and another black-coloured pillar of light shot out. It shot out towards the horizon like an inverted meteor.

After another frightening explosion, it burrowed a huge hole in the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning, and quickly after, the radiance emitting from the formation turned dimmer and dimmer before it collapsed completely. The formation that could only be activated by the price of life—Old Feng’s and Old Lei’s—was destroyed by Chu Feng.

“Dammit!” Old Feng couldn’t help cursing. Since Chu Feng killed Old Lei just now, only one person was supporting the formation. Its power was halved, so naturally it could not take Chu Feng’s strike.

“Old thing, your Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning is barely adequate. You want to drag me down with you and finish me off? In your next life!

“Hahaha...” At that instant, as Chu Feng held the spear, he laughed powerfully. There was ridicule within his deafening laughter.

Ridicule—extreme ridicule! Two rank seven Martial Lords who had cultivated for dozens of years were not only unable to defeat a young man—a rank three Martial Lord—they were even forced to commit suicide in order to activate the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning which they had cultivated for dozens of years.

However, in the end, they remained inferior and their formation was destroyed right before the eyes of the crowd. At the same time such a scene shocked the crowd, the two old men lost all face as well.

“You arrogant brat, I’ll kill you!” Old Feng’s body was trembling from anger. His face was distorted, and like an outraged tiger, he pounced towards Chu Feng with powerful might. He wanted to commence the last fight.

“Hoh.” However, Chu Feng merely smiled disdainfully at his final pounce. The spear in his hand flicked once again, and with the explosive shot of a

black light, Old Feng's body was pierced through, and he thus disappeared completely from this world.

At that moment, the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning had been completely destroyed. Not to mention the Zi family residences, even the entire Flower Valley was in a mess. On the ground, there were deep pits of varying sizes everywhere. There were even cracks that continued for dozens of miles. That battle had created quite a bit of destruction.

However, under the night sky, it was abnormally silent because everyone was deeply shocked by Chu Feng's powerful techniques. Some were even doubting whether it was reality. After all, the fighting strength Chu Feng showed was really too inconceivable.

“Run!” Suddenly, a shout full of panic rang out. Soon after, the remaining people in the Zi family fled into the distance without even turning their heads around, akin to ants on a hot pan.

After seeing Chu Feng's power, they all knew it was impossible for them to fight Chu Feng. The only thing they could do was to flee.

“Today, none of the people from the Zi family should even think of safely escaping.”

But how could Chu Feng give them that chance? He coldly snorted, and a boundless purple-coloured Spirit Formation burst out from his body. It was even quicker than the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning. In a blink, it sealed an area outside the Flower Valley with a circumference of a hundred miles. It locked in everyone.

boom rumble rumble After doing all that, Chu Feng suddenly flicked the spear in his hand again, and after an explosion, almost a hundred people from the Zi family were shattered. They didn't even have the chance to make a single sound before becoming ashes.

“Die! Those who dared to stop me must all die!” Soon after, he swept horizontally with his spear. The sky was in chaos, and the earth collapsed.

In a blink, several hundreds of people were consumed by that power, becoming ashes in the wind.

“What ruthlessness. It seems that today, Chu Feng is eradicating the entire Zi family!” The surrounding observers finally came to their senses when they saw that happening. They discovered that Chu Feng not only attacked fiercely, he attacked accurately. He did not harm innocents as he focused completely on the people from the Zi family.

“Why is he doing this? What sort of enmity exists between Chu Feng and the Zi family for him to be so cruel?”

Seeing that Chu Feng aimed to kill everyone from the Zi family, some people started guessing in their hearts. Of course, they only dared to yell out those questions inside, not to say them out loud. After witnessing Chu Feng’s strength, they feared him deeply. They were very afraid.

“Chu Feng, don’t! Don’t kill them anymore! Spare their lives, and give them a chance! After all, they are still people of my Zi family! They are still Zi Ling’s relatives!” However, at that moment, Zi Ling’s parents actually rose into the air and half-knelt in front of Chu Feng, begging for the Zi family.

“Chu Feng, please, for Ling’er sake, give us a chance!” At the same time, there were several more people who flew up and knelt by Chu Feng’s side.

Chu Feng did not recognize those people, but from the very start, they had stood by Zi Ling’s side. She also didn’t dislike them, so they were likely the very few people who supported Zi Ling within the Zi family.

“Hmph.” Facing that scene, perhaps normal people would be moved, but Chu Feng coldly snorted instead. Then, he swept his gaze over the crowd and said, “My love for Zi Ling is real and true, but the Zi family heartlessly pulled her away from me, and even imprisoned Zi Ling’s parents, forcing Zi Ling to marry Murong Xun by threatening her with my life.

“Furthermore, they were doing all that for their personal gains only. These people are selfish. They use the happiness of others as the price for benefits of their own.

“Everyone, you tell me. Should they be killed?”

Chapter 821 - Fated to Become Famous

MGA: Chapter 821 - Fated to Become Famous

“This...” The crowd first sank into silence when they heard those words. In this world, the strongest were the rulers. Who knew who was right and who was wrong? If your fist was harder, then your words were reason, and your actions were right.

If Chu Feng’s words were all true, that he and Zi Ling were truly in love, and rather, it was the Zi family that split up the couple, then after a brief moment of thinking, everyone understood everything.

Back then, the reason the Zi family was able to forcefully take Zi Ling away from Chu Feng was definitely because Chu Feng was no match for the Zi family back then. So, he could do nothing.

Now, since Chu Feng had the strength, he had come to take revenge. That was rather forgivable, and rather reasonable because many, if they were in Chu Feng’s place, would do the same.

If I’m bullied when weak, I will have my vengeance when strong.

“Kill them! They should be killed! These people, who ignore honour in the face of benefit, who think nothing but selfish gains, who even sell off their own family for profit have no heart! They are inferior to pigs and dogs! They cannot be left alive! Kill them all!” Then, there was someone who suddenly shouted, greatly agreeing with Chu Feng to kill the people from the Zi family.

“That’s right! Kill them! I support Lord Chu Feng! I support him killing these despicable and shameless people of the Zi family!” Moreover, shouts like that became louder and louder, clearer and clearer. They

resounded like thunder, and nearly half of the observers agreed with Chu Feng's point of view.

And as they saw the purple-coloured Spirit Formations which sealed their escape, and the cries of "kill" echoing, everyone from the Zi family had deadpan faces. Some even knelt powerlessly onto the ground, preparing to die.

"Chu Feng, do not kill them! No matter how wrong they were, they are still family. Please give them a chance." Just at that moment, Zi Xuanyuan also rose into the air, and as he spoke, he too knelt before Chu Feng, begging for the Zi family.

"Senior Xuanyuan, what are you doing?" Chu Feng could ignore others, but when facing Zi Xuanyuan, he could not. Before he even knelt down, Chu Feng had stopped him.

"Chu Feng! They say that blood is thicker than water—Zi Ling and I are from the Zi family. No matter what they did wrong, I cannot just watch as they die. Please, spare them once," Zi Xuanyuan begged again.

That truly put Chu Feng in a difficult position. Originally, he hated the people from the Zi family with every fibre of his being. If he did not kill them all, he could not ease the hatred in his heart. After all, it was they who forced Zi Ling to marry Murong Xun. If he didn't have the ability to save Zi Ling now, then it was likely Zi Ling would truly marry Murong Xun. At that time, it would become an unrecoverable tragedy.

As for the leader of such a potential tragedy, it was the Zi family. If they hadn't found Zi Ling in the continent of the Nine Provinces and forced her back, Chu Feng wouldn't have been separated from Zi Ling for over a year.

Chu Feng could perhaps kindheartedly forgive the Zi family, but if they were him, would they kindheartedly forgive him? No, absolutely not. If Zi Ling didn't threaten them with her life, then the patriarch of the Zi family would have killed Chu Feng in the moment he saw him in the Eastern Sea Region.

“Zi Ling, help us convince Chu Feng!” Seeing that Chu Feng was still unwilling to forgive the Zi family, Zi Ling’s parents, and Zi Xuanyuan, could only cast their begging gazes at Zi Ling.

Due to their gazes, Zi Ling’s heart couldn’t help but soften. Then, she said, “Chu Feng, please give them a chance.”

“Whatever. Because of Zi Ling, I’ll give all of you a chance to start anew. If you do not correct your wrongs, I will return with a massacre.”

After Zi Ling spoke, Chu Feng had to dispel the thought of eradicating the Zi family. He could choose to give others no face, but he had to respect Zi Ling’s words.

When they heard Chu Feng speak, the people from the Zi family felt as if they were in a dream. They, who had already prepared to die, didn’t expect Chu Feng to forgive them no matter what.

“Thank you for sparing our lives, thank you for sparing our lives!” Being elated, the people from the Zi family kowtowed at Chu Feng.

“The lives of all can be spared, but one must be taken.” However, just at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly extended his arm. A powerful current of air surged past, causing an aged body to roll and appear before Chu Feng. He was then held by the throat.

As for who that was, it was the patriarch of the Zi family.

“Mm! Spare me! Mm— Chu Feng, give me a chance! I’m... still... a... part... of... Ah—” The patriarch of the Zi family had a face filled with panic. He cast honour aside and begged for his life as he spluttered.

However, Chu Feng had already seen his true nature. How could he give him a chance to live? Chu Feng didn’t even bother saying a word to him, and with his hand clenching tight, and blood splattering everywhere, he squashed the neck of the patriarch, separating it from his body.

When the head and the body fell onto the ground, everyone could tell that the patriarch of the Zi family died. He died completely: Chu Feng not only cut off his head, he killed his Consciousness, and absorbed his Source Energy. He thoroughly killed the patriarch of the Zi family.

hmm After the execution, Chu Feng waved his big sleeve, and pulled Zi Ling, Zi Xuanyuan, her parents, and some people from the Zi family who supported Zi Ling to his side, and onto the azure dragon.

aoooooo After doing all that, Chu Feng cast a thought and closed the Spirit Formation which had sealed the Zi family, and amidst a deafening roar of a dragon, Chu Feng left the Zi family, disappearing within the night with Zi Ling and the others.

As they looked in the direction of Chu Feng and the others' departure, the crowd was baffled for quite a while. When they slowly came to their senses, without saying anything, they used their most powerful bodily martial skills and speedily fled to the distance. In an instant, a large number of people were quickly escaping. They wanted to leave that zone of disaster.

After the great battle, they had to rid themselves of the relationship between them and such an event. Otherwise, when the experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago arrived, then they too would possibly be affected. With how the Immortal Execution Archipelago operated, killing them was not an impossibility.

But regardless, many people today had witnessed a spectacle. They had truly seen the power of Chu Feng.

He not only had exceptional talent, he had a Royal Armament and even made a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World view him as master. He could be said to be the coalescence of all impossible things; he was truly, and deservedly, an exceptional genius.

After today, Chu Feng's name was fated to spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region again—not as Wuqing, but as Chu Feng. Not only because he

had unparalleled talent and potential, but also because of the frightening actions he did today.

The genius Chu Feng not only defeated two rank seven Martial Lords from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he nearly destroyed the entire Zi family. He also took away Murong Xun's fiancée, Zi Ling—though, to be more precise, it was not “take away”, because Zi Ling herself was willing to leave with Chu Feng. The two of them loved each other.

However, since Murong Xun had an arranged marriage with Zi Ling first, in the eyes of the world, it was “take away”.

Killing experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, stealing Murong Xun's Royal Armament, taking away the young master's fiancée... It had to be said that Chu Feng brought things to the extreme. He not only made it clear he was an enemy to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he didn't put them in his eyes at all.

Chapter 822 - Miracle

MGA: Chapter 822 - Miracle

swish—

Beneath the night sky, above the white clouds, there was a stream of light quickly dashing through the air. The speed was quick, so much it was dumbfounding, and even typical Martial Lords found it difficult to capture into their eyes, with their naked eyes, what exactly was that stream of light.

It was, of course, Chu Feng and the others. At that moment, Chu Feng channeled his full strength into quickly moving, and the direction of travel was very clear as well—an area suitable for hiding themselves. Chu Feng had already determined the path to this location before coming to the Zi family.

As for why? It was because, at present, Chu Feng's eyes were becoming redder and redder. There were not only blood-red patterns on his black-coloured runic armour, there were many patterns on even Chu Feng's bare skin. Even though Eggy gave Chu Feng such powerful strength, at the same time, that power was destroying Chu Feng's physical body.

To save Zi Ling, Chu Feng was fighting with his life. Although he succeeded in the end, he had paid a painful price for it. He knew, for a very long time, he would be unable to protect Zi Ling. So, while he was still conscious, he had to bring Zi Ling to a relatively safe place.

“Ah!” Suddenly, Chu Feng's expression changed. He opened his mouth, and a large amount of blood sprayed out. The blood was very strange—it was black. Not only did it emit heat, it was even surging, as if it were boiling black water.

whoosh At the same time, Chu Feng fell forward. The azure dragon underneath him not only disappeared, he himself also lost his ability to fly

complete. He started to fall from the air.

“Chu Feng!” Zi Ling and the others were greatly alarmed when they saw that. Zi Ling, who was standing behind Chu Feng, quickly got hold of him.

After seeing the changes happening to Chu Feng, Zi Ling’s already worried face became extremely panicked. She herself even started to panic.

It was because at that moment, along with Chu Feng’s loss of consciousness, the black runes surrounding Chu Feng’s body became black flames. After leaving Chu Feng’s body, they disappeared gradually.

After the black flames disappeared, they shockingly discovered that on Chu Feng’s body, there were no more clothes. Not to mention his lack of clothes, even his physical body was charred like charcoal. On his coal-like skin, there were bloody cracks.

How did that even seem like a person’s body? It was simply more akin to a burnt corpse.

“Grandfather, father, mother, what is happening? Quickly come look!” Zi Ling completely panicked. Even though she was typically calm, after seeing Chu Feng in such a state, she found it hard to remain collected.

“Let me see.” Seeing that, Zi Ling’s parents, who had the highest cultivations, hurriedly came over and observed him. After doing so, they couldn’t help tightly furrowing their brows and remained in silent.

“How is he? What is it? Say something, quickly say something!” Zi Ling anxiously urged.

“This.... Ahh...” Zi Ling’s mother helplessly sighed, not knowing what to say.

Just at that moment, Zi Ling’s father spoke. “Ah, Ling’er. You must be prepared for this. Chu Feng was borrowing the power of his World Spirit before. But, you must know that the power of a World Spirit isn’t something a Purple-cloak World Spiritist can endure.

“The very minimum requirement is to be a Gold-cloak World Spiritist. This Chu Feng touched upon a taboo; being able to stay alive is already a miracle.

“This is truly unbelievable because if it were a normal person, they would simply be unable to maintain the power of the World Spirit. However, Chu Feng not only bore with it, he even bore with it for so long.

“Besides, even if a World Spirit can lend their power to their World Spiritist, it is always only for an increase in the World Spiritist’s physical body. It shouldn’t allow their fighting strength to rise so dramatically.

“I must say that this child is truly a rare genius. He simply did an impossible feat. But, sadly...” At that instant, the ones, who left the Zi family with Zi Ling and the others, also spoke. Their faces were filled with amazement but also pity.

“What are you saying? What are all of you saying?!” Zi Ling loudly questioned; she could tell that something was greatly wrong.

“Ling’er, Chu Feng is crippled. Not only is his physical body destroyed, even his Consciousness is wounded. I’m afraid he won’t be able to retain his cultivation. Even if he survives, he will be a cripple,” Zi Ling’s father said.

“No, I don’t believe this, I don’t believe this...” Zi Ling instantly lost control of her emotions, and started crying while hugging Chu Feng. She knew that she was the reason for Chu Feng’s current state. If it weren’t for saving her, Chu Feng wouldn’t have his current state.

“Wait, look closely! His body seemed to be recovering! Although it’s very slow, it’s recovering!” However, just at that moment, Zi Xuanyuan suddenly spoke. Moreover, on his initially nervous face, there was a hint of joy.

“Heavens! It’s true! That’s unbelievable! Is this little guy a monster?” When they looked again at Chu Feng’s body, Zi Ling’s parents and the others were also shocked.

“Let’s not talk too much and find a place to hide first.

“The reason why Chu Feng kept on using the power from the World Spirit even after leaving the Flower Valley is because he wanted to bring us to a safe place. We cannot fail his good intentions,” Zi Xuanyuan said.

“Mm.” Zi Ling’s parents also nodded, then brought Chu Feng and quickly flew into the air, at the same time searching for a place to safely reside in.

Time darted past and passed in an instant. A single month quietly elapsed.

Chu Feng had lain unconscious for a full month. He also had a very long and painful dream.

His entire body was placed within a huge furnace. He was enduring the burning of black flames, and no matter how he yelled, it was useless. The flames aimed to burn him into ashes.

But luckily, the Divine Lightning in Chu Feng’s dantian as well as the lightning in his blood guarded Chu Feng constantly. They were in a continuous battle against the attacking blaze. As much as they could, they protected Chu Feng’s body. That made the pain of his burning flesh less and less, and now, he was no longer in danger.

“Mm.” Suddenly, Chu Feng opened his eyes. He discovered he was lying within a mountain cave, and even though it was a cave, it was filled with runes—runes of concealment. Moreover, both underneath him and on him, there were thick blankets. It was very comfortable.

As for himself, even though his body was still feeling the pain of fire, he was within his range of toleration. It didn’t have too big of an effect towards Chu Feng.

Looking around, Chu Feng joyfully discovered a sleeping beauty lying by his side. Looking at her beautiful face, was that not Zi Ling? However, on the very same face, there was a thin and discoloured complexion. One could even see the traces of tears streaking past her face from the corners of her eyes.

Chu Feng was very happy because he was still able to successfully save the one he loved. However, his heart also ached because he knew what happened. He couldn't help extending his hand to carefully stroke Zi Ling's pitch-black hair.

“Mm.” However, Zi Ling was too sensitive. Just when Chu Feng touched her, she immediately opened her eyes. She sat up with a swish, and looked around, alert.

However, after she saw Chu Feng, she couldn't help but be taken aback. She first rubbed her eyes, then examined Chu Feng carefully. Only then did she reveal a sweet smile she hadn't made in a long time, and leapt into Chu Feng's embrace immediately.

“Chu Feng, you've finally awakened! This is great!”

“Zi Ling, I've let you worry.” Hugging the beauty, Chu Feng felt very fortunate. He felt that all the pain he suffered before was worth it.

boom

“Quickly catch it! There, there, seal off its escape!” However, just at that moment, bursts of noises suddenly came from outside.

Chu Feng abruptly stood up when he heard that, his brows furrowing. A grave expression emerged into his eyes, and he said calmly, “This voice belongs to Senior Xuanyuan and the others. What is happening outside?”

Chapter 823 - Shaken

MGA: Chapter 823 - Shaken

“Is it starting again?” However, when Zi Ling heard some noises, she was not worried at all. Instead, her face was one of helplessness. Clearly, she knew what was happening outside.

At the same time, Chu Feng spread out his Spirit power. He discovered there was actually no enemy invading. So, he quickly brought Zi Ling out of the cave for observation.

After coming outside the cave, only then did Chu Feng find out they were hiding within a vast mountain range. In their surroundings, layers of Concealment Spirit Formations were laid, so everything they did wouldn't be discovered by others. Clearly, they were laid by Zi Ling's parents.

And, at present, in the nearby sky, Zi Xuanyuan and the others were trying to capture something. Looking closely, Chu Feng discovered it was a Delivery Bird.

However, it was a very powerful one. Not only was it able to conceal its aura, thus avoiding Spirit power and any sort of detection, it had eighteen pairs of wings. Its speed was fast, akin to light. Even he himself was quite inferior.

It was simply a waste of strength for Zi Xuanyuan and the others to surround the Delivery Bird, as it was impossible for them to capture it. The bird was merely toying with them now.

whoosh whoosh whoosh But after the Delivery Bird saw Chu Feng, it fiercely flapped its wings, and like light, after it arrived in front of Chu Feng, it started flying around him.

“It's... come for me?” When he saw that, Chu Feng couldn't help casting his gaze at Zi Ling, who was behind him.

“It has been here for several days already, and it only flies around you. If any other person nears it, it will escape. Moreover, it’s too fast. I have never seen a Delivery Bird with this speed before. It likely some expert who has sent you a letter.” Zi Ling sweetly smiled; she was quite bewitching.

Chu Feng slowly opened his palms when he heard that. After another circle around him, the Delivery Bird actually gradually descended. In the end, it stood atop his palms, and at that moment, Chu Feng discovered a Spirit Formation on the Delivery Bird’s body.

That Spirit Formation was a very complex one. Within it was a message, and unless it was an expert in Spirit Formations, they were unable to obtain the information inside if they were unable to break open the Spirit Formation, even if they captured the Delivery Bird.

Because, when deactivating the formation, as long as there was one mistake, the message within the formation would be erased. The person who sent that message to Chu Feng really did have powerful techniques. It was a very careful person.

However, that Spirit Formation did not trouble Chu Feng at all. At present, Chu Feng was a Spirit Formation expert—that was publicly agreed. Although he was only a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, he, who grasped the Heaven’s Eyes, had already surpassed a few normal Gold-cloak World Spiritists in terms of true accomplishments in Spirit Formation techniques.

After a few simple actions, Chu Feng deactivated the Spirit Formation on the Delivery Bird. The message hidden inside also entered Chu Feng’s head completely.

After obtaining that message, Chu Feng lightly frowned, then looked at Zi Ling by his side. “Zi Ling, how long was I unconscious for?”

“One month,” Zi Ling replied truthfully.

“One month? Then, in that month, has the Immortal Execution Archipelago made any move?” Chu Feng asked.

“They have. You not only joined up with the Crippling Night Demon Sect and killed the Eighth and Ninth Immortal, you even killed Ya Fei and stole Murong Xun’s Royal Armament. Then, you kidnapped Zi Ling. All of your actions truly represented repeatedly slapping the face of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“And since you’ve successfully challenged the might of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, it as a whole now despises you. They dream to skin you alive and torture you, and have put down wanted posters throughout the entire Eastern Sea Region. No matter who it is, as long as they provide information regarding you, they would receive a large reward.

“Similarly, no matter who it is, as long as they dare to hide you, the Immortal Execution Archipelago would send an army without mercy.

“Not only you, the Immortal Execution Archipelago even formally announced war against the Crippling Night Demon Sect. They sent out large numbers of experts to search for the whereabouts of the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Those who are found will be killed without exception.

“Moreover, the Immortal Execution Archipelago even sent out invitations for an alliance. At present, the forces that have some strength received this invitation. The Three Great Monstrous Clans, who usually have nothing to do with humans, also received this invitation.

“Using rewards as bait, the Immortal Execution Archipelago is trying to ally all the powerful forces of the Eastern Sea Region, and with the reason of ‘exterminating demons’, they swear to remove the Crippling Night Demon Sect. This time, the Immortal Execution Archipelago has truly become enraged,” Zi Xuanyuan gravely narrated. In the past month, although they were hiding here, they were not idly sitting around. They had learnt quite a bit of information, and even though the Eastern Sea

Region was large, due to the existence of Delivery Birds, the spreading of information was very quick. Within a short month, everything was known.

Also within the short month, an enormous change happened to the Eastern Sea Region. It, which had been in peace for a long while, once again faced a new era with the flames of war flying everywhere.

Was the Immortal Execution Archipelago going to hold its position of overlord, or would the Crippling Night Demon Sect take back its former glory? Or, perhaps, a powerful force that had been waiting would surprise everyone, and obtain power amidst the chaos? Everything was filled with uncertainty.

“You said the Immortal Execution Archipelago said I killed Ya Fei?” In comparison to the other chaos occurring however, Chu Feng was more intrigued with that question.

“Mm. The Immortal Execution Archipelago did say that. However, the Crippling Night Demon Sect also let word out that said Murong Xun killed Ya Fei. Moreover, they said you took Ya Fei and...” When he spoke up to there, Zi Xuanyuan stopped.

Chu Feng could feel everyone looking away from himself, and only Zi Ling’s eyes remained on him.

“Heh, do you believe their words?” Chu Feng turned around and chuckled at Zi Ling. But, in his eyes, there was a bit of guilt because he knew what the Crippling Night Demon Sect said. They definitely announced, without an ounce of restraint, that he took down Ya Fei.

“I do. What is there to disbelieve? That does seem like your style of doing things!”

A smirk appeared on Zi Ling’s face when she said that, intentionally making herself harbour evil intents. But, the warmth in her eyes told Chu Feng that she didn’t blame him at all, nor was she angry at him.

Chu Feng's tense heart gradually relaxed when he saw Zi Ling wasn't mad, and only then did he ask Zi Xuanyuan again, "Senior Xuanyuan, other than Ya Fei, what else did the Crippling Night Demon Sect say?"

"The Crippling Night Demon Sect said you have already joined them, that you are already a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Those who dare to harm you will have their entire family eradicated by them.

"Moreover, the Crippling Night Demon Sect also sent a counterattack. Of the Five Elemental Kings, the Earth King, the Gold King, and the Wood King have all shown themselves and attacked several important territories of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, causing severe losses for them.

"If they didn't, the Immortal Execution Archipelago wouldn't have put so many beneficial rewards as bait to ally with other forces, to even send out an invitation to the Three Great Monstrous Clans. The Crippling Night Demon Sect is indeed very powerful, and now, they are hidden from view so the Immortal Execution Archipelago have suffered quite a few losses," Zi Xuanyuan continued saying.

"Then no wonder." Chu Feng nodded, as if he understood something.

Chapter 824 - Shelter

MGA: Chapter 824 - Shelter

“Chu Feng, who sent you that message? The Crippling Night Demon Sect?” The smart Zi Ling had a clue what Chu Feng was thinking when he asked those questions.

“Mm. It’s Senior Earth King from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. He sent me a message and said he wants to meet me, that there’s something he needs to discuss.” Chu Feng did not trick Zi Ling.

“Then you should quickly go find them. No need to worry about us. In the past month, my father and mother had carefully laid Concealment Spirit Formations, so it’s fine if we hide here,” said Zi Ling, knowing that Chu Feng had business in hand.

“No, it is not safe here. Don’t underestimate the Immortal Execution Archipelago; they possess many techniques. Even with my Spirit Formation techniques, I was unable to escape their search. If they send experts here, they will definitely be able to find you.” Chu Feng quickly shook his head. He had saved Zi Ling after so much difficulty, so he didn’t want Zi Ling to enter the tiger’s mouth again.

“But, right now, the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago are like water and fire. In order to deal with the Crippling Night Demon Sect, the Immortal Execution Archipelago even used important lands as the price to ally with the Three Great Monstrous Clans so they can deal with the Crippling Night Demon Sect all together

“Right now, although quite a few Crippling Night Demon Sect experts have shown themselves, if the Three Great Monstrous Clans truly allies with the Immortal Execution Archipelago, then it won’t be good. Since they’re looking for you with such haste, they must have important matters to discuss. You cannot put this off,” Zi Ling said very seriously.

When he saw Zi Ling who acted in such a way, Chu Feng's heart couldn't help warming. She was truly thoughtful. Not only for him, but also for the global situation.

"Right now, there is only one definite safe place, and that's the Misty Peak. I'll first send you there, then go the Four Seas Academy," Chu Feng said.

"Four Seas Academy? Su Rou, Su Mei, and the others are still in the Four Seas Academy?" Zi Ling asked worriedly.

"Mm, but you don't need to worry. Even if the Immortal Execution Archipelago knows I'm called Chu Feng, they shouldn't be that quick to find that they are related to me. After all, the world is so big and there are so many famous people. It would require large amounts of time in investigation to find the ones connected to me," Chu Feng calmly said. He had already prepared for that.

"But... that Earth King from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Doesn't he have something he needs you for?" Zi Ling was still a bit worried, afraid she would interfere in Chu Feng's important matters.

"He didn't tell me the specifics, and just told me to find a place to meet him. Right now, I'll tell him to find me at the Four Seas Academy. After sending you to the Misty Peak, I'll go there and meet up with him," Chu Feng said.

"Then fine." Zi Ling didn't try to convince Chu Feng anymore when he insisted like that. Instead, she listened to his arrangements because she knew very well if they were not arranged in a safe place, even if Chu Feng met up with the experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, he would not be able to fight with no worries.

Afterwards, on that very day, Chu Feng led Zi Ling and the others away from the mountain range. He found a Teleportation Array that wasn't guarded by the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Through it, they were able to be directly sent to the Misty Peak. Even if the Immortal Execution Archipelago felt Chu Feng and the others would

possibly head towards the Misty Peak, they could not stop them unless they truly decided to anger Lady Piaomiao, the old monster who had lived for a thousand years. They would definitely not dare come to the Misty Peak since they had also angered the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

After Chu Feng and the others walked away from the Teleportation Array and saw the familiar sceneries, he could finally somewhat relax his tense heart because he knew they had successfully arrived within the territory of Lady Piaomiao. Within that zone, there was no one who would harm them.

The only thing he was worried about was whether the Misty Peak would accept Zi Ling and the others.

“Junior Chu Feng!” Just at that moment, a familiar voice suddenly rang out. At the same time, a familiar person flew over from nearby—it was Chun Wu.

“Junior Chu Feng, you’ve finally come!” After seeing Chu Feng, Chun Wu was very happy. Then, she looked at Zi Xuanyuan and the others, and in the end, her eyes landed on Zi Ling’s body. She said in amazement, “Waa, this is Murong Xun’s fiancée? She’s even more beautiful than my Senior Qiuzhu!”

“Senior Chun Wu, this is Zi Ling. However, she is not Murong Xun’s fiancée, but mine,” Chu Feng corrected with a smile.

“Senior Chun Wu, how are you? When we were coming here, Chu Feng mentioned you and said you helped him greatly.” As for Zi Ling, she wasn’t angry because of Chun Wu’s mistake and instead, very respectfully bowed to her. She was very grateful to those who helped Chu Feng.

“Ehh, doesn’t that mean you’re my sister-in-law? Heh, hello sister-in-law! [1]” Chun Wu knew she made a mistake so her smile was very sincere.

“Senior Chun Wu, it seemed that you were waiting here for us?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

“Yeah! Master knew you’ve stirred up a huge mess, and it’s even said you took away quite a few people from the Zi family. You yourself are fine, but it’s likely inconvenient for you to have people by your side. So, she told me to wait here, and if you came, to bring you up. The Misty Peak has already opened its gates, welcoming your arrival.

“I just didn’t think I would have to wait this long. I even thought you wouldn’t come! But, luckily, you still did. This at least means nothing happened to you. Hehe...” Chun Wu’s smile was very comfortable. It could be seen that she truly worried for Chu Feng’s safety.

“So Lady Piaomiao already expected me to return.” Chu Feng was ecstatic when he heard those words. Originally, he even worried she wouldn’t accept them, but now, he could finally be at ease completely. As he felt grateful, he said to Chun Wu, “Senior Chun Wu, I’m truly sorry you had to wait here so long for us.”

“Junior Chu Feng, please don’t say that. Back then, in the Depraved Ravine, if it wasn’t to save me, you wouldn’t have killed Zhan Feng, and you wouldn’t have had this grudge with the Immortal Execution Archipelago,” Chun Wu said shamefully.

“Before I even met the Immortal Execution Archipelago, there was already enmity between us. The present situation was already fated to occur, and it was unrelated to you in any way.” Chu Feng shook his head.

When she heard those words, Chun Wu couldn’t help looking at Zi Ling. Then, as if she understood something, she didn’t say anything more. Lightly smiling, she said, “Follow me. Senior Qiushui is also here. They will definitely be very happy when they see you.”

Soon after, Chu Feng and the Zi family followed Chun Wu to the Misty Peak. Seemingly already prepared, after coming up the peak, Chun Wu brought Chu Feng and the others to a palace, and after entering, Chun Wu had Chu Feng and Zi Ling wait there, while Zi Xuanyuan, Zi Ling’s parents, and the others were brought to elsewhere. From what Chun Wu said, she was arranging them into their residences.

“Chu Feng, you truly are a troublemaker!” Shortly after Chun Wu left, Qiushui Fuyan’s voice rang out within the palace. Casting his gaze over, not only was she there, even the unfathomable Lady Piaomiao was slowly walking towards them.

Although they were two super-experts, when Chu Feng saw them again, he not only lacked any nervousness, there was even a hint of an intimate feeling.

After making such a huge mess, those who were willing to accept him—if they were not ones harboring malicious intents—were people who would show him great kindness. Obviously, these two were the latter.

Chapter 825 - The Price of Kindness

MGA: Chapter 825 - The Price of Kindness

“Chu Feng pays his respects to Senior Qiushui, Senior Piaomiao.” Although he was not afraid of them, the necessary etiquette was still necessary.

“Seniors, Junior Zi Ling pays her respects.” The amiable Zi Ling also sweetly smiled, and bowed to them along with Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, you’ve truly got good fortune to have such a beautiful fiancée! From what I see, her title of being one of the three great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region should be changed.

“How is this Zi Ling even one of the three great beauties? She is totally the greatest beauty in the Eastern Sea Region! In terms of appearances, Ya Fei and Qiu Zhu are both inferior.”

Qiushui Fuyan walked up to Zi Ling and looked at her with a smile. Her eyes were full of admiration, and even though there was still a veil covering her face, Chu Feng could still tell that her mood seemed to be quite good.

“Since you possess a Divine Body, you should have outstanding aptitude. Judging by your age, you shouldn’t be that much younger than Chu Feng. Why is your cultivation so ordinary though? You’re only in the first level of the Heaven realm.” However, in comparison to Qiushui Fuyan, what Lady Piaomiao was more concerned with was Zi Ling’s cultivation.

“I…” Zi Ling found the words difficult to form. She didn’t know where to start, so she cast her begging gaze at Chu Feng.

“Senior Piaomiao, Zi Ling should indeed have an exceptional aptitude. If everything was normal, it would be completely reasonable for her to surpass Murong Xun right now.

“However, the reason why her cultivation became this ordinary is because when she was born, she was forced to eat the Heaven Gripping Pellet.” Chu Feng spoke in place for Zi Ling.

“The Heaven Gripping Pellet?!” Lady Piaomiao’s expression couldn’t help changing slightly when she heard that.

“Heaven Gripping Pellet? What’s that?” Qiushui Fuyan clearly didn’t know what that was as she asked Lady Piaomiao.

“The Heaven Gripping Pellet was originally a medicine from the Ancient Era. The rumours say it’s a poison that can seal the power of a Divine Body or a possessor of a special bloodline. Because it strangles the talent—something granted by the heavens—of a genius, it’s called the Heaven Gripping Pellet.” Lady Piaomiao’s knowledge was quite extraordinary; she indeed knew the origin of the Heaven Gripping Pellet.

“There’s actually a poison like that? This Immortal Execution Archipelago truly is despicable. They must have feared Zi Ling’s potential rise in power, which would threaten their position, so that’s why they did this,” Qiushui Fuyan said very furiously.

“It’s not that simple. From what I know, the Heaven Gripping Pellet not only has the effect of sealing talent, it can even transfer that talent to others,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Transferring it to other? How so?!” Qiushui Fuyan was confused.

“Let’s take Zi Ling as an example. When she was born, she was fed the Heaven Gripping Pellet. From that instant, the divine power that should have allowed her to become superior to all was sealed. And, along her growth, the seal on the divine power became more and more thorough. If this continues, she will only become more and more ordinary.

“And, when she reaches twenty years of age, the sealed divine power in her body will reach its peak. At that time, if she were to do the thing between a man and a woman, the sealed power would be transferred onto that man’s body, and Zi Ling would become a cripple who cannot cultivate. As for the other person, because he was able to obtain Zi Ling’s power, he would transform into a dragon,” Lady Piaomiao explained.

“Dammit! This Immortal Execution Archipelago truly deserves to die. They not only took away talent that should have belonged to Zi Ling, they even want to take it for themselves! No wonder they didn’t kill Zi Ling directly, and instead arranged a marriage for Zi Ling and Murong Xun. They are truly despicable.”

After knowing the truth, Qiushui Fuyan was even more furious. But then, after some thinking, there was something she felt confused about. She asked, “Then, before Zi Ling is twenty, if the person does the thing between a man and a woman with her, what would happen?”

“Twenty years is the limit of the Heaven Gripping Pellet. It is when the sealed power reaches the apex. The ripest time to take away the sealed power is only then. Before twenty years, if that thing were done, then the person wouldn’t just be unable to obtain power, he would instead die by the backlash.

“So, that’s why Murong Xun doesn’t dare to touch Zi Ling before the age of twenty, and set the arranged battle on the day Zi Ling becomes twenty,” Lady Piaomiao continued explaining.

“Lady Piaomiao, then what about after twenty?” Chu Feng asked with concern.

“After twenty, due to the oppression of the Heaven Gripping Pellet, the person with the sealed power will become weaker and weaker. Cultivating also becomes more and more difficult, where, in the end, the person becomes completely ordinary until they die,” Lady Piaomiao replied.

“The Immortal Execution Archipelago should truly die!” The fury in Chu Feng’s heart was akin to an erupted volcano. It sprayed out and burst

everywhere, surging throughout all parts of his body. If he could, Chu Feng would slaughter a path right up to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and make them pay the price for their evil actions.

But then, after a thought, Chu Feng asked again, “Senior Piaomiao, is there a way to remove the effects of this Heaven Gripping Pellet?”

“This Heaven Gripping Pellet comes from the Ancient Era. If you hadn’t said that Zi Ling was forced to take this Heaven Gripping Pellet, and that her situation is indeed extremely similar to the symptoms of the pellet, I truly wouldn’t dare to believe this pellet, lost for so long, had reappeared in this world.

“However, for everything in this world, there is always an opposite. It’s not like there isn’t a method of removing the effects of this Heaven Gripping Pellet,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Truly? Senior Piaomiao, can you help Zi Ling remove them then?” Chu Feng was elated when he heard those words.

“I don’t dare to guarantee it will succeed, but I can give it a try. However, this is not such a simple task. I need to find information and carefully study the compositions of this Heaven Gripping Pellet, then attempt to remove its effects. This requires a very long period of time because I don’t even know how a Heaven Gripping Pellet is made right now.

“But, don’t worry. I will do my best, so just hand Zi Ling over to me and don’t worry. I can guarantee her safety here,” said Lady Piaomiao.

“Then sorry for the trouble, Senior Piaomiao.” There was no need to mention what Chu Feng felt when he heard Lady Piaomiao’s agreement. It was simply like seeing a strand of light within endless darkness. Lady Piaomiao was truly a person who helped him greatly.

Afterwards, she specially arranged a place for Zi Ling to rest. Originally, Chu Feng wanted to accompany Zi Ling for a bit more, but due to the tone the Earth King had when sending him the message, there seemed to be

something urgent. So, Chu Feng didn't stay there for long and on that day, he left the Misty Peak and went forth to the Four Seas Academy.

However, before he even arrived at the Four Seas Academy, Chu Feng panicked because on the road, he discovered with astonishment that drawings of his face had already been posted at every major location. There was indeed someone who, by the incitement of rewards, sold Chu Feng's appearance to the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“Dammit! If I knew this would happen, I should have killed everyone inside and outside the Zi family.”

When he saw drawings of himself, Chu Feng was truly furious because within the Four Seas Academy, there was really quite a few people who had seen what he looked like. At this moment, his drawing had already been pasted here. It was likely that within the Four Seas Academy, everyone already knew Chu Feng's very actions, and So Rou, Su Mei, and the others were likely in danger.

And this... this was the price of kindness!

Chapter 826 - Someone Is Waiting for You

MGA: Chapter 826 - Someone Is Waiting for You

Chu Feng knew things were going horribly. Thus, to an even greater degree, he could not ignore Su Rou and the others. In the end, he changed his appearance and went inside the territory of the Four Seas Academy.

However, Chu Feng felt odd after entering, because he actually couldn't even see a single wanted poster of himself. Furthermore, as he continued walking, he did not see anyone within the Four Seas Academy.

When he arrived at the entrance, only then did Chu Feng discover that it was actually sealed. No one could visit, and none of the disciples from the Four Seas Academy were permitted to step outside.

“What’s going on? Did the Immortal Execution Archipelago already ally with the Four Seas Academy?” When he saw such a situation, Chu Feng became increasingly worried. The Immortal Execution Archipelago had sent an alliance invitation to nearly all of the powerful forces in the entire Eastern Sea Region. Due to the Four Seas Academy’s strength and position, they were naturally included as well.

“My friend, Chu Feng, I’ve been waiting quite a while here!” Just as Chu Feng felt worry, a familiar voice suddenly rang through his ear—it was Taikou.

Chu Feng couldn't help but feel joy in his heart. He quickly looked around, and as he expected, in the south-east direction, he found traces of Taikou. The single-legged old man was currently heading over as he rode the wind.

“Senor Taikou, you can still recognize me even though I’ve turned like this?” Chu Feng felt quite shocked because he had transformed his face.

Yet, Taikou still called out his name; he had clearly seen through his disguise, the Transformational Mask.

“Hoh, with your little toy, perhaps you can trick others, but it cannot deceive my eyes,” Taikou said with a smile. On his aged face, a bit of pride appeared.

Chu Feng couldn't help being surprised when he heard those words. Even though he already knew Taikou's strength was unfathomable, after seeing him today, he appeared even more powerful. Chu Feng was nearly certain the old man possessed a minimal cultivation of a Martial King.

He didn't pressure Chu Feng in any way, and even gave off a very benevolent feeling. However, after his experience with many powerful experts, when Chu Feng examined Taikou once again today, he faintly felt that Taikou's strength was above people like Qiushui Fuyan and the Earth King, these rank one Martial Kings.

“Senior Taikou, you know about my circumstances?” Chu Feng asked.

“Do you mean you being Wuqing, or what you did in the Depraved Ravine and the Zi family?” Taikou said with a smile. There were even some hints of teasing within his words.

Chu Feng scratched his head and embarrassedly smiled. Without asking, he already knew Taikou knew everything. So, Chu Feng just asked directly, “Senior Taikou, are my friends well?”

“Don't worry, they should be fine because they've already left the Eastern Sea Region before news of you spread,” Taikou said.

“They left the Eastern Sea Region? Where did they go?” Chu Feng asked.

“When they left, they even came and looked for me. I heard they said that the desolate and vast lands at the eastern side are divided into several continents, and that many of those continents are ruled by fallen dynasties.

“These dynasties don’t have sufficient strength to establish themselves in the Eastern Sea Region, so they call themselves kings at such bleak places. Since they have plenty of time, they even hold an Assembly of a Thousand Clans every year, and this year’s assembly has been set up at your homeland, the continent of the Nine Provinces. All of them have returned to support Jiang Wushang,” Taikou said.

“How long have they left for?” Chu Feng asked.

“They set off just a few days after you left,” Taikou replied.

“It means they should have arrived at the continent of the Nine Provinces by now. They should be fine.” Chu Feng’s tense heart was relaxed when he heard that.

“Don’t worry. Even if they didn’t leave the Eastern Sea Region, for a while, there’d still be no one who could harm them with me here,” Taikou said very confidently.

The gratefulness Chu Feng felt in his heart unavoidably increased by a bit more when he heard Taikou’s words. He and the Immortal Execution Archipelago were in eternal conflict—this was something the entire world knew.

Yet, despite these circumstances, Taikou still said those words. That meant he was clearly announcing which side he stood on. The old man who met Chu Feng by no more than mere coincidence prepared to support him to the end.

“Senior, why is the Four Seas Academy sealed off?” Chu Feng asked curiously as he felt gratitude.

“It’s a decision we made after I discussed it with the academy head,” Taikou said with a smile.

“What exactly is the reason? Could you possibly tell me?” Chu Feng quickly asked again.

“Of course I can, because the sealing off of the Four Seas Academy is related to you.” Taikou laughed, then said, “Before drawings of you even spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region, I had anticipated this day.

“I was afraid your relationship with the Four Seas Academy would spread too fast, which would harm your friends, so after a discussion with the academy head, we sealed off the Four Seas Academy. Then, we looked through all the disciples that had seen you and removed these potential troubles.”

“Senior Taikou you... you actually did all this entirely for the sake of my safety... I truly cannot repay this favour.” No matter what, Chu Feng never would have thought the Four Seas Academy was sealed off because of him.

“Ah, no need to thank me. I can seal information coming from the Four Seas Academy, but I cannot seal information outside the Four Seas Academy. As they say, ‘There are no air-tight walls.’ There are some things that cannot be hidden forever.

“However, this at least gives you some time. Return to the continent of the Nine Province and go find Jiang Wushang and the others. Tell them not to return to the Four Seas Academy, and not to return to the Eastern Sea Region,” Taikou said.

“Senior Taikou, if we just leave like this, will it bring trouble to your Four Seas Academy?” Chu Feng said worriedly.

“It won’t. If there’s truly someone who says you came to the Four Seas Academy, we can just deny it. They don’t have proof anyway, and that Immortal Execution Archipelago is free to come search. After all, none of you are even here. What can they do the Four Seas Academy if they can’t even find anyone?

“Besides, we aren’t any pushovers. Since they’ve already made enemies with the Crippling Night Demon Sect, they definitely don’t want to make any more. From what I see, they still don’t have the guts to stir up trouble in the Four Seas Academy.

“It’s like how they know Lady Piaomiao will protect you, but they still won’t dare to do anything at the Misty Peak. Although the Four Seas Academy is not as powerful as the Misty Peak, we do possess some strength.” Taikou appeared very calm. One could tell he truly did not fear the Immortal Execution Archipelago looking for trouble. The reason he did all this was only because he feared Chu Feng would meet trouble.

“Senior, I eternally owe you this great favour, but I will definitely not leave it be. In the future, I will definitely repay the grace you have shown me.”

At that instant, Chu Feng couldn’t help bowing to Taikou again. The gratitude he felt towards him truly came from the bottom of his heart because Taikou again and again helped him without asking for anything in return. That favour was truly too heavy.

“Okay, okay. The reason I helped you is because I have a good impression of you. I have no other aims, so don’t make it seem like I’m helping you because I want something from you.” Taikou smiled as he propped Chu Feng up. Then, he cast his gaze into the distant horizon and said, “Go, there is someone waiting for you.”

Chu Feng turned his head around to look, but at that instant, he couldn’t help being taken aback.

Behind him, other than vast white clouds, there was clearly no one there.

Chapter 827 - Using Violence to Suppress Violence

MGA: Chapter 827 - Using Violence to Suppress Violence

At that moment, Chu Feng was standing still, blank-faced.

Not to mention looking with his naked eyes, Chu Feng couldn't even detect anything with his Spirit power.

However, Chu Feng knew Taikou wouldn't have said those words for no reason. So, he could only use the Heaven's Eyes and when he did, he was immediately shocked. He discovered a hidden person. Although he had intentionally concealed himself—thus his outline and shape were very blurry—with the powerful observational strength of the Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng was still able to identify him as the Earth King.

“He's waited here for a long time. He must have something to discuss with you, so I won't disturb you anymore.

“However, Chu Feng, if you need anything in the future, you can find me at any time. But, remember, do not come to the Four Seas Academy again after today.”

As Taikou spoke, he gave a palm-sized crystal to Chu Feng. It was a Sphere of Sealing, and within it there was strange energy that supported a creature—a Delivery Bird. Clearly, that Delivery Bird could find Taikou and would help Chu Feng send messages to him.

“Thank you, Senior Taikou.” After receiving the Delivery Bird, Chu Feng once again expressed his gratitude towards Taikou.

Taikou didn't say anything more. With a smile worn on his face, as he waved his hand in farewell, he drifted away.

“This person called Taikou truly is not simple. Chu Feng, do you know where he comes from?” After Taikou left, the Earth King also appeared and came to Chu Feng’s side.

“I only know that this Senior Taikou is a Divine Instructor in the Four Seas Academy. As for anything else, I’m not too certain either,” Chu Feng replied truthfully.

“Divine Instructor? ...I truly didn’t expect such a person to be hidden inside the Four Seas Academy.” The Earth King remained looking in the direction of Taikou’s departure, his eyes full of graveness and surprise.

“Senior Earth King, is this Senior Taikou very powerful?” Chu Feng asked in an attempt to salvage more information. As a Martial King, and a Gold-cloak World Spiritist, the Earth King could likely understand Taikou’s power much better than him.

“This person’s strength is far above mine,” the Earth King responded.

“What?” After hearing those words, Chu Feng couldn’t help but gasp deeply. Even though he already guessed that Taikou’s strength was above the Earth King’s, after he personally confirmed it, Chu Feng still felt disbelief, especially on the “far” word he spoke of—its meaning was extraordinary.

At that instant, Chu Feng couldn’t help looking back at Taikou, but only then did he discover that he had already disappeared. A question unavoidably popped into his mind at the same time it did to the Earth King’s: Who exactly is this Taikou?!

“Chu Feng, you know about the current circumstances of the Eastern Sea Region, right?” the Earth King suddenly asked.

“I do understand it a bit, but I’m not sure if it’s accurate or not.” Chu Feng nodded, then told the Earth King what he knew about the present situation.

“Mm, it’s not too far off. The present situation is as you said: the Immortal Execution Archipelago has formally declared war against the Crippling

Night Demon Sect, and they are rallying allies from various place.

“However, the Crippling Night Demon Sect will still be able to handle it. Actually, the reason I came to look for you is because there’s something related to you. After a discussion between me, the Gold King, and the Wood King, we decided it’s better for you to personally take care of this,” the Earth King said.

“Senior Earth King, what is it?” Chu Feng hurriedly asked. When he heard it was related to him, he subconsciously felt the news was nothing good.

“Right now, the Immortal Execution Archipelago feels overwhelming hatred for my Crippling Night Demon Sect, but their hatred for you alone is in no way inferior to the hatred they feel towards entire Crippling Night Demon Sect, because the things you did were indeed enough to put them in a very difficult spot.

“And, right now, they are unable to find you. The fury in their hearts cannot be released, so they redirect it towards those related to you.

“At present, they already know you come from a place called the continent of the Nine Provinces. So, they know that there are definitely people close to you in the Nine Provinces. They’ve decided to point their blades towards it and vent their hatred by destroying the Nine Provinces.

“However, the Immortal Execution Archipelago still puts up a righteous appearance to the public, so due to their name, they cannot do too heartless of an action. As such, they’ve set up a plan,” the Earth King said.

“What are they planning to do?” Chu Feng quickly asked.

“Heh.” The Earth King first smiled proudly, then said, “Members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect have been scattered throughout the Eastern Sea Region. Although this does cause the Crippling Night Demon Sect to be split, ‘there are advantages for all disadvantages’. The members in various areas have become a powerful net of information for us.

“According to the report from one of our members, we have confirmation that the Immortal Execution Archipelago has hiddenly instructed a dynasty in the Eastern Sea Region. They want them to eradicate the continent of the Nine Provinces, using the excuse of seizing power.

“As for that dynasty, they are merely a small force. Naturally, they don’t dare to go against the intentions of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. So, several days ago, they have already started their journey. They are leading their entire clan’s experts towards the continent of the Nine Provinces with the aim of commencing a massacre.”

“Dammit!”

Chu Feng’s expression changed greatly when he heard that. His fists subconsciously tightened, and on his face, what appeared coincident with his anger was worry. At this moment, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, there were indeed many people of importance to Chu Feng. Su Rou, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi were at the Nine Provinces right now as well.

The Immortal Execution Archipelago had truly made a fierce move, and Chu Feng also knew who leaked the information to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, telling them he came from the Nine Provinces—the filthy Zi family.

“Although the Immortal Execution Archipelago has made a fierce move, there’s no need to panic. The Crippling Night Demon Sect has already prepared a response, and the reason I wanted to meet you so soon is to discuss this with you,” the Earth King said with a smile.

“Senior Earth King, then what should I do?” Chu Feng asked.

“Follow me.” He leapt forward and up, flying away from the Four Seas Academy. Chu Feng followed.

After they left the territory of the Four Seas Academy, they arrived above a vast sea. The waves of that sea were so high they could touch the sky.

The violent gales wreaked havoc, and other than the surging sounds of waves, it was the roars of sea beasts.

But to the vast Eastern Sea Region, a sea like this was no more than usual. One could even say it was one of the most typical seas.

At first, Chu Feng felt confused as to why the Earth King brought him to this place. Just as he was about to ask, he heard a huge explosion. From the sea below, an enormous wave sprayed up.

As the surging wave rose into the sky and rolled around, an enormous thing also appeared within Chu Feng's line of sight.

It was a warship—a black-coloured warship. It flew out from the sea and gradually rose into the air.

That warship was extremely large. On the surface, there were not only many Spirit Formations that could both attack and defend, there were even many large palaces and towers. It was simply as if it were a small castle made by steel.

Most importantly, Chu Feng could see, at the very front steel deck of the warship, over a thousand people standing orderly. The weakest was in the seventh level of the Heaven realm, while the strongest was in the ninth level of the Heaven realm. All of them were at the peak of the Heaven realm.

bang, bang, bang...

Quickly after, nine more huge waves soared into the sky, and after the waves returned below, nine more enormous black-coloured warships had shot out from the sea. When they rose into the air, they slowly drifted up to Chu Feng, forming a line.

Not only did the nine other warships have the exact same layout as the first ship, even the number of people and their strength were extremely similar to the first warship's.

Ten warships, and over ten thousand experts at the peak of the Heaven realm, currently stood before Chu Feng.

whoosh whoosh whoosh Just at that moment, another thirty-eight people flew over from nearby, and orderly stood in front of Chu Feng and the Earth King. They were thirty-eight Martial Lords, and even though their cultivations were only at the early stages of the Martial Lord realm, they were Martial Lords nonetheless.

“We pay our respects to Lord Earth King! We pay our respects to Lord Chu Feng!” After coming up to them, the thirty-eight Martial Lords all half-knelt in the air simultaneously, and greeted the Earth King and Chu Feng.

“We pay our respects to Lord Earth King! We pay our respects to Lord Chu Feng!” At the same time, all of the Heaven realm experts on the ten warships simultaneously knelt onto the ground as well, greeting the Earth King and Chu Feng.

“Senior Earth King, this is...” Chu Feng didn’t really even know what to do when he saw that.

As for the Earth King, he lightly smiled and said, “This is the response I’ve prepared for you: using violence to suppress violence!”

Chapter 828 - Current Achievements

MGA: Chapter 828 - Current Achievements

“Using violence to suppress violence?” Chu Feng already understood what the Earth King meant as he saw the fleet before his eyes.

These ten warships were very impressive. The value of each one could even be compared to an Incomplete Royal Armament. This was a real treasure built up by large investments.

No matter if it was the over ten thousand Heaven realm experts on the warship, or the thirty-eight kneeling Martial Lords in front of him, they were all of the younger generation. There were no elders there, not even a single middle-aged man.

It was clear that those ten warships and these people were specially prepared—prepared for Chu Feng. The Earth King wanted Chu Feng to lead the young experts of the Crippling Night Demon Sect straight into the continent of the Nine Provinces, so he could kill and display his might to all of the people who held unkind intentions towards the people close to him and the people in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

“Chu Feng, I know quite a bit about the dynasty that is heading towards the continent of the Nine Provinces.

“They are called the Gao Dynasty. Their strongest is the current head—a rank six Martial Lord.

“This time, including the head himself, there are eleven Martial Lords who are heading towards the continent of the Nine Provinces, and over five hundred cultivators at the peak of the Heaven realm, as well as six thousand two hundred fifty-one Heaven realm cultivators.

“To destroy the continent of the Nine Provinces, this formation of people is more than enough. Actually, in all of the vast eastern continents, there are none who can defend against them. However, the formation of people I’ve prepared for you is definitely also more than enough to eradicate the Gao Dynasty.

“Lead these young ones to the continent of the Nine Provinces. Afterwards, you don’t need to look over them. Just dismiss them and tell them to return to the Eastern Sea Region on their own,” the Earth King said.

“Senior Earth King, thank you.” Chu Feng clasped his hands at the Earth King because the information he provided was really too important, and all of these experts were very important as well.

“Chu Feng, words of thanks are too much. You are already a part of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and those who dare to attack our members will have the choice to walk only one path—the path to death.

“Go. The Gao Dynasty has already moved. If you leave right now, with the speed of these ten warships, you should have no problem catching up. However, if you delay this any further, you may not make it in time,” the Earth King said.

“Mm.” Chu Feng didn’t hesitate anymore. With an army of over ten thousand people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, Chu Feng led them back to the continent of the Nine Provinces, his homeland. He swore to kill all those who dared to invade his soil.

Of course, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, no one knew about Chu Feng nor of him leading an army back. In fact, they didn’t even know that an unprecedented danger had been gradually approaching.

So, at the Jiang Dynasty, it was full of decoration and extremely lively. On every single person’s face, there was a smile that could not be wiped away.

It was for no other reason but because the prince whose aptitude was the greatest, Jiang Wushang, had returned.

Roughly a year had passed since Jiang Wushang left the continent of the Nine Provinces, and when he did, Jiang Wushang was already strong—he was at the third level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, Jiang Wushang was the person who possessed the strongest bloodline power in the Jiang Dynasty.

However, Jiang Wushang was now at the eighth level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, what flowed within his body was no longer a Royal Bloodline, but a legendary Imperial Bloodline! How could the Jiang Dynasty

not

be excited?

The Imperial Bloodline—that was a dream they didn't even dare to think of. In many people's hearts, it was even a legend that came from ancient times.

Yet now, at present, there was a possessor of an Imperial Bloodline within the dynasty. It was something they could not even dream of; it would be difficult if they didn't

want

to be happy.

And especially since this year's Assembly of a Thousand Clans was held at their Jiang Dynasty, when the dynasties from many areas came, Jiang Wushang could boast the glory of their Jiang Dynasty. And from then on, in all of the eastern continents, there would no longer be a single dynasty that would dare to look down on the Jiang Dynasty.

One could even say on a certain day in the future, the Jiang Dynasty could slaughter a path back into the Eastern Sea Region under Jiang Wushang's lead, and hold a land in the place with many powerful clans.

That was why the entire Jiang Dynasty was enveloped by a joyous atmosphere. They even sent invitations to powers such as the Azure

Dragon School and the World Spirit Guild and welcomed them to the Jiang Dynasty to share together such an elating news.

At that moment, within the Jiang Dynasty, there were banquet tables set up. Some of the most famous people in the entire continent of the Nine Provinces were all there as they entered the banquet.

“I truly would never have thought after a short year or so, the geniuses sent out would have such enormous improvements. All of them have already reached the peak levels of the Heaven realm!

“If another year passes, wouldn’t they all become Martial Lords?” Within the banquet, the most famous and powerful person in the continent of the Nine Provinces, the Azure Dragon Founder, spoke with a smile.

As the strongest person in the continent of the Nine Provinces, he too felt happy for the accomplishments Jiang Wushang and the others achieved. And especially since three of the four geniuses were from his Azure Dragon School, that made him, the founder, feel proud.

“Senior, you praise us too much. The reason we were able to attain our current cultivation levels is all because of Big Brother Chu Feng’s help. To be honest, even my Imperial Bloodline was obtained only because of him.” As Jiang Wushang mentioned Chu Feng, his face was full of gratitude.

“Chu Feng? It’s actually because of that Chu Feng?” When they heard those words, everyone on scene was stunned, especially the people from the Jiang Dynasty. All of their expressions changed greatly, because they never would have thought Jiang Wushang’s current power of the Imperial Bloodline was acquired because of Chu Feng.

If that were true, then Chu Feng had truly helped the Jiang Dynasty greatly. That favour, not to mention them, even their future generations would not dare to forget it!

However, since that matter was an enormous one, it was simply inconceivable.

It was especially so for them, who possessed Inherited Bloodlines. They could not understand how Chu Feng helped Jiang Wushang obtain that Imperial Bloodline. After all, bloodlines were very complicated things. Outsiders shouldn't be able to help them at all, so that was why many of the dynasty's people doubted whether Jiang Wushang's words were true.

“Brother Wushang's words are very correct. The reason we have our present achievements is indeed because of Junior Chu Feng,” Zhang Tianyi said, as if afraid they would not believe it.

“We sisters can attest to this as well.” Su Rou and Su Mei also spoke.

And after all of their words, the people on scene looked at each other, their faces full of complicated emotions. If it was said they more or less doubted the validity of Jiang Wushang's statement since he spoke alone, then they had no choice but to believe it after all four of those geniuses spoke.

They initially thought Jiang Wushang's rate of improvement was already astounding and could be titled as an unprecedented genius, but now, it didn't look like it.

Chu Feng, who had walked out of the Azure Province then stunned the entire continent, seemed to have even more outstanding achievements, ones far above Jiang Wushang and the others.

Chapter 829 - Savior

MGA: Chapter 829 - Savior

“Wushang, what level of cultivation has that Chu Feng reached now?”
Within shock, the old ancestor of the Jiang clan spoke. At the same time, almost everyone’s gazes were cast towards Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, Su Rou, and Su Mei.

All of them wanted to know the strength of the young genius whose name astonished the Nine Provinces, whether he was truly stronger than the three of them.

“This...” Jiang Wushang did not reply, and instead, looked at Zhang Tianyi by his side, as well as Su Rou and Su Mei. Then, he said with a smile, “I also don’t know what Big Brother Chu Feng’s cultivation is right now. It’s better that you personally ask him when he returns in the future.”

Jiang Wushang did not lie, because to be precise, he truly did not know what Chu Feng’s

current

cultivation was. The techniques he possessed were truly too complex. Moreover, his cultivation speed was really too fast, so he wasn’t certain if Chu Feng’s cultivation at present had remained on the same level as back then.

“Wushang, you aren’t concealing his cultivation because that Chu Feng is inferior to all of you—yet you’re afraid of speaking the truth and making him lose face—right?”

After Jiang Wushang spoke, one of the dynasty elders in the banquet spoke such a sentence. Moreover, his tone was even full of certainty, as if his guess were the truth.

“Nonsense! My brother is a genius! How could he be inferior to these three children?!” When he heard those words, the Monstrous Monkey King was enraged. He fiercely slammed the table and stood up, pointing at the dynasty elder, and loudly cursed at him. He did not feel that Chu Feng’s cultivation would be weaker than Jiang Wushang’s and the others’.

In reality, it was not only the Monstrous Monkey King who was furious. The Azure Dragon Founder’s complexion was quite unsightly, and even Su Rou, Su Mei, and Zhang Tianyi tightly furrowed their brows as strong displeasure emerged onto their faces.

If it weren’t a banquet set up by Jiang Wushang’s family, judging by their natures, it was likely they would have went into a rage because they did not allow anyone to speak ill of Chu Feng.

Not to mention the three of them, even Jiang Wushang, as a member of the Jiang clan, had a rather distorted face. There was even anger that would explode at any moment glittering in his eyes.

Chu Feng’s position in his heart was truly too high. He truly looked at him like a savior.

So, even if the person who spoke was a relative in the same clan, when there was someone who was disrespectful towards Chu Feng, the spirited young man Jiang Wushang was uncontrollably furious.

Only he himself knew where his cultivation came from and what sort of assistance Chu Feng gave him. It was a favour simply akin to saving his life. A favour not only to him, but also his successors.

“I do not permit insolent behaviors! Chu Feng is the number one genius in the continent of the Nine Provinces. His cultivation is not one you can doubt!

“Apologize to Lord Azure Dragon and Lord Monstrous Monkey King immediately!” Feeling the poorly progressing situation, the emperor of the Jiang Dynasty hurriedly shouted at that elder.

“Lords, I was mistaken. I shouldn’t have doubted Chu Feng’s cultivation. I ask for your forgiveness.”

Even though the dynasty elder was very unwilling to, since the emperor had spoken, he naturally did not dare to go against his. He rose and bowed to the Azure Dragon Founder and the Monstrous Monkey King, apologizing and admitting his wrongs.

“Hmph. Mistaken? From what I see, you’re more like an idiotic pig! You even dare to suspect my brother’s strength? Have you forgotten who saved your Jiang Dynasty back then? If it weren’t for my brother, your Jiang Dynasty would have already been flattened! God damn, do you feel no gratitude?” However, the Monstrous Monkey King wasn’t willing to accept the apology from the elder and even cursed at him with greater annoyance.

And when they heard that, even though some of the people from the Jiang Dynasty felt displeased, most of them couldn’t help lowering their heads as shame emerged onto their faces. As the Monstrous Monkey King said, if it weren’t for Chu Feng, their Jiang Dynasty would have indeed been destroyed.

No matter if Chu Feng helped Jiang Wushang obtain the Imperial Bloodline or not, something undeniable was the fact that Chu Feng was a person who had helped the Jiang Dynasty greatly—he was a person who had

saved

the Jiang Dynasty.

“Begone! From now on, you are not allowed to appear in all subsequent banquets! Those who do not respect a savior of the Jiang Dynasty are not worthy to show up in these banquets! Begone, now!” shouted the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty suddenly. His face was full of anger; he was appeasing everyone.

Even though the continent of the Nine Provinces might still be controlled by the Jiang Dynasty, in reality, the strongest force at that moment was still the Azure Dragon School. The

Azure Dragon Founder

was the strongest person in the Nine Provinces right now.

Actually, the reason why the Assembly of a Thousand Clans was arranged at the continent of the Nine Provinces wasn't because the Jiang Dynasty had the qualifications to set up the banquet. The only reason all the other dynasties gave the Jiang Dynasty that chance was because of the Azure Dragon Founder.

So, the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty knew very well who was the true boss of the continent of the Nine Provinces. It was the Azure Dragon Founder, who even he himself didn't dare to offend.

After the outrage of the old ancestor, even though the elder who spoke rudely didn't want to accept it, he didn't dare to say anything. Gloomily, he left the banquet.

“Haha, you've spoken too seriously! After all, Chu Feng hasn't returned yet. It's impossible to avoid doubt regarding his cultivation. There's nothing unrespectable about that, it's just human nature!”

Only after that person left did the Azure Dragon Founder start laughing. Although he said it wasn't all that serious, everyone knew that great character's thoughts didn't match his words. Otherwise, he wouldn't have spoken

after

the old ancestor drove the elder away.

“Seniors of the Jiang Dynasty, seniors of the continent of the Nine Provinces, I have a few words I want to say.” Just at that moment, Jiang Wushang suddenly stood up. He first politely clasped his hands at the

people in the banquet, then said very gravely, “I am indeed unable to confirm the level of Big Brother Chu Feng’s present cultivation. However, what I can confirm is that his strength is superior to mine, by many times, since a long time ago.

“So, I ask all of you to not doubt his strength, because that is not only disrespect to him, it is disrespect to a person who has helped me greatly. And for those who are rude to him, no matter if they are my relatives, or seniors, I, Jiang Wushang, will not show any restraint in my actions. Without Big Brother Chu Feng, it would be impossible for me to acquire my present attainments.”

“Huaa—” After Jiang Wushang spoke, a commotion instantly arose.

Their faces were filled with shock, especially those of the people from the Jiang Dynasty. They knew Jiang Wushang’s character very well. Strictly speaking, Jiang Wushang was a proud, uncontrollable person. Not to mention outsiders, he didn’t even put many people within the dynasty in his eyes.

However, right now, Jiang Wushang had actually said such words in public. It clearly represented his standpoint: no matter who it was, as long as they dared to speak of Chu Feng with disrespect, he would not treat them kindly, even if they were from his own family.

Such a change in character was truly too big, but it wasn’t hard to guess what caused such a change. There was only one thing—as Jiang Wushang said, Chu Feng had truly given him assistance the size of heaven. He had showed him a favour he would never be able to return.

Chapter 830 - Assembly of a Thousand Clans

MGA: Chapter 830 - Assembly of a Thousand Clans

“Haha, Wushang, you’ve really made me curious by saying Chu Feng is several times more powerful than you. What cultivation does he have now... How about this. Roughly say the possible realm Chu Feng is in. Has he reached the peak of the Heaven realm?” After hearing Jiang Wushang’s words, the Azure Dragon Founder’s mood became much better, and actually asked for Chu Feng’s cultivation as the crowd wanted to themselves.

At that instant, everyone’s gazes were once again cast onto Jiang Wushang because they too were very intrigued at what level of strength Chu Feng had now possessed.

When he heard the Azure Dragon Founder’s words, Jiang Wushang lightly smiled, then said, “Senior, to be honest, I’m afraid even you are far below my Big Brother Chu Feng’s cultivation. Right now, the true strongest person in the continent of the Nine Provinces is no longer you, but my Big Brother Chu Feng.”

After Jiang Wushang spoke, it was akin to a thunder in a clear sky. Everyone was silent, and what existed was only the sound of gasp after gasp.

Not to mention others on scene, even the Azure Dragon Founder’s expression frozen. Quickly after, surprise and shock emerged onto his aged face.

It was because Jiang Wushang indeed gave them an answer that surpassed all expectations.

At that instant, they seemed to realize why the always proud and uncontrollable Jiang Wushang respected Chu Feng, the person in the same generation as him.

After that, the banquet continued, but no one mentioned Chu Feng anymore, as if invisibly, they felt fear towards him.

Not many days after the banquet, there were many people alien to the continent of the Nine Provinces entering their borders, and arriving at the Jiang Dynasty.

The long-awaited Assembly of a Thousand Clans was finally about to start.

The Assembly of a Thousand Clans was an assembly arranged by all dynasties at the eastern continents. It would be held nearly every year, and the location would usually be set at the continents with the most powerful dynasties.

This year, it was an exception. The reason it was held at the continent of the Nine Provinces, which the Jiang Dynasty was located at, was not because it was powerful, but because an exceptional person appeared in this continent—the Azure Dragon Founder.

Although it was titled as the Assembly of a Thousand Clans, in reality, there were only a few hundred imperial clans that participated every year. Moreover, the most important goal of the Assembly of a Thousand Clans was to increase the relationships between one another. As they did that, they also picked the most excellent people from their clan and used them to determine the degree of respect each clan deserved.

So, the events of the Assembly of a Thousand Clans were rather simple: other than exchanges by words, it was sparring. And, usually, the most eye-grabbing sparring was one between the younger generations, because that represented the future strength of a dynasty.

This year's Assembly of a Thousand Clans was held on time, and as the Jiang Dynasty expected, Jiang Wushang, who represented them in

participating, became a dark horse everyone focused on. He dumbfounded the people who came from various places, various continents, and various clans.

A young man not only possessed the cultivation at the eighth level of the Heaven realm, he even had an Imperial Bloodline. What did that mean? That meant his cultivation potential was unlimited, and that he would have great achievements in the future.

With that child leading the way, the Jiang Dynasty was also fated to rise greatly in power. Not to mention them, fallen dynasties that escaped to the eastern continents, even the dynasties in the Eastern Sea Region would sooner or later be stamped underneath their feet. They would even have a position of their own in the entire Eastern Sea Region, and it was not an impossibility for them to enter the legendary Holy Land of Martialism.

It was because the Imperial Bloodline was a power completely above the power from Royal Bloodlines. It was power from the legends. It was a power destined to exceed everyone else.

However, things were not as successful as they had imagined. Just as Jiang Wushang, with the power of the Imperial Bloodline, was about to exert his dominance over all the younger generations of this Assembly of a Thousand Clans, he met a great enemy whom he had never even heard before.

This was also a possessor of a bloodline. Moreover, he was just over twenty years of age, not that much older than Jiang Wushang. However, Jiang Wushang could not see through his cultivation. No matter what techniques Jiang Wushang deployed, he was unable to suppress that person.

As for who he was, his name was Gao Peng.

boom boom boom boom

At that very instant, on the fighting stage, the battle between Jiang Wushang and Gao Peng remained ongoing. Moreover, as Jiang Wushang's

attacks increased in strength, the circle of battle between the two became fiercer and fiercer. There were even some older generations at the peak of the Heaven realm who felt immense pressure. They couldn't help but consider if even

they

were able to defeat those two given they were on the stage.

“Dammit! I don't believe I cannot defeat you today!” When Jiang Wushang, despite using his entire arsenal of techniques, was still unable to defeat his opponent, he was furious because ever since they starting fighting, he had a feeling that Gao Peng was toying with him, that he never once considered him to be a worthy opponent.

“HAA—” Suddenly, Jiang Wushang shouted. On his forehead, a golden “Imperial” word appeared, and at the same time, his aura rapidly soared. A might unique to an emperor burst out from his body, shocking all that felt it.

“The Imperial Bloodline! I've finally seen it again. This aura is indeed far above Royal Bloodlines’.”

“This is too impressive. The Jiang Dynasty has been silent and unknown for so many years, but they have now truly shocked everyone with a single appearance! A possessor of an Imperial Bloodline has actually showed up! They will definitely rise greatly in the future, and no matter who, they won't be able to stop them.”

Seeing Jiang Wushang exuding the power of the Imperial Bloodline, many of the higher echelons of the dynasties sighed endlessly. On their faces, there was admiration, but also envy because as long as Jiang Wushang was there, they had no choice but to consider the Jiang Dynasty carefully. They even hiddenly decided to better relationships with them.

“That child from the Jiang Dynasty has indeed surprised us all so suddenly. However, that Gao Peng from the Gao Dynasty is not to be underestimated. He has yet to show his true cultivation, and even I cannot

determine his strength. I wonder what realm he has reached,” said an expert at the ninth level of the Heaven realm seriously.

“Yeah! The Gao Dynasty... I have never heard of this dynasty before! And that Gao Peng, ever since he went on stage, he has concealed his strength. Never once has he used too powerful of a cultivation, but he has no problem defeating his opponents. In all the matches, he has yet to lose.

“Even though Jiang Wushang is currently using the power of the Imperial Bloodline, this child is unperturbed. With courage and intelligence such as his, he will definitely become an outstanding person in the future.”

Up until now, they were not only dumbstruck by Jiang Wushang’s performance, almost everyone was intrigued with Gao Peng as well. Even though his appearance wasn’t as dazzling as Jiang Wushang’s, he still surpassed everyone’s expectations.

Most importantly, the clan Gao Peng belonged to was even less known than the Jiang Dynasty. It was everyone’s first time hearing there was a dynasty called the Gao Dynasty at the eastern continents.

Chapter 831 - Arrival of a Calamity

MGA: Chapter 831 - Arrival of a Calamity

“Oh ho? This truly is an Imperial Bloodline. That’s rather unbelievable. However, it is quite a waste for you to possess such a precious thing. Let my Gao Dynasty take care of it in your place.”

Gao Peng smiled as he looked at Jiang Wushang. His gaze was not only one of disdain, it was also one of a hungry wolf staring at an extremely abundant feast with endless excitement.

“You speak quite arrogantly! You want my Imperial Bloodline? You are unworthy!”

At that moment, Jiang Wushang was incomparable furious. All of the members from famous dynasties at the eastern continents were all defeated by him, yet in the end, he was blocked on his path to power by someone who came from a dynasty he hadn’t even heard of. That already made him displeased, but now, he even dared to provoke him as such? How could he tolerate it?

He no longer wasted any of his breath, and moved, leaping into the air. The might of the Imperial Bloodline burst from himself, and smashed down from above. Even the fighting stage made by special materials was violently trembling. Jiang Wushang wanted to thoroughly defeat Gao Peng with his might alone.

“Hmph.” But even though Jiang Wushang’s pressure had reached a terrifying stage of power, Gao Peng, who stood within the vortex of might, merely raised his head slightly as a hint of a derisive sneer appeared on his face.

“You are looking to die!” That sneer completely ignited Jiang Wushang’s fury. Clenching one of his fists, he threw a punch filled with horrifying power towards Gao Peng.

“Powerful. Is this a possessor of an Imperial Bloodline? His fighting strength is so strong! Even if it was me, I wouldn’t be able to defend against this punch!” Many experts at the peak of the Heaven realm revealed shock when they felt Jiang Wushang’s powerful strike, because they felt how terrifying he was.

In reality, many experts at the Martial Lord realm made preparations—preparing to help Gao Peng if he entered a critical state. It was because there was a rule in the Assembly of a Thousand Clans: spar appropriately; murder is forbidden.

boom

However, just as Jiang Wushang’s punch was about to land on him, another unthinkable scene occurred. Gao Peng just stood on the spot and didn’t even move. However, a hint of fierceness flashed past his eyes. Then, with a boom, an aura akin to a volcano erupting swept out from his body.

“Ah—”

The powerful strength not only forced back all of Jiang Wushang’s might, it even forced him several meters back. Like a kite that had its string severed, he felt down and as he did, not only was his complexion pale, blood was all over his body. He had clearly suffered heavy injuries.

In that instant, Gao Peng’s aura was finally revealed completely before the crowd.

Realm of Martial Lords, a rank one Martial Lord!

“This young man is a rank one Martial Lord?”

“That’s unbelievable! He’s a Martial Lord already at such an age? Isn’t he too powerful?”

Geo Peng, who stood above the stage, stupefied everyone. Martial Lord—to the people from the eastern continents, that was an extremely powerful existence. The number of experts who were able to enter that realm was countable by one’s fingers.

And, at present, this Assembly of a Thousand Clans had gathered a large portion of the people who possessed bloodlines from the eastern continents. Other than a few proud dynasties who saw it below themselves to participate in this Assembly of a Thousand Clans, almost all of the royal clans that existed on the eastern continents had come.

But even though experts from over a hundred dynasties had gathered here, there were no more than ten who were Martial Lords. Moreover, none of those ten were not aged elders. The youngest was still over ninety years of age.

Yet now, Geo Peng, from the Gao Dynasty which he had never been heard before, was a Martial Lord at such an age. How could they not be shocked? But just at that moment, an even more shocking scene occurred.

whoosh Suddenly, Geo Peng leapt up and landed by Jiang Wushang’s side. And, with a thought, Martial power only Martial Lords had emanated from his body. Like a rope, it tightly tied Jiang Wushang and lifted him into the air. He said with a cold smile, “It’s too much of a waste for this Imperial Bloodline to remain on your body. It’s better to give it to me.”

“The sparring is finished! Do not attack again!” When he saw that, the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty was enraged. He pointed at Gao Peng and shouted. If Gao Peng wasn’t that powerful, it was likely he would have already come out to deal with the issue.

“Stop! The rules state spar until appropriate! If you break the rules, the imperial clans will join together and punish you.” Just at that moment, an aged person with cultivation in the realm of Martial Lords spoke. He was one of the founders of the Assembly of a Thousand Clans. He was revered

not only by his own dynasty, but also by many of the other dynasties. He was a famous and influential person at the eastern continents.

“Quickly stop! This child possesses a rare Imperial Bloodline. You are not permitted to harm him!” At the same time, several other Martial Lords from other dynasties shouted to stop him.

Even though Jiang Wushang wasn't from their clan, he still possessed the legendary Imperial Bloodline. So, Jiang Wushang was not only the Jiang Dynasty's hope, he was also all of their hope. Hope for them, the group of fallen dynasties.

“Hahaha, imperial clans? You think trash like you can call yourselves ‘imperial clans’? If I want to kill him, who can stop me?” However, something unexpected was as he faced the threats of the experts, Gao Peng was still not the slightest bit afraid. Instead, he started arrogantly laughing. His eyes were filled with disdain—not towards a single person, but every single person on scene.

“What an arrogant brat. If we don't give you a lesson today, where will our dignity be? Where will the dignity of the Assembly of a Thousand Clans be?!” After hearing Gao Peng's words, the ancient elders were not lightly angered at all. In an instant, several people shot out from the crowd.

Emperors from various dynasties and people such as old ancestors made their move. Even the Martial Lord who shouted to stop Gao Peng made his move.

“The arrogant one is not him, but all of you.” But just at that moment, a voice even more deafening than thunder exploded faraway. Then, a person rushed up like light, and instantly stood before Gao Peng. After arriving there, without even moving, he swept his fierce eyes over the attacking experts from the various clans.

“Ahh—” Their complexions changed greatly. No matter if they were Martial Lords, or people in the Heaven realm, at that moment, their bodies trembled, then blood sprayed out of their mouths. Like sandbags, they fell straight onto the ground, having lost any ability to fight.

“This aura... It’s very powerful. A rank six Martial Lord?” At that moment, not to mention others, even the Azure Dragon Founder couldn’t help but tightly furrow his brows because he felt the old man’s power in the instant he released his aura. Even he, the Azure Dragon Founder, was far inferior.

Chapter 832 - Return of a Powerful Force

MGA: Chapter 832 - Return of a Powerful Force

swish swish swish swish...

Just at that moment, nine more people arrived from above. All of them stood orderly behind the old man. Every single one of them was similarly a Martial Lord, and there were even rank two Martial Lords, rank three Martial Lords, and rank four Martial Lords amongst them. Any one of them could instantly kill everyone if they wished to.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh... But that was not the end. After all of the Martial Lords appeared, sounds of people descending from the sky rained down from above endlessly.

When they looked over, the people falling through the sky were akin to a meteor shower. All of them landed behind the old man—there were several thousand of them. All of them were in the Heaven realm, and five hundred of them were at the peak of the Heaven realm. If they took just a single step forward in cultivation, they would become Martial Lords.

“You aren’t from the eastern continents. Where are you from? Why have you come here to stir up trouble?” shouted the Azure Dragon Founder. His expression changed greatly as he stood up.

Due to the present circumstances, he had no choice but to stand out. All of the Martial Lords before, with the exception of him, were wounded by the old man.

The old man had already terrified the crowd, but who would have expected him to bring out such a powerful formation of people? That truly

frightened the crowd completely, and at that moment, there wasn't even someone who dared to question those people out of all the dynasties.

Instead, the Azure Dragon Founder, the outsider, became their backbone.

“Haha, there's an interesting one here!

“You are correct. My Gao Dynasty's bloodline is pure, so naturally we cannot poorly live our lives in these eastern continents and shame our name.

“My Gao Dynasty comes from the Eastern Sea Region! We've come here to take over all you filthy beings!” shouted the old ancestor of the Gao Dynasty coldly. His tone was akin to an emperor looking over peasants. The atmosphere made him seem like a lord descending into the world.

“Eastern Sea Region?” Those three words horrified everyone. All of their faces were pale as paper, and instantly their foreheads were drenched with sweat. Where did they even have their former noble appearances of royalty? They were simply like little terrified chicks as they stood on the spot, blank-faced.

They had a very deep impression of the Eastern Sea Region. Many, many years ago, their clans were on that land. However, due to continuous declines, they gradually lost the ability to survive on that land. As such, by their ancestors' lead, they moved to the eastern continents.

That made the Eastern Sea Region an eternal pain of theirs. To be able to lead their clan back was their dream.

However, they also knew very well the level of danger in the Eastern Sea Region. It was a world experts appeared in. It was not easy to return to that land, because any sort of influential force could eradicate them.

Most importantly, none of the dynasties able to live in the Eastern Sea Region were simple existences. One could say they were all unimaginable enormous entities.

And today, there was a Gao Dynasty that came from the Eastern Sea Region straight up to their doorsteps. They knew they were finished. At least, no matter what the Gao Dynasty wanted to do, none of them had any strength to resist.

The reality was indeed the same as their thoughts. Even though peak experts from many dynasties had gathered here, when facing the Gao Dynasty, none of them could even put up a scratch. They were currently akin to a fish on a cutting board, awaiting to be slaughtered.

Fear... Helplessness... Those words were clearly written on their faces.

“What are you planning to do?” the Azure Dragon Founder asked gravely.

“I’ve said it already. We are going to rule over all of you. To be clearer, we will make you into animals. We will make you into slaves to be used in the future,” said the old ancestor of the Gao Dynasty with a sneer.

From the Jiang Dynasty, an elder said, stubbornly, “Don’t even think about it! You want us to serve you? You aren’t even—”

boom However, before he even finished speaking, a Martial Lord from the Gao Dynasty raised his palm and made the elder into a pool of blood.

At the same time, the old ancestor from the Gao Dynasty coldly smiled, then said, “You useless Jiang Dynasty, you fail to recognize your present state. You dare to refuse the recruitment of my Gao Dynasty? You truly don’t put us in your eyes!

“Men, destroy this Jiang Dynasty. Destroy the Nine Provinces as well. I don’t want to see anything alive on this continent that has trash running around.”

“What? This...” After hearing those words, they, who were already trembling from fear, now fell onto the ground from terror. Just because of a single retort their entire clan was going to be destroyed. Even the continent they were on was going to be affected. That was truly quite ruthless.

“You want to destroy the continent of the Nine Provinces? You truly possess an arrogant tone!”

However, just as everyone felt a disaster was imminent, a voice filled with fury exploded in the sky.

That voice was really too horrifying. When it rang out, not only did the earth tremble, the sky itself trembled slightly as well. There were even cracks that appeared on many of the Jiang Dynasty’s buildings, all caused by the voice alone.

“Oh? I didn’t think there would be experts hidden in this place.” After hearing that voice, the old ancestor of the Gao Dynasty furrowed his brows slightly, but he did not panic too much. He swept his gaze over his surroundings and said indifferently, “If you want to interfere, then don’t keep hiding. Come out. Let me deal with you together with all of them.”

boom rumble rumble

Immediately after he spoke, a bolt of lightning suddenly appeared in the serene sky. When it struck down, it went straight for the old ancestor of the Gao Dynasty, as if his arrogance had elicited the anger of the heavens and he was receiving divine punishment.

Seeing that, he frowned lightly. He waved his big sleeve, wanting to block it. He felt that the power of the lightning was absolutely not to be underestimated. But, who would have thought, just as he was about to come into contact, the thick lightning suddenly disappeared.

boom rumble rumble rumble

However, after the bolt of lightning disappeared, black clouds appeared everywhere and there were countless thick lightning bolts that filled the sky. It was as if the end of days had arrived, displaying an extremely horrifying scene.

“Heavens! What is going on?” At that instant, everyone could feel an extremely powerful burst of pressure permeating the air, covering the

world.

There were even some younger people who, upon looking at the surging black clouds and the fierce bolts of lightning as thick as dragons, couldn't help wailing as they were really quite terrified.

In reality, not to mention the people from the eastern continents, even the Gao Dynasty, who were all arrogant and looked down on everyone, were stupefied by the scene before their eyes.

At that very instant, they furrowed their brows tightly as uneasiness filled their faces. There was even terror that glittered in some people's eyes, because the pressure that enveloped everything was truly quite powerful.

“Look, what's that!”

Suddenly, someone cried out. Looking over in the direction of that person's finger, the expressions of everyone changed greatly as they felt stunned.

At that very instant, within the surging black clouds with snakes of lightning, there were ten incomparably enormous black warships. Those warships were truly too big—they were simply akin to drifting castles. Moreover, the destructive might they possessed pressed down from the skies as they gradually approached.

“Heavens! What is that thing! It's so terrifying!” The people from the continent of the Nine Provinces had, of course, never seen such a formation of people! All of them lay on the ground, their bodies trembling, and they didn't even have the power to climb up and escape—they were completely dumbfounded and petrified.

Along with the gradual descent of the warships, all of them were also able to see faintly several huge flags on the warships. If one looked more carefully, they would be able to see the symbol of a black, incomplete moon. Moreover, there were four big words written on the symbols.

Crippling Night Demon Sect!

Chapter 833 - Power of a Single Punch

MGA: Chapter 833 - Power of a Single Punch

“Crippling Night Demon Sect?” When they saw those four big words, the people from the Gao Dynasty felt their hearts shake. They were frightened. An unprecedented fear birthed from their hearts.

Being from the Eastern Sea Region, they could not possibly know any clearer what the Crippling Night Demon Sect represented. In their minds, it was a group of demons who killed without blinking and didn't care what methods they used to achieve their goals. They were an existence they didn't dare to anger from the bottom of their hearts, and if it weren't for the enticement and blackmail of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they wouldn't dare to come to this place either.

On the surface, their mission here was to take over all the dynasties, but in reality, it was taking revenge on Chu Feng. When they recalled that, they felt even more uneasy because everyone in the Eastern Sea Region knew Chu Feng was a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“Who are they? What a terrifying formation of people!”

As the warships gradually approached, the people looking at them felt more and more shocked. Even though many people in the continent of the Nine Provinces didn't know what the Crippling Night Demon Sect was, they could see that the warships were full of cultivation experts.

There were over ten thousand Heaven realm experts, and of them at least five hundred were at the peak of the Heaven realm. With just a single step in their attainments in cultivation, they would become Martial Lords. Of all of those experts, there were also several auras of Martial Lords.

No matter in terms of number, or in terms of strength, the people on the ten warships seemed to be superior to the Gao Dynasty. However, since they didn't know if they were an enemy or ally, amidst the shock, the people from the continent of the Nine Provinces felt even more fear.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh

However, just as anxiousness filled the crowd, the army of the Crippling Night Demon Sect flew down from the ten warships, and like divine troops and generals descending onto the mortal world, they approached with a powerful demeanor. In the end, they half-surrounded the Gao Dynasty who stood on the surface while hovering in the sky.

“They're heading for them? That means this powerful force isn't an enemy?” Seeing the army of the Crippling Night Demon Sect emanating animosity towards the Gao Dynasty, the people from the continent of the Nine Provinces temporarily relaxed. However, they dared not to be too careless. After all, the people before their eyes were truly too horrifying. They were people they had never seen before.

“Everyone, I am the chief of the Gao Dynasty, Gao Kuncheng.

“May I ask what offense I have committed for a noble sect like yours to set up such a display?” Even though he knew something was wrong, the old ancestor of the Gao Dynasty still brought a smile onto his face and asked them, feigning confusion.

Unless absolutely necessary, they did not want to anger the Crippling Night Demon Sect. After all, a huge power such as theirs was not one the Gao Dynasty stood a chance against.

whoosh Immediately after he spoke, the Crippling Night Demon Sect suddenly split into two. They made a path within the ocean of people, and at that moment, a young person slowly walked out, and then showed himself at the forefront of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

After seeing that person, the Azure Dragon Founder, the Monstrous Monkey King, the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty, and many other

famous people of the continent of the Nine Provinces all widened their eyes as their pupils shrank, surprised expressions emerging onto their faces.

Even the people from the Gao Dynasty changed their complexions greatly because they were able to immediately recognize who that young man was.

That person was... Chu Feng!

“It’s Chu Feng! This... What’s going on?” After recognizing Chu Feng, the people from the continent of the Nine Provinces instantly rejoiced, but coincident with rejoicing they felt disbelief, especially after seeing the Crippling Night Demon Sect experts’ respectful appearances towards him. They felt even more stupefied, and it was simply as if they were in a dream. They didn’t even dare to trust their own eyes.

Could that army have been brought back by Chu Feng? However, they were so strong, so how could Chu Feng...

When they had such thoughts, they simply didn’t dare to continue their imagination because the scene in front of their eyes completely surpassed their expectations.

They knew, from Jiang Wushang and the others, that Chu Feng was a very impressive person. However, they never would have thought he would accomplish so much in the Eastern Sea Region, a place where countless experts came forth. He even reached such a powerful level of strength, and not only was his own cultivation unfathomably deep, he even had such a large group of experts serving him.

But as the people from the Nine Provinces felt shock, the expressions of those from the Gao Dynasty trembled because Chu Feng’s infamous name had already spread far and wide in the Eastern Sea Region.

Even recently, when Chu Feng made such a huge ruckus at the Flower Valley’s Zi family, he not only killed the patriarch of the Zi family, it was said he even killed two rank seven Martial Lords—experts of the Immortal

Execution Archipelago. If that were true, then the strength he possessed was far superior to the Gao Dynasty's old ancestor.

So, seeing the poorly progressing situation, the old ancestor had a clever thought and feigned ignorance. He pretended he didn't know Chu Feng, and first respectfully bowed and clasped his hands at him, then said with a smile, "Milord, I don't recall any conflicts between us, right?"

"No conflicts? You clearly stated you were going to destroy my homeland, kill my family, yet now you dare to say you don't recall any conflicts?" Chu Feng faintly smiled as a hint of ridicule flashed past his eyes.

"This... Ah, milord, so this continent of the Nine Provinces is your homeland! I truly didn't know! If I did, even if you lent me ten guts I still wouldn't dare to come to this place!

"They say the ignorant cannot be blamed. Milord, I truly didn't know this was your homeland! I beg you to grant me mercy!" The old ancestor's face was full of humbleness. The arrogant aura he had before was gone completely.

"Haha, you truly don't know who I am?" Seeing the amusing scene the old ancestor acted out, Chu Feng's laughter became even louder.

"Milord, I haven't even seen you before so how could I know who you are?" The Gao Dynasty's old ancestor shook his head.

"Brother Wushang, please go ahead and tell them who... I am." Chu Feng cast his gaze towards Jiang Wushang.

At that moment, Jiang Wushang still had heavy injuries and was still tied in the air by Gao Peng's Martial power. When he saw Chu Feng's arrival, he immediately burst in laughter and said, "You cowardly things, do you want to know who he is? I'll tell you right now. He's my big brother!"

"Bastard! He knows Milord! Release the binding and admit your wrongs!" The Gao Dynasty's old ancestor hurriedly shouted at Gao Peng.

Naturally, Gao Peng didn't dare to hesitate as he quickly released Jiang Wushang and knelt.

But, unexpectedly, Chu Feng smiled lightly and said, "No need for admitting your wrongs, since you won't escape death either way."

boom After speaking, Chu Feng suddenly extended his hand and threw out a punch. Instantly, a destructive power surged out of his fist.

Struck by such power, Gao Peng didn't even have a chance to cry out before his body exploded, becoming a pool of blood. It was not only Gao Peng who was caught by that attack as several experts from the Gao Dynasty were affected as well. They too exploded immediately, and even three Martial Lords died.

Chapter 834 - Shocking Everyone

MGA: Chapter 834 - Shocking Everyone

“Chu Feng, damn all your ancestors!” Seeing that Chu Feng still attacked despite his humbleness, and killed several geniuses who were extremely rare to come by, the old ancestor of the Gao Dynasty was enraged and started shouting at him, “You brainless animal, I planned to dissolve this matter into nothing, and avoid a life-and-death battle or any desperate measures.

“But you reject such advances and kill the younger generations of my dynasty! Since you ignore the steps I give you, and reject the face I grant you, I will let you know that my Gao Dynasty is no pushover! You want to destroy my clan? I will still make you pay a price!

“All members, attention! Today is a day to spread the might of our dynasty! Destroy these bastards from the Crippling Night Demon Sect!

“KILL THEM ALL—”

After his order, the people from the Gao Dynasty echoed his shout and all of them released their auras. In an instant, an uncontrollable might spread through the world, one that fought against the might from the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

boom rumble rumble However, just at that moment, Chu Feng flipped his palm suddenly. The Royal Armament, the Silver Dragon Spear, appeared in his hand.

After it appeared, an incomparable pressure was exuded from the Royal Armament, and it instantly enveloped everything.

Who could even contest against an actual Royal Armament?

The might of the entire Gao Dynasty was instantly pressed back down. Not only was their power suppressed, even their physical bodies were being suppressed. They were like pigs and dogs as they curled up on the ground. If they were not rolling around, they were crawling. They had completely lost their ability to fight.

Even the old ancestor of the Gao Dynasty was no exception. His arms pushed his body up, his knees were on the ground, and he was kneeling in front of Chu Feng.

ta, ta, ta...

After subduing all of the dynasty experts with the power of the Royal Armament, Chu Feng slowly walked up to the Gao Dynasty's old ancestor with the Silver Dragon Spear in hand. He coldly smiled, then said, "Old thing, what did you say just now? Repeat it."

gulp Facing the power Chu Feng emanated, and seeing the scene of absolute death, the old ancestor first gulped, then made a decision. He gnashed his teeth, raised his head, widened his mouth, and howled to Chu Feng, "I damn all your ances—"

puchi But before he was able to finish his words, a cold glint flashed past. Then a squirt of blood. Chu Feng pierced through the neck of the Gao Dynasty's old ancestor with the Silver Dragon Spear.

"The likes of you cannot insult my ancestors." After speaking, Chu Feng abruptly flicked his spear, then after a bang, the strongest person in the Gao Dynasty, the old ancestor, was made into a pool of blood.

"In the instant you served the Immortal Execution Archipelago you committed a capital offence." After executing the old ancestor, Chu Feng raised the Silver Dragon Spear up.

aooo

At that instant, the runes on the Silver Dragon Spear flared. First, a dragon's roar rang out from the inside of the spear, then a powerful burst

of might surged out from the spear and swept below.

“Ahh—”

Being struck by such power, the people from the Gao Dynasty all cried out. Then, after many consecutive muffled explosions, several thousand experts from the Gao Dynasty, in front of the surprised and frightened gazes of the crowd, all became a large pool of blood. There weren't even any remnants; they were all slaughtered by Chu Feng.

“Heavens!” When they saw that, not to mention the people from the continent of the Nine Provinces, even the experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect who had come from such a distance couldn't help gasping deeply.

From start to finish, Chu Feng had simply not even asked for their help. With his own strength, he completely wiped out the experts from the Gao Dynasty. Putting aside his overwhelming strength, his ruthlessness and decisiveness was not something an ordinary person possessed.

“Who is this young man? What a terrifying way to kill, and he's also from the continent of the Nine Provinces? Such a genius appeared from the continent of the Nine Provinces?”

“This is inconceivable. I even thought there had never been anyone outstanding from the continent of the Nine Provinces, but it seems now that we were absolutely incorrect.”

As for the people who came from other dynasties, they were stupefied by Chu Feng's actions. In terms of age, Chu Feng didn't even seem to be that much older than Jiang Wushang, but in terms of strength, the distance between the two was really too big.

Putting aside the fact that they themselves were far inferior to Jiang Wushang, Chu Feng, with his cultivation, was simply like a god to them because he did indeed have the strength to look down on all of them.

“Tidy up their resources.” Chu Feng indifferently looked at the weapons and Cosmos Sacks bathing within the blood, then ordered the experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect behind him.

“Yes sir!” They did not dally and all of them leapt in, starting to carefully organize the resources the Gao Dynasty left behind.

“Brother Wushang, are you okay?” At that instant, Chu Feng came to Jiang Wushang’s side.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, I’m fine. You’ve truly come back at the perfect moment. Otherwise, it would have been disastrous.” Jiang Wushang nodded, but then added, “Big Brother Chu Feng, the weapon in your hand is so powerful! What is it?”

“This is a Royal Armament.” Chu Feng lightly smiled, then put away the Silver Dragon Spear and flew towards the Azure Dragon Founder and the others.

He left Jiang Wushang standing on the spot, unable to come to his senses for a long while. He said, with an extremely shocked tone, “I-It’s a Royal Armament!”

After coming up to the seniors who had helped him before, he paid his respects.

The Azure Dragon Founder, Li Zhangqing, the Monstrous Monkey King, Qi Fengyang, old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty, Jiang Hengyuan, Gu Tianchen...[1]

These were all seniors who had watched Chu Feng grow up bit by bit. At that moment, as they looked at Chu Feng, they couldn’t hide their smiles. They were very happy. They were very excited, so much that they couldn’t even speak. They didn’t know how to express their current emotions, because Chu Feng’s current achievements far surpassed their imagination.

Even though, some time ago, they had stood in front of Chu Feng with the position of super experts, and had given him different degrees of

assistance, at present, their identities had been reversed. Today, it was not they who saved Chu Feng, but Chu Feng who saved everyone.

Chu Feng, the boy who was being chased after everywhere, had now become a true expert. Moreover, his strength surpassed everyone's expectations. He was now an existence every person in the Nine Provinces revered but could never reach.

“Lord Chu Feng, these are the resources taken from the Gao Dynasty.” Soon, thirty-eight Martial Lords came up to Chu Feng, and along with them were the resources obtained from the blood of the Gao Dynasty's experts.

The so-called resources not only included Heaven beads, but also many Martial Medicines. There were also innumerable Elite Armaments—things that were called priceless treasures in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

Chapter 835 - Reentering the Ghost Tower

MGA: Chapter 835 - Reentering the Ghost Tower

“Seniors, let’s cut this short. Due to some circumstances, right now, a force in the Eastern Sea Region wants to destroy our continent of the Nine Provinces. This force is also something I am no match for currently.

“So, right now, we cannot remain in the continent of the Nine Provinces because I cannot guarantee if there’ll be others that come here after the Gao Dynasty. For safety’s sake, all of you need to temporarily move to another place and stay hidden.

“After moving, I hope everyone in the continent of the Nine Provinces will not care about our difference and unite together, because right now, we are a family.

“Lord Founder, I’ll hand these resources over to you. Although there isn’t a lot, with these, it will still provide a raise in strength for all of you.” As Chu Feng spoke, he gave the resources taken from the Gao Dynasty to the Azure Dragon Founder.

After roughly examining the resources, even the Azure Dragon Founder’s expression changed greatly. He was frightened by the abundant amount, then couldn’t help sighing deeply, and said to Chu Feng with a smile, “Oh Chu Feng, don’t call me ‘founder’ anymore. Right now, I am inferior to you. If others hear an expert like you call me founder, I’m afraid I’ll be laughed at!” As he spoke, the Azure Dragon Founder’s face was full of embarrassment.

It was not only he who had such an expression. Zhuge Liuyun[1], Li Zhangqing, and many others felt ashamed. Although seniority-wise, they

were far above Chu Feng, strength-wise, the difference between them and Chu Feng was like the difference between heaven and earth.

“Lord Founder, what are you saying? As they say, ‘Master for one day, father for a lifetime’. Besides, you’re the founder!

“No matter when, I, Chu Feng, will not forget I am a disciple of the Azure Dragon School. No matter when, I will not forget I have a master in the Azure Dragon School called Zhuge Liuyun, and I have a founder called the Azure Dragon Founder[2],” Chu Feng said seriously. These were words that came from his heart. No matter what time it was, he would never forget Zhuge Liuyun was master and the Azure Dragon Founder was his founder.

He didn’t respect these two alone though. For many of the seniors there, Chu Feng would respect them for his entire life. No matter how powerful he became, his attitude on that would never change.

People could not forget their roots. They could not forget the people who had helped them when they had nothing, when they were so weak they couldn’t even defeat anyone.

After hearing Chu Feng’s words, the Azure Dragon Founder didn’t say anything more. However, the relieved smile on his face had clearly expressed the emotions he currently felt.

Afterwards, Chu Feng let the clans from the other dynasties leave first. They, who had nearly died, knew the danger of the continent of the Nine Provinces. There was no need for him to drive them out as they hurriedly left on their own.

But even though they had safely left, they would never forget it was a young man called Chu Feng who saved them.

After urging the outsiders away, Chu Feng instructed all of the experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect to move everyone closely related to himself using the ten extremely quick warships. As for the location, Chu

Feng had already chosen it. It was still in the eastern continents, but it was absolutely safe.

That relocation was a huge project. However, since the ten warships were extremely quick, despite the large number of people, it was completed shortly after a month.

At present, everyone in the continent of the Nine Provinces closely related to Chu Feng, even the large powers closely related to him, were all swiftly moved out of their homeland.

As they were being relocated, in accordance to Chu Feng's instructions, the Jiang Dynasty made an announcement to the world. They said there were some resources in the continent of the Nine Provinces that attracted the attention of outside powers, and that before long, said powers might lead an army to attack. They urged everyone to quickly leave in order to avoid any unnecessary involvements.

Moreover, when they announced such a thing, the Jiang Dynasty sent varying degrees of financial assistance to various powers and even commoners. Not only would it be sufficient to compensate for the losses in the relocation, it freely gifted them quite some wealth.

As for the forces willing to help people quickly move out of the Nine Provinces, they would be able to receive even more bountiful rewards.

Of course, such a sum was naturally not one the Jiang Dynasty could provide. All of it was provided by Chu Feng. After all, at present, the wealth he possessed was something the Jiang Dynasty could not even compare to.

In a situation like that, the higher echelons such as peak forces and the lower echelons such as commoners all started the relocation. Other than a small portion of people who were unwilling, most of them chose to leave.

In the near future, the continent of the Nine Provinces would become a desolate area where one would be troubled to find traces of humans.

After basically finishing the relocation, Chu Feng came to the territory of the World Spirit Guild because there was a place Chu Feng wanted to challenge before leaving: the mysterious Asura Ghost Tower.

At that moment, nearly all of the World Spirit Guild members had left. Only a small portion chose to stay behind to guard this land. Putting aside the fact that no one could stop Chu Feng with his current strength, no one would

stop Chu Feng because of the relationship he had with the World Spirit Guild.

As such, he entered the Asura Ghost Tower with no troubles and came to the seventh floor; the Monstrous Monkey King was imprisoned on this floor.

“The Spirit Formation here is truly quite cleverly made. No wonder my monkey brother was locked in here for so long.”

At that moment, Chu Feng spread out his Spirit power and used his Heaven’s Eyes to observe his surroundings. With the Spirit Formation techniques he currently grasped, he easily deactivated the Spirit Formation that had imprisoned the Monstrous Monkey King. Moreover, he continued walking farther in.

However, the deeper he went, the more complex the Spirit Formation traps became. If he didn’t have the Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng simply wouldn’t have been able to locate the method of deactivation with his Spirit power alone. He would possibly not have even discovered these traps.

In a situation like that, the pressure Chu Feng felt became heavier and heavier. He didn’t dare to possess even a single trace of carelessness, and he had to admit: the master of the Asura Ghost Tower was indeed not a simple person at all.

However, due to such exquisite Spirit Formation traps, Chu Feng realized more and more that if there were truly a treasure sealed in this place, it

would definitely not be any simple treasure.

“Eggy, what is with this Asura Ghost Tower? On the surface, it clearly only looks like a tower, but why has it become so large after I enter?” Chu Feng asked as he carefully ventured forth. He discovered that the seventh floor of the Asura Ghost Tower was really quite large. It was over dozens of times the size of the sum of the six floors below.

“Heh, this Asura Ghost Tower itself is a formation. When you entered the seventh floor, you’ve entered the true formation.

“As for how big it is, that’s an unknown. If it was created by an outstanding World Spiritist, then it’s not impossible for this formation to open up an entire, standalone world,” Eggy explained.

“It’s that powerful? When can you teach me how to create this Asura Ghost Tower then?” Chu Feng, who made a contract with an Asura World Spirit, felt an increasing interest in the Asura Ghost Tower.

“You? There’s still a long ways away.”

Eggy curled her lips, indicating that the Asura Ghost Tower wasn’t something that could be easily created. After all, opening a whole new space and letting it remain for over ten thousand years demanded an extremely powerful Spirit Formation technique. Chu Feng, at present, still lacked that ability.

“Heh...” Chu Feng was not upset when he heard Eggy’s words, and instead, chuckled. He looked forward, and said, “Then, what do you think about this? Behind this Spirit Formation Gate, is it a new world, or is it a trap?”

Chapter 836 - A Shocking Discovery

MGA: Chapter 836 - A Shocking Discovery

At that instant, Chu Feng seemed to have walked to the end of the seventh floor because in front of him, a huge door appeared.

The door was surrounded by decorations, and even the relief statue

above was quite exquisite. Most importantly, the door was not locked. If one went forth and gently pushed, it would be opened.

However, before that door was opened, it blocked all detection abilities. No matter if it was Spirit power, or his unique Heaven's Eyes, neither was able to see what was behind the door. Chu Feng thus could not determine if it was evil or luck, if it was fortune or misfortune.

“We've already walked up to here. No matter what's behind the door, judging by your nature, you're still going to take a look, right?” Eggy said as she sweetly smiled because she too did not know what was behind the door.

“That's true. Since we've come here, let's just open the door and take a look.” Chu Feng lightly smiled, then waved his big sleeve. A pushing force came out from his sleeve which slowly pushed open the door.

When the door was opening, a blinding ray of light shone through. When the door completely opened, even Chu Feng couldn't help but widen his eyes slightly, and the smile on his face couldn't help but widen even more.

At that instant, what appeared before Chu Feng was truly a whole new world. Some person truly made a whole new space with Spirit Formation

techniques.

Although that world wasn't very big, it was still rather large. Not only were there mountains, creeks, rivers, plains, valleys, there were even white clouds, a blue sky, and a sun high up. Moreover, there was a revolution of day and night.

“Impressive. I wonder what sort of techniques are required to lay such a powerful formation.”

Chu Feng knew everything in this world, despite how realistic it appeared, was all fake. No matter if it was the mountains and creeks, or the rivers, or the blue sky, white clouds, stars, sun, or moon, all of it was fake. They were created by powerful formations, and as long as that formation was deactivated, everything inside would disappear along with it.

However, what sort of powerful technique was needed to create such a formation, and what sort of power was needed to maintain such a formation?

“Heh, it looks like the master who created this Asura Ghost Tower is truly not simple at all. This person has surpassed my imagination. However, the more powerful the master, the more dangerous this Asura Ghost Tower becomes.

“But since we've come, we can't do nothing here. Chu Feng, look around this fake world. The Asura Ghost Tower itself is a Sealing Formation. There would be no one who creates a tower like this just for display. The creator wants people to come here, so look around carefully. Perhaps there will be unexpected harvests.

“However, you must be careful because the master here is too powerful. The Spirit Formation traps outside are but a child's play. If he had truly wanted to seal this place, you would have simply not been able to enter.

This

is the most important location. If there are any traps here, unless you find something, avoid them. Otherwise, if they are triggered, you will certainly die,” Eggy reminded very seriously.

“Mm.” Chu Feng nodded. He knew the degree of strength the master here possessed, but because of his nature, he was absolutely not going to leave empty-handed. As such, he leapt into the air and carefully observed the fake world.

Chu Feng first flew towards the east, but other than finding some beautiful sceneries, there were no other discoveries. Furthermore, he quickly reached the end. So, he could only turn around and head in the other direction.

Finally, Chu Feng discovered that this world was a rectangle. If he flew to the east, west, or south, he would arrive at the end very soon and would be stopped by an invisible Spirit Formation. However, if he headed to the north, it was very vast, almost as if it were endless.

“Heavens! That bird... It’s so big!” After passing several mountains, Chu Feng’s pupils suddenly shrank. His heart was also shaken because on a nearby mountain range, he discovered an enormous skeleton.

It was the remains of a huge bird. It had already died for a long time—at least several tens of thousands of years. On the skeleton itself, one could feel the old and ancient aura it exuded.

From the skeleton alone, Chu Feng knew that the bird was definitely terrifyingly powerful when alive because based on the strange and huge skeleton alone, it was enough to know it was not an ordinary species.

Casting aside its sharp claws, its size was really too big. It was as large as a small hill, and if it were still alive, it would have definitely covered the sky when it flew and stunned the world. A mere flap of its wings could create a violent hurricane, destroy mountains, ruin all living things, and slaughter a population. Doing all that would require it no more effort than a thought. As such, it was definitely not something kindhearted.

“Heh, it seems like it’s a Monstrous Beast from ancient times! They’re extinct now, but when it was alive, it looks like it was a peak Martial King. With just a step in cultivation, it would have been able to become a Martial Emperor, an existence that could rule this world. But sadly, when it was shaken by someone else’s might, the bones throughout its body cracked, all of its organs broke down, and, in the end, even its Source Energy was cleanly sucked away,” Eggy narrated.

When he looked carefully, Chu Feng too discovered countless small cracks on the huge bird’s thick bones. It did seem like it was shocked to death by a person’s might.

When he saw that, another hint of solemnness emerged into his eyes. With might alone, an existence such as this was killed. How powerful was that person?

“Wait, it’s not only one! This looks like an enormous group of the same species.” After flying past that mountain, Chu Feng felt even more shocked. On the vast mountain ranges, there were countless horrifying skeletons of huge birds scattered everywhere.

The total number was truly too big. There were at least several tens of thousands, and there were varying sizes, and varying strengths. However, the smallest was still several tens of feet high while the weakest was at the Heaven realm. Moreover, they were all killed by pressure of a person’s might. That was definitely a powerful Monstrous Beast species, yet it was eradicated by someone.

After passing through those mountain ranges, Chu Feng arrived at a vast valley. Within the valley, there was also an accumulation of countless skeletons of Monstrous Beasts. They were another Monstrous Beast species that were similarly powerful when alive, but now, they were only a pile of white bones.

In his journey afterwards, he was nearly able to see bones everywhere. Most of them came from Monstrous Beasts, and all of them belonged to a single species in unimaginable numbers. From the shape of their bones, one could imagine how powerful and terrifying they were when alive.

On the road, even Chu Feng, who had experienced quite a bit of the world, felt his heart tremble from fright. Complicated emotions and questions emerged as well.

So many powerful Monstrous Beasts were all killed by the pressure of might alone. The same method, the same massacre, thus it was likely all done by a single person. Yet, what sort of existence was able to slaughter so many powerful Monstrous Beasts, and what sort of deep animosity did that person have which led to such an eradication?

Chapter 837 - Remains of a Martial Emperor

MGA: Chapter 837 - Remains of a Martial Emperor

“This...”

However, when Chu Feng flew over another vast mountain range and arrived at an endless grassland, he was completely astonished.

What appeared before his eyes was not a simple grassland—there were white bones densely covering its surface, forming an endless ocean of bones both grand and horrifying.

Moreover, within the vast skeletons, there were not only enormous Monstrous Beast remains, there were also remains of humans. There was truly too many; it was simply incalculable with numbers.

In addition, no matter if it was the humans’, or the Monstrous Beasts’, they were all well-known and powerful characters. Not a single one of them was subpar.

“This is truly terrifying. So many peak experts, and even so many peak Martial Kings, were all killed by pressure alone. What sort of existence was the one that killed them? Could it have been a Martial Emperor?” At that moment, even Chu Feng couldn’t help inhaling deeply, unable to remain calm.

Of the multitudinous remains, there was nearly no one who was weak. It was likely any one of them, if released to the Eastern Sea Region, could become an overlord.

However, such powerful existences had all become bones. Moreover, they were forcibly killed by someone’s pressure. It meant that the person who killed them was very powerful and very horrifying.

“Haha, interesting! This is getting more and more interesting...” But in contrast with the shock Chu Feng felt, Eggy on the other hand became more and more excited. She yelled out loudly, “Chu Feng, look! Look at the skeleton between those two Monstrous Beasts!”

“Which one?” Chu Feng asked.

“The translucent human skeleton over there that’s letting off a bit of light! Do you see it? When that person was alive, he was a truly a cultivation expert!”

Following Eggy’s words and looking over, Chu Feng too couldn’t help gasping deeply. There was indeed a very special skeleton. It was a human’s, and it was a very special one: white as a jade, containing divine might, and it was even emitting faint radiance. Not only did it look like a treasure on the surface, there was even a feeling of indestructibility. Not to mention Chu Feng, even Martial Kings would find it difficult to damage the bones in the slightest. It was the remains of a Martial Emperor!

“Heavens! It’s a Martial Emperor! A Martial Emperor was killed!” Chu Feng could not remain collected any longer. His face was filled with astonishment as he leapt forward, rushed down from the sky, and wanted to get closer to the Martial Emperor’s remains to investigate it.

boom

“Ahh—”

However, before he even touched it, a powerful burst of might spread out from the remains. It forced Chu Feng back into the air, and he only stopped after flying for dozens of miles.

When he landed on the ground, he felt that the bones throughout his body were nearly shattered. His blood was boiling, and he almost coughed up blood. Luckily, he wasn’t seriously injured, but he still received some wounds.

After wiping away the traces of blood at the corners of his mouth, Chu Feng's complexion was quite unsightly. He said, "Eggy, even though the aura just now was very weak, it seemed to be an Imperial Might. Imperial Might only Martial Emperors possess."

"It is." Eggy nodded.

"But it's clearly only a skeleton, and even its Source Energy was cleanly absorbed! How is it possible for an Imperial Might to remain?" Chu Feng felt confused. The typical Source Energy wasn't there, so the skeleton should be normal. Yet, the one just now was clearly different.

"Idiot, a Martial Emperor is, after all, a Martial Emperor! It is a true powerful person, an existence that can call upon the winds and rains, and can move mountains and fill oceans. Even after death, their might remains. This remnant energy will never be extinguished, and with the strength you currently possess, you shouldn't even think of approaching it," Eggy explained.

"Powerful." After hearing Eggy's words, Chu Feng felt even more amazed. He wasn't amazed at the power of the Martial Emperor, but at the killer which murdered the Martial Emperor.

Even though he was unable to get too close up before being forced away by the Imperial Might, he still noticed a fatal injury on the Martial Emperor's skeleton.

That injury was very fiercely made, and the Martial Emperor was precisely killed by that single strike. Other than that strike, there were no other wounds on the skeleton of the Martial Emperor. That meant the unimaginably powerful Martial Emperor was killed by a person's single attack. That was quite unbelievable.

"Hehe, this is truly interesting. I didn't think there would be such a person in the continent of the Nine Provinces." Eggy started getting excited.

"Eggy, do you mean that everyone here was killed by the creator of this Asura Ghost Tower?" Chu Feng knew what Eggy meant from her words.

“It’s most likely that. Otherwise, why would he seal these useless skeletons in the ghost tower?” Eggy said.

“That’s true.” Chu Feng nodded, expressing agreement.

“Heh, this is truly too interesting. Even I must admit the creator of this Asura Ghost Tower is a bit impressive,” Eggy said with a smile. She was oddly happy after seeing so many skeletons of powerful animals and people.

“Yeah! To be able to kill a Martial Emperor in a single strike... What sort of power is that?” Chu Feng could also imagine how powerful that person was.

“But sadly, judging by the changes that have occurred to these skeletons, they have likely already died for several tens of thousands of years. It’s been too long ago... They are also likely from the Ancient Era. The existences from that era have nearly been all extinct. So, I’m guessing you won’t have a chance to see the powerful figure of the master of this Asura Ghost Tower,” Eggy said with a bit of pity.

“They’ve all died, huh?” Chu Feng’s complexion changed slightly, then he quickly asked, “The matters from the Ancient Era are like puzzles. Even though many legends have been passed throughout the ages, it’s impossible to determine which are true and which are false. Eggy, you seem to know about these ancient things?”

“How could I know? I’ve just heard a few things, that’s all. They say this world’s Ancient Era was the era where experts came forth, an era where there was an endless stream of people with unique abilities and geniuses.

“However, that has already become the past. Right now, the people of that era have nearly all died. The matters regarding that era also, along with the people, slowly disappeared.” Eggy shook her head. One could tell even the proud queen felt a bit of sorrow since she missed such a prosperous era.

“Then is there a possibility that the people from the Ancient Era survived with special methods, and are just unwilling to show themselves?”

When the Ancient Era was mentioned, Chu Feng couldn't help but recall the huge face that covered the sky within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm on the Misty Peak, the mysterious and powerful existence, and also the powerful creatures he had never seen before. Chu Feng faintly felt they were not creatures belonging to their era.

Chapter 838 - Emperor of Massacre

MGA: Chapter 838 - Emperor of Massacre

He thought of such a question because the Misty Peak came from the ancient times, and Lady Piaomiao, because of the special power on the Misty Peak, survived for nearly a thousand years. It was something that defied common sense, and even though she was a Martial King, she still didn't have the strength to live so long. The only reason she could was by relying on the special power of the Misty Peak.

That was also clear proof of something: besides raising one's cultivation to achieve longevity, one could also rely on external power.

And if, with Lady Piaomiao's cultivation, she could live so long by relying on the power of the Misty Peak, why could the peak experts from ancient times

not

have survived until now?

“Heh, whether they've survived I don't know, but I do know if there's someone who

has

survived since that era, they will definitely be an extremely horrifying person. It would be fine if they don't show themselves, but if they do, then it would stir up quite a commotion.” Eggy lightly smiled. There was actually yearning on her beautiful little face.

Then, she said, “Continue checking. I have a feeling that there's something extremely powerful left behind here.”

“Mm.” Chu Feng also thought similarly. Without hesitation, he leapt up and continued flying over the vast sea of bones.

As he did so, Chu Feng found several more skeletons of Martial Emperors, and all of them had died by a single strike. Such a scene made the shock in Chu Feng’s heart reach an extreme level.

In his mind’s eye, he could see the overwhelming power of the experts represented by vast sea of bones. When they allied together, they manifested destructive might to fight against a single enemy, yet were slaughtered by that very same person’s might, which resulted in them becoming that very scene.

“What is that?” As he flew above the bones, Chu Feng noticed a black palace at the very end.

Indeed, a black-coloured palace. It was entirely pitch-black, akin to ink, and it was like an enormous sharp sword imbedded into the earth. It was very grand, and at the same time, gave others a majestic feeling—one that prevented any from desecrating such a place.

“Haha, finally, it’s the end! Chu Feng, look! This is the end of the Asura Ghost Tower! If there is anything good in this place, it’s definitely in this palace!” Eggy shouted excitedly.

“Indeed, we’ve reached the end.” Chu Feng first gazed with alert, then discovered there was an invisible Spirit Formation blocking his path behind the palace. As such, he knew this was the end of the Asura Ghost Tower, and also the most important section.

Chu Feng had cast his Spirit Formation outward but was unable to detect anything. The black-coloured palace appeared as if it could block anything and everything. If he wanted to know what was within, he could only enter himself.

After landing onto the ground, Chu Feng found the palace was truly quite huge. In front of it there was a wide path, and on the path there were

square, crystalline black stones. On the sides of the path, there were several statues of soldiers holding large swords.

They wore the same armour, and held the same weapon, but they all looked different. They were very overbearing and were dozens of meters in height. They were like guardians as they stood in rank and order by the sides of the path, protecting the glory of the palace's master.

As he continued on the path, he felt an even stronger feeling of the palace's majesty. Despite being completely black, it was not made out of the same materials. The palace was not all that big, but it gave people a feeling of immensity.

Finally, as he walked along the path, he reached the end, arriving in front of the palace's door. That huge door was at least thirty meters tall, and in the middle there was a special symbol. Chu Feng was unable to determine what it was, but it could be described with a single word: overwhelming.

On the two sides of the door, and above the door, there were several big words written—they were

a couplet

.

Upper part of couplet on the right: "What are the truths in the journey of cultivation? Only I alone devote myself in killing monsters."

Lower part on the left: "In the world under heaven, who is the ruler? I slaughter my way to bring order to the universe."

Above: "Emperor of Massacre"

"Emperor of Massacre? Is that the master of this place?"

When he saw that, Chu Feng's eyes lit up. He could tell, from the font of the couplet, that the person who wrote it was most definitely an expert. Within the strokes, there was clear arrogance and domineeringness. One could see that when he wrote those words, he must have stirred up quite a

scene. Most likely, these words were written by the creator of the Asura Ghost Tower.

“Heh, Chu Feng, quickly go in! There’s definitely treasure inside, but after entering, be careful. Unless the master of this place is oddly generous, he will not let you take his things for no reason at all,” Eggy reminded with both nervousness and excitement.

“Mm.” Chu Feng nodded, then went up and pushed the huge door. After some rumbling, the space between the doors gradually increased, then the door was completely opened.

After pushing open the door, what appeared before Chu Feng’s eyes was a very vast palace. It was enormous, and the decorations and style inside were very exquisite. However, it was the same as the outside—everything was black.

When he walked within the palace, Chu Feng had a feeling of tininess. Although there weren’t treasures within the palace, it seemed that in the perspective of the master, for visitors to walk within the palace was an honour in itself.

But regardless of the palace’s size, there would always be an end. After walking for just a short while, there was an odd light emitted in front of them—it was a forging furnace. Moreover, in front of the forging furnace, there was a sign.

Judging by its font, it was the same as the couplet at the door so it was likely written by the master of this place. As for the content of the sign, it was:

SPIRIT POWER FORGING FURNACE—IT AWAITS ONLY THE FATED.

NON-WORLD SPIRITISTS DO NOT ENTER!

“Spirit Power Forging Furnace? What is this?” Chu Feng asked in confusion.

Eggy was also looking at it carefully. After a good while, she said, “I’m not too sure either, but it should be some sort of formation for training one’s Spirit power. It’s likely it was created by the master of this place, but I don’t know if it is good luck or bad luck. Is it a trap, or is it a rare opportunity? How about you use your Spirit power to examine it?”

But Chu Feng shook his head after hearing Eggy’s words, and said, “It doesn’t work. In front of this furnace, there’s a Spirit Formation. I can’t determine what exactly this furnace is.

“However, there’s a trick to this Spirit Formation. Even though it is invisible, it’s not just a simple obstruction. And since the master of this place is so powerful, if he truly wanted to harm someone, he could have just set up a trap.

“With his strength, he could kill countless people with just a simple one. It would be of no trouble for him to make an inescapable slaughtering formation. There’s no need for him to spend so much effort to create this Asura Ghost Tower, requiring only those with experience to enter this place.

“So, I feel that this is an opportunity. An extremely rare opportunity,” Chu Feng said firmly.

Chapter 839 - Breaking Through the Gate of Life and Death with Intellect

MGA: Chapter 839 - Breaking Through the Gate of Life and Death with Intellect

“Mm, you’re right. Even if it’s dangerous inside, it’s a test. What comes after the test are definitely things greatly beneficial for you.

“You’ve already looked through the entire palace, and the only thing interesting is this Spirit Power Forging Furnace. If there truly is something good in this place, then it can only be this.

“What are you preparing to do now? Do you want to venture in, or retreat?” Eggy asked with a smile.

“Hehe, since I’ve already arrived here, I do want to give it a try. Would you dare as well?” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Hmph. It wouldn’t be me if I didn’t dare. Go in. You can bear the brunt of the blame anyway.” Eggy curled her lips as an expression of yearning and excitement emerged on her beautiful face.

“Don’t worry. I have a feeling that my intuition won’t be wrong. The master of this place wouldn’t have set a trap for no reason. As you said, it will be at most a test, and since we’re here already, why would I fear his test?”

Chu Feng lightly smiled and similar to Eggy, a smile of yearning appeared on his face. Then, he stepped forward and headed towards the Spirit Power Forging Furnace. But before he even came all that close to it, Chu Feng felt his vision distort, and everything around him started to quickly spin.

When everything became silent, Chu Feng couldn't help but tightly furrow his brows as a hint of graveness flashed into his eyes. He thought, "There's indeed something good here, but it won't be that easy to get it. However, that's fine. I've already prepared for this."

The reason Chu Feng had such thoughts was because everything around him had changed. He was no longer within the palace but had entered a cuboid, medium-sized space of Spirit Formations.

There were two doors by the sides, and at the center, there were two people made of wood: one black and one white.

As for the ground, there were rows of words. On the topmost one, there were five:

GATE OF LIFE AND DEATH

Underneath these words, there were the rules on how to deactivate this challenge formation:

Two Spirit Formation gates. One to life, one to death.

Two wood people, and both know which leads to life and which leads to death. However, one only speak truths, and one only speaks lies.

There's only one chance, and you can only choose one of the two wood people, and ask it a single question. As for life and death, it's not up to the heavens. It's up to you.

"How should we ask? Isn't this a bit too difficult? At least tell me which one speaks truths and which one speaks lies!" Eggy couldn't help cursing when she saw the rules.

"If they tell you that, it would be too simple, right?" Chu Feng shook his head as he smiled, and felt they wouldn't have given such an easy challenge.

"Then what should we do now? Rather than asking these two woodheads, why not just choose one yourself? Regardless, we don't know which one

will tell you the correct answer. You can only ask one question, but no matter what they say, you can't believe it. In the end, isn't it just up to fate?" Eggy said as she curled her lips.

"That may not be so." Chu Feng lightly smiled, and without hesitation, he walked towards the white wood person. After coming up to it, Chu Feng pointed at the black wood person before asking the white one, "If I ask it which one is the door of death, how will it reply?"

hmm Immediately after Chu Feng spoke, the body of the white wood person trembled slightly. Then, it exuded a faint aura of life before it pointed at the door on the left, spitting out six words with a stiff and odd tone, "That is the door of death."

"Thank you." Chu Feng smiled, then strode forth, briskly walking straight towards the door of death as pointed by the white wood person.

"Oi, Chu Feng, have you gone mad? That wood person said this is the door of death!" Eggy was terrified by Chu Feng's actions.

However, as if he couldn't hear Eggy's words, he continued moving forward and in the end, without hesitation, stepped into the door of death.

hmm In the instant Chu Feng stepped in, everything in his surroundings twisted and transformed. When it all returned to normal, Chu Feng had returned to the palace and passed the invisible Spirit Formation. Currently, he was standing right in front of the Spirit Power Forging Furnace.

"Waa, we're out! Chu Feng, how did you do it?" At that instant, Eggy was stunned. She could not understand how Chu Feng chose the correct one, and from the "door of death" nonetheless!

"Heh, I didn't think the great intelligent queen would have such a slow-witted moment!" Chu Feng said smugly.

"Ehh... Less of that. I was just too lazy to think about it. Now quickly tell me how you did it!" Eggy quickly asked impatiently.

“This is actually very simple. I pointed at the black wood person and asked the white wood person what the black one’s reply would be if I asked which one was the door of death.

“If the white wood person spoke the truth and the black wood person lied, then the white wood person would definitely point at the door of life and tell me it was the door of death,” Chu Feng explained.

“Why? The white wood person speaks truths, so why did it tell you a lie?” Eggy was even more confused.

“Because I asked what the answer of the
black wood person

would be. It’s the one that speaks lies, so if I ask it, it will tell me a lie and say the door of life is the door of death.

“As for the white wood person, since it speaks truths, it won’t trick me so it will say the exact same answer as the black wood person,” Chu Feng explained.

“But, how are you certain the white wood person speaks truths and the black wood person speaks lies?” Eggy asked quickly again.

“Silly, if it’s swapped and the white wood person speaks lies and the black wood person truths, then the black wood person will tell me which the true door life death is. However, the white wood person must speak lies, so it cannot say the same answer as the black wood person, as it would be a truth. As such, it will still give me the wrong answer,” Chu Feng explained in detail.

“Ah, I understand! It’s not that you took a guess at which spoke truths and which spoke lies, it’s that your question was very tricky. No matter its reply, it will say the wrong answer so as long as you do the opposite you’ll be fine!

“Haha, I’m truly too smart!” When she heard all that, Eggy, the queen, was elated as if it were all analyzed by her. One could tell that she felt really happy to have been able to solve the mystery in her heart.

Chu Feng lightly smiled at Eggy’s reaction. It was in her nature to be so odd, but it was still rather cute.

However, right now, Chu Feng didn’t have the mindset to admire Eggy’s cuteness because after passing through the invisible Spirit Formation, Chu Feng was able to feel the exceptionality of the Spirit Power Forging Furnace at such a close distance.

Chapter 840 - Seeking Quick Gains

MGA: Chapter 840 - Seeking Quick Gains

The Spirit Power Forging Furnace was entirely black. Inside, there was a white flame burning. It looked mysterious, and it was clearly quite peculiar.

After he went near it, the Spirit Power Forging Furnace seemed to have already been completely activated. On its black exterior, rows of light-blue words appeared.

“The Spirit Power Forging Furnace can only be used once, and after entering, it will be fully activated. It can become stronger in accordance to the user’s wish by transforming the flames.

“It’s advised that the one destined here to judge your own abilities correctly. If you cannot continue, please leave the furnace. Do not be greedy, nor be rash and aim for short-term beneficial effects. Otherwise, all of your prior work will be lost completely.

“As expected, it’s for training Spirit power! Moreover, it gives a clear warning. It seems that the master of this Asura Ghost Tower isn’t bad at all,” Chu Feng said quite joyfully.

“Isn’t bad? He’s clearly showing off his high-level techniques to make others revere him.

“Instead of making a formation like this, how much better would it have been to just leave some wealth behind?” Eggy curled her lips. She didn’t seem to be too satisfied with a gift like this.

“Heh, I feel like this is precisely the sincere thoughts of the master. Of course, it would have been good if he had just left some wealth behind, but if he did that, he wouldn’t have been able to test the people who came.

Instead, this Spirit Power Forging Furnace can compensate for such a deficiency.

“To World Spiritists, this Spirit Power Forging Furnace definitely benefits them greatly, and it’s something that can change one’s own strength.

“As for the degree of change, that’ll depend on themselves. I must say that the master of this place is quite skillful.” However, in contrast to Eggy, Chu Feng was very satisfied.

“You know how to feel content with what you have, huh? Since it’s like this, quickly enter. Let me see how long you can stay in the Spirit Power Forging Furnace,” Eggy said with a smile.

“Heh, just wait and see.” Chu Feng smiled, then stepped into the Spirit Power Forging Furnace.

boom Immediately after entering, the white-coloured flames surged up to him like a wave. Not only did they surround Chu Feng, they fiercely attacked him.

Like its introduction, the flames were mysterious. Clearly they were flames, but they lacked any temperature. They were unable to burn Chu Feng’s clothes, and instead, strangely melded into his body, swirling straight towards Chu Feng’s intangible Spirit power.

At that instant, Chu Feng could feel his Spirit power changing slightly with the attacks from the white-coloured flames. His strength was being honed, but the effect wasn’t really noticeable. It was even inferior to his Asura Ghost Axe which he used to constantly train himself.

boom As though feeling Chu Feng’s disappointment, another huge explosion came from the Spirit Power Forging Furnace. The white-coloured flames actually transformed and became grey-coloured flames, which too started to refine Chu Feng’s Spirit power.

“Although it’s almost the same as my Asura Ghost Axe’s effect, it’s still too weak. Can’t you give some power into this?” Chu Feng loudly yelled.

boom Immediately after he spoke, the flames in the Spirit Power Forging Furnace changed once again, and became blue-coloured flames.

At that instant, Chu Feng subconsciously frowned, but joy emerged on his face.

As he was being “burned” by the blue-coloured flames, Chu Feng felt his Spirit power rising quickly in strength. That effect was superior to the effect of his Asura Ghost Axe; however, alongside this training effect Chu Feng also felt some pain. It was akin to countless little needles stabbing here and there on his head.

“Finally, it’s a bit interesting. Do you dare to make it even stronger?” Chu Feng howled excitedly.

boom As Chu Feng desired, the flames of the Spirit Power Forging Furnace turned purple from blue.

“Hmph!”

At that moment, even Chu Feng couldn’t help but tightly furrow his brows. He gritted his teeth, then his legs trembled and with a poof, he knelt onto the ground because in the instant the purple-coloured flames changed, his head started bearing an extremely fierce jab of pain.

That feeling was akin to several sharp blades stabbing again and again at his head. It was extremely difficult to endure.

However, alongside the pain was an effect Chu Feng went ecstatic for. With the attacks of the purple-coloured flames, Chu Feng’s Spirit power was strengthening with a frightening speed.

“Chu Feng, enough. These purple-coloured flames are your limit. Just continue training like this, and your Spirit power will receive a great rise in strength,” Eggy reminded.

“You’re right. These purple-coloured flames do provide great assistance. It can train my Spirit power at a frightening speed, and it isn’t even a

problem for me to receive the power of gold-coloured Spirit Formations.

“However, I will need to train here for a very long time—at least a year. I need to train here endlessly for a year before my Spirit power can reach that stage.

“I can’t wait that long. I don’t have that much time. So, this time, I can only seek a quick gain and take a risk.” Chu Feng at that instant was pale. His forehead was drenched with sweat, but he still, resolutely, yelled, “I want even stronger flames!”

boom

Immediately after he spoke, the golden flames were born. Like ferocious wild beasts, they made ruthless attacks at Chu Feng with deafening roars and horrifying might.

“AHH—”

At that moment, even Chu Feng, who had gone through all sorts of pain, couldn’t help crying out loud. Then, his hands tightly hugged his head and he started rolling to and fro within the Spirit Power Forging Furnace.

Painful. It was too painful. It had reached a nearly unendurable state of pain. It was as if countless small cracks appeared on his brain and insects were consuming him within those cracks.

“Chu Feng, get out, quickly get out! Otherwise, you will die here!” Seeing that Chu Feng could not bear through such agony, Eggy was extremely anxious as she started hysterically yelling.

“No!” But who would have expected Chu Feng to speak those words with gnashed teeth. Not only that, he turned around, and used his fist to ruthlessly punch the ground. He had actually stood up.

However, he did not choose to leave the Spirit Power Forging Furnace. Instead, he sat cross-legged on the ground.

Simultaneously, he held out his hands at the same time and cast a meditation spell. Under such excruciating pain, Chu Feng did not choose to retreat. Instead, he chose to face it and continue bearing the suffering.

He was getting used to such suffering. He

had

to get used to such suffering because only then could he continue enjoying the benefits brought to him by the golden flames.

Chapter 841 - Gold-coloured Spirit Formation

MGA: Chapter 841 - Gold-coloured Spirit Formation

Ten full days had passed since Chu Feng entered the Spirit Power Forging Furnace.

At present, the golden flames inside the furnace were still raging; they were even fiercer than the beginning.

boom Suddenly, there was a ripple within the flames as a person gradually appeared. He was walking slowly towards the exit of the furnace—that person was none other than Chu Feng.

At that moment, his complexion was pale and blue veins bulged everywhere on his body. Strings of blood filled his roundly widened eyes; it could be seen that even though he endured ten days in the Spirit Power Forging Furnace, those ten days were not passed well.

At that moment, every step Chu Feng took was akin to lifting a heavy rock. They required a great excursion of power, but the golden flames still remained unforgiving as they actually increased in strength, continuing to tangle Chu Feng, unwilling to let him go.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng's eyes suddenly glittered as a boundless Spirit Formation power surged out of his body. Like several golden dragons, they spiraled upward—it was golden Spirit Formation power!

As they faced the retaliation of such power, the golden flames was like a hungry wolf that met a tiger. In but an instant, their attacks all dissipated and the flames all backed away. Immediately, the blazing flames within the Spirit Power Forging Furnace became extremely thin, and Chu Feng also successfully stepped out from inside.

“Haha, success! Obtaining the golden Spirit Formation power at the ninth level of the Heaven realm! The harvest here this time is truly not small at all!” Just at that moment, Eggy, who had been in silence for quite a while, couldn’t help cheering.

Retrieving the boundless power he sent out, a smile also appeared on Chu Feng’s face. In the past ten days, he had endured agonizing torture. But luckily, he did not undergo such torture for no gains as he had still received the appropriate reward.

“Senior, thank you for your generous gift.”

Chu Feng couldn’t help turning around, and he expressed his gratitude towards the Spirit Power Forging Furnace.

He was not giving respect to the furnace, but to the master of the Asura Ghost Tower. Chu Feng’s Spirit Formation techniques were already very skillful. And now, with the strengthening of his Spirit power, and obtaining the ability to use golden Spirit Formation power, that made his Spirit Formation techniques rise to another level.

If it were only a battle between Spirit Formation techniques, it was likely no one in the Eastern Sea Region could defeat Chu Feng. One must admit that the gains Chu Feng acquired here were quite bountiful.

And, of course, the reason Chu Feng had such enormous improvements was because of the master of the Asura Ghost Tower. It was the master of the Asura Ghost Tower who left this Spirit Power Forging Furnace behind, which in turn helped Chu Feng obtain power that others did not even dare to believe.

Becoming a Gold-cloak World Spiritist at the ninth level of the Heaven realm. That was indeed not something an ordinary person could do, and it could even be said to be unordinary. However, Chu Feng, with his special body, powerful spirit, and unyielding perseverance, had done it.

However, it was still because of the master of the Asura Ghost Tower that Chu Feng could achieve what he did. Although Chu Feng did pass through

tests and fought for this power himself, as they say, “Recognize the favours given and repay them appropriately.” Chu Feng was a person who knew that.

Right now, the master of the Asura Ghost Tower was not here, so Chu Feng could only give his salutations and gratitude facing nothing.

“So it can indeed only be used once, huh.”

After the thanks, Chu Feng raised his head. He discovered that the flames inside the Spirit Power Forging Furnace had already been completely extinguished. Even the black-coloured body of the furnace became illusory. As stated by the sign, the Spirit Power Forging Furnace was disappearing.

rumble rumble rumble...

Just at that moment, the ground underneath Chu Feng’s feet swayed left and right. Quickly after, the entire palace started swaying. Countless cracks spread from the palace, and they became larger and larger. Shattered rocks of various sizes endlessly fell from the cracks above—the palace was actually collapsing.

Chu Feng slightly frowned when he saw that. He quickly started flying with his tired body and rushed out of the palace.

However, after flying out, the uneasiness in Chu Feng’s eyes became even stronger because only after coming outside did he realize the cracking was not limited to the palace alone, but to the entire world.

The mountains, rivers, creeks, sky, earth, and even space itself was collapsing.

“This is bad. The master of this formation set a self-destruction system! After the destined person receives what he left behind, this Asura Ghost Tower will be destroyed. Quick! Quickly leave this place, or you too will disappear with everything in here!” Even Eggy started panicking when she saw that.

Naturally, Chu Feng dared not hesitate as he quickly used the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique. He became an azure stream of light and speedily flew out from the path he entered.

On the journey back, Chu Feng couldn't help sweeping his gaze over the vast ocean of bones. And when he thought of the fact that the former super-experts were about to completely disappear alongside this Asura Ghost Tower, there was an unspeakable emotion in Chu Feng's heart.

However, right now, he didn't have time to think that much because the most important thing right now was escaping.

Luckily, Chu Feng was successful in fleeing before the Asura Ghost Tower collapsed.

boom

Shortly after Chu Feng stepped out of the Asura Ghost Tower, a huge explosion echoed out and the tower broke completely apart. First, it became countless fragments, then it became minuscule dust particles before disappearing entirely.

The Asura Ghost Tower in the Nine Provinces' Spirit Province that had stood for over ten thousand years had disappeared just like that.

“Lord Chu Feng, what happened here? Why has the Asura Ghost Tower disappeared?”

After hearing the deafening sound, the experts of the World Spirit Guild hurried over. However, when they arrived, they just happened to see the scene of the Asura Ghost Tower's destruction.

All of them tightly furrowed their brows as their complexions distorted greatly. They were all terrified by that scene.

To them, the Asura Ghost Tower was a treasure they had guarded for many years. Back then, it was precisely because of this Asura Ghost Tower that they were in conflict with the Jie clan.

One could even say the Asura Ghost Tower was the most precious thing to their World Spirit Guild, yet right now, it was actually destroyed. They truly didn't know what to do.

“It's not related to any of you. The creator just felt there was no more need for its existence.” Chu Feng calmly smiled, then said, “Don't guard this place anymore. Follow me. Without the Asura Ghost Tower, there's no need for any of you to stay here.”

“This...” When they heard those words, those people lowered their heads in silence. They were in a very conflicting situation.

“Don't worry. I will explain to Senior Gu Tianchen what happened here. I guarantee they will not make anything difficult for you.” Chu Feng saw the reason of their internal conflict.

“Then thank you, Lord Chu Feng.” The experts of the World Spirit Guild were elated when they heard that. They hurriedly clasped their hands at Chu Feng, bowing and expressing their gratitude.

The reason they stayed behind was for the Asura Ghost Tower. Now, since it was gone, naturally there was no need for them to remain.

However, due to orders, they didn't dare to leave despite knowing the continent of the Nine Provinces was dangerous. But since Chu Feng had spoken now, they could escape the upcoming calamity.

After all, they knew Chu Feng was now an actual powerful and influential person. In the Nine Provinces at present, who dared to not give Chu Feng face? Even their old ancestor of the World Spirit Guild, Gu Tianchen, was merely an insignificant person when compared to Chu Feng.

Chapter 842 - Uneasiness

MGA: Chapter 842 - Uneasiness

After the destruction of the Asura Ghost Tower, there was no one remaining within the Spirit Province who required Chu Feng's worry.

So, leading a group of experts, he left.

However, he did not leave the continent of the Nine Provinces immediately. He first returned to the Azure Province.

The reason he returned was naturally because of the Imperial Tomb. At first, Chu Feng prepared to enter and visit Qiu Canfeng. First, to report the situation in the Eastern Sea Region, and also hoping he could give him some sort of advice.

However, after entering, Chu Feng discovered that the Imperial Tomb was truly too profound. After a while, the traps that had been broken through by Huangfu Haoyue had already repaired themselves. Naturally, Chu Feng did not dare to challenge those horrifying Spirit Formation.

As he could do nothing else, Chu Feng had no choice but to give it up. However, before leaving, he did not forget to lay another Concealment Formation in front of the Imperial Tomb's entrance, in case there were experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago who'd come and discover this place.

Actually, the Imperial Tomb being discovered was not too important, but if Qiu Canfeng were discovered that would not be good at all.

Although Qiu Canfeng, his so-called master, didn't give Chu Feng too much of an assistance, he was still his master. Chu Feng hoped nothing would happen to him.

After a few more events, Chu Feng finally brought the experts from the World Spirit Guild to the new residence of the people from the Nine Provinces. It was a land named as the Desolate Continent.

The Desolate Continent wasn't truly desolate. On the continent, there were still quite a few people living there, but there were very few cultivation experts. There were even fewer sects and things such as those, so that was why it was named by the other continents as one of the most degenerated continents.

That was also why the continent wasn't attention-grabbing. It was even ignored by some, so Chu Feng chose to relocate everyone to this place.

As such, with the assistance of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, the people from the continent of the Nine Provinces had now properly set themselves up in the Desolate Continent.

They didn't carry out any large-scale construction such as building cities in places where there were many people and instead, chose to live hiddenly deep in mountains and forests where there were Monstrous Beasts—places others didn't dare to enter.

Although many felt discomfort due to leaving their homeland, after Chu Feng returned, the crowd swept away their dispirited emotions and all of them were excited. To them, Chu Feng was not only a peak expert, he was also a person who saved them all—a huge hero in their hearts.

And since Chu Feng was in a hurry to relocate his relatives and friends, he simply didn't even have a good meal with the crowd. So, on the day he returned, a banquet was held just for him. He ate and toasted with many friends and seniors from the Azure Dragon School, the World Spirit Guild, and the Jiang Dynasty.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, are you still going to return to the Eastern Sea Region? Don't go! Right now, it is too dangerous there.”

“Yeah! Junior Chu Feng, in my perspective, how about you just stay with us and hide here for a while! When we brothers all become Martial Lords,

we can just directly walk onto the Heavenly Road and take a look at that Holy Land of Martialism.”

“Yeah! Chu Feng, Brother Wushang and Senior Zhang are correct. Since you’ve already saved Sister Zi Ling, why not just bring her family here and peacefully cultivate with us!” During the banquet, Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, Su Rou, and Su Mei, the people close to Chu Feng, all urged him not to return to the Eastern Sea Region.

And when others heard about that, nearly everyone cast their gazes at Chu Feng. There was even a bit of pleading and urging in their eyes—all of them hoped Chu Feng would stay.

After the relocation, they too had learnt about the Eastern Sea Region from the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. They already knew that the Immortal Execution Archipelago put up wanted posters everywhere for Chu Feng.

“Zi Ling has indeed been saved, and a huge stone in my heart has finally disappeared.

“However, the Crippling Night Demon Sect has treated me well. I cannot just hide myself when the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago prepare to start a war.” However, Chu Feng resolutely shook his head at the crowd’s gazes, then firmly said, “I must return.”

“But…” At that instant, Su Rou and Su Mei wanted to say something.

“Little Rou, Little Mei, just leave it be. Men are like this. Don’t be softhearted and advise him to be unloyal.” But just at that moment, the Azure Dragon Founder spoke.

Moreover, as he spoke, he stood up, raised his wine glass, and said, “Chu Feng, go ahead. A good man should not fear risks and he should fight even in the most desperate of situations. We will await your return. I’m sure when you do, you will become even stronger. That Immortal Execution Archipelago will also definitely not defeat you.”

“Chu Feng, we support you! Go, do what you want! No matter when, we will support you to the very end!” After the Azure Dragon Founder spoke, the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty, Zhuge Liuyun, and the others all raised their glasses. The seniors all toasted towards Chu Feng

“Seniors, thank you. I will definitely not disappoint any of you.” When he saw that, Chu Feng felt greatly moved. He quickly rose and toasted the crowd.

Since even the many seniors of the continent of the Nine Provinces spoke, there was no one who urged Chu Feng to stay behind any longer. They only chose to support Chu Feng.

However, after Chu Feng insisted on leaving, Su Rou, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi wanted to join the Crippling Night Demon Sect regardless of what they had to do, and fight shoulder-to-shoulder with Chu Feng when they returned to the Eastern Sea Region.

Naturally, Chu Feng didn't wish for them to do that, but he could not stop the four of them the same way they could not stop himself. In the end, Chu Feng could only choose to compromise. Bringing the four of them, and the army of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, they all returned to the Eastern Sea Region.

Before arriving, the army of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, with their ten warships, split up with Chu Feng and the others. From what they said, the war between the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago had already begun, so they had to quickly enter the battlefield.

As for Chu Feng, he was a very important person who required protection from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Yet, due to the war, all the experts who had showed themselves were fighting so there was simply no one who could protect him.

So, back then when Chu Feng led the army back to the continent of the Nine Provinces, the Earth King had told him there was no need to care

about the army after handling the matter at the continent of the Nine Provinces. It would be fine for them to return on their own.

Moreover, before Chu Feng received any orders, he could not rashly face the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, nor could he go find them himself. So, the Earth King advised him to go to the Misty Peak. With Lady Piaomiao's protection, the Earth King and the other Crippling Night Demon Sect experts could be more at ease.

In reality, even if the Earth King didn't say those things, the place Chu Feng wanted to go the most was still the Misty Peak. First, it was because Zi Ling was there so he wanted to know how went the development of the cure for Zi Ling's Heaven Gripping Pellet.

Second, even though he promised Jiang Wushang and the others they could enter the Crippling Night Demon Sect and fight shoulder-by-shoulder with him, Chu Feng wouldn't let them die for nothing. As such, since he could not guarantee their safety, it was the best choice to bring them to the Misty Peak.

However, just as Chu Feng arrived at the entrance, he was met immediately by the guardians of the Misty Peak, and they brought him to Lady Piaomiao.

Seeing she was looking for him with such urgency, Chu Feng started feeling uneasy. He felt that something had happened.

Chapter 843 - Good News

MGA: Chapter 843 - Good News

“Senior, what urgent matter does Lady Piaomiao need me for?” Chu Feng asked.

“I don’t know. Lady Piaomiao only told us guards to immediately bring you to the Peak of Myriad Illusions after you’ve returned.”

“The

Four Seasons

aren’t here?” When he heard the Peak of Myriad Illusions, Chu Feng’s expression changed slightly. He knew that peak was one of the most important peaks and normally only they and Lady Piaomiao could enter. Others were forbidden from nearing it.

Typically speaking, Chun Wu would bring him to a forbidden land like this, yet right now, Lady Piaomiao had such a normal guard bring him over. He had a feeling that something was wrong and subconsciously felt that Chun Wu and the others were possibly not here.

“Lady Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, and Dong Xue are not here.” The guide shook his head. Indeed, it was the same as Chu Feng’s guess.

“Senior, do you know what they are doing?” Chu Feng quickly asked.

“Lord Chu Feng, I truly don’t know this. Please forgive me.” The guide had a very awkward face. It didn’t seem like he was not telling Chu Feng and really did look like he knew nothing.

Chu Feng didn’t continue asking, but there were some thoughts in his mind. Since Lady Piaomiao needed to see him with such urgency,

something definitely happened. Otherwise, judging by her nature, she wouldn't have done that.

After arriving at the Peak of Myriad Illusions, Chu Feng discovered the scenery there was quite beautiful. However, on the entire peak, there was only a single tower. Its shape was normal, but there were several colours. The colours interweaved with one another and endless changed. It was very mystical and also extremely beautiful.

“Lord Chu Feng, Lady Piaomiao is waiting for you inside.” The guide didn't dare to enter. He stopped three meters away from the tower.

“Mm.” Chu Feng nodded, then came up to the tower. He could see that it was a rather impressive tower. Not only was it constructed with special materials, it was even reinforced by a powerful Spirit Formation. If it were sealed, even he could not open it. However, since it was not sealed, Chu Feng gave a light push and the doors opened.

When he entered the tower, Chu Feng saw Lady Piaomiao. At that moment, her eyes were shut tight and she was sitting cross-legged. She was channeling power into a formation.

It was a Refining Formation. Within the formation, there were all sorts of odd ingredients being refined and merged together. Lady Piaomiao was concocting a pellet, and at that moment, judging by the quality of the materials within the formation, Chu Feng knew it was an extremely impressive pellet.

“You've come back. Have things been handled sufficiently well?” Lady Piaomiao didn't open her eyes but knew Chu Feng had come.

“Senior Piaomiao, thank you for your concern. Things have been handled well,” Chu Feng replied truthfully.

“Mm. Don't need to be anxious. I called you over so hurriedly is actually because I have good news. I've already found the method to destroy the effects of the Heaven Gripping Pellet. The thing I'm concocting right now is the cure,” Lady Piaomiao said.

When he heard those words, Chu Feng was elated. He quickly expressed his gratitude. “Thank you Senior!”

“However, don’t be happy too soon. Whether this method will work or not I am uncertain, but there will always be risks. Although Zi Ling herself is willing to take the risk and receive this medicine, as the closest person to her, you must be prepared mentally,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Instead of letting Zi Ling become a cripple, it’s better to look for some opportunities. I respect Zi Ling’s choice.” Chu Feng didn’t mind risks because he knew since Zi Ling agreed, it meant she didn’t want to become a useless person. She wanted to retrieve the power that belonged to her, and Chu Feng had the same thoughts.

“Mm.” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, Lady Piaomiao nodded. Then, she said, “However, there are truly too many required ingredients for this cure. Some of them cannot even be found in the Misty Peak, so I’ve already instructed Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, Dong Xue, and Yan Ruyun to go down the peak and search for them. The harvests are quite good.

“But, the core medicine I entrusted Lady Qiushui to search for has not been brought back yet. With her strength and abilities, to procure this medicine should be of no trouble and she should have come back already, but she has yet to return. I don’t know if there’s been a change in circumstances so I’m a bit worried.

“However, right now, I need to focus on concocting this medicine and I cannot leave. So, I want you to help me see why Lady Qiushui hasn’t come back yet.”

“Then... what is Lady Qiushui looking for, and where can it be found?” Chu Feng quickly asked. He was also a bit worried when he heard Lady Piaomiao’s words.

“What Lady Qiushui is looking for is the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix. It is found in the old location of the Burning Heaven Church; however, at the entrance, there are profound slaughtering formations. Normal people cannot enter, so I want you to go take a look. After all, with

the Spirit Formation techniques you possess, I do feel relatively at ease. Even if you cannot pass through the formations, at least you can retreat with everything intact,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“I am willing to investigate what happened.” Chu Feng nodded his head and decisively agreed.

Putting aside the fact that this was related to Zi Ling, Qiushui Fuyan was doing this to help him and Zi Ling. And, with her cultivation and status, she should have returned quickly if she went to the old address of the Burning Heaven Church to procure something. Yet, right now, she still hadn't returned. Not to mention that Lady Piaomiao was worried, Chu Feng was worried as well.

“Mm. The entrance to the Burning Heaven Church is at the Winter Plains. Go find Zi Ling and let her know that you've returned. Cast away your worries, and go to the Winter Plains. However, remember, if you cannot pass the slaughtering formation, do not force it. Know your own strength.”

As Lady Piaomiao spoke, she opened her eyes. With one palm, she drew a map in the air. It was a map of the Winter Plains, and on it was the entrance of the Burning Heaven Church.

However, she only recorded the location of the entrance but not the method of deactivating the slaughtering formation.

“Then, I'll take my leave.” After memorizing the map, Chu Feng left the tower. After he left, he discovered that the guide was still standing on the spot, waiting for him.

“Senior, do you know where Zi Ling is?” Chu Feng asked.

“Lady Piaomiao had instructed me already. Lord Chu Feng, follow me.” The guide moved and started leading Chu Feng to another peak.

That peak was very beautiful; it was even superior to the Peak of Myriad Illusions. It could be said to be one of the most beautiful peaks on the Misty Peak, and on that peak, there was an extremely beautiful palace. The

palace didn't have any aura of ancientness—it was completely new. Evidently, Lady Piaomiao had that specially built for Zi Ling.

Outside the palace, there was beautiful person raising her head and looking. After seeing Chu Feng, she quickly flew over. That person was Zi Ling.

“Lord Chu Feng, I'll take my leave.” After leading the way, the guide left on his own accord.

“Chu Feng, you've finally returned! Why have you left for so long? I was so worried for you! Are Sister Su Rou and Su Mei well? Why don't I see them with you?” Joy filled Zi Ling's face when she saw Chu Feng. It could be seen that in the past days, she was always worried about Chu Feng.

Chapter 844 - Winter Plains

MGA: Chapter 844 - Winter Plains

“Don’t worry, everything’s good. Su Rou and Su Mei have come to the Misty Peak, and even Brother Wushang and Senior Zhang have come. They are being escorted to their residences right now,” Chu Feng replied with a smile.

“Really? Bring me to see them!” Zi Ling was elated when she heard Chu Feng’s words. She dragged Chu Feng and ran down the peak, impatient to see Su Rou and Su Mei.

Being led by the guide, Chu Feng and Zi Ling soon arrived at the residence of Su Rou and Su Mei. Because Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi’s residence hadn’t been arranged yet, the two of them were there as well.

Since Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi both knew Zi Ling already and their relationship was quite good, after seeing her, they were chatting quite naturally. That was something one would expect.

On the other hand, Su Rou and Su Mei had been in a coma before. They had only heard Chu Feng talk about Zi Ling but they had never truly seen her.

One would expect that after seeing Zi Ling, they should feel a bit distant. However, there was not even a tiny bit of unfamiliarity. Not only was there none from them, there was none from Zi Ling.

The three beauties were like sisters who had known each other for a long time. They chatted merrily, and even laughed joyfully. They completely cast Chu Feng, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi onto the side, ignoring them.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, to be honest, I truly feel a bit of admiration towards you.” Seeing the three beauties talking to each other in harmony,

Jiang Wushang spoke with a smile. His words were also full of teasing.

“Not only do

you

feel admiration,

I

also feel admiration! Thinking back then in the Azure Dragon School, I was still quite a character. Oh, how many beauties expressed their love towards me! Although I said I wasn't finding a partner, I still clearly remember that of the women I knew, only Junior Su Rou's heart wasn't moved by me.

“At that time, I even thought she was the same as me: devoting herself in the pursuit for cultivation, so much she didn't even want to bother with men.

“But now, I know I was wrong. It wasn't that Junior Su Rou wholeheartedly devoted herself to cultivation, it was just that I didn't have enough charm! After Junior Chu Feng entered the Azure Dragon School, Junior Su Rou was quickly attracted by him.

“Not only was she conquered by you, even her sister, Little Su Mei, was conquered by you!

“Ah, even the legendary Divine Body Lady Zi Ling was conquered by you. And these three beauties even love you so much! Sigh, in this world, probably any man would admire you, Junior Chu Feng,” Zhang Tianyi said strangely as he smirked.

As he faced the teasing from his two good brothers, there was only a happy smile on Chu Feng's face. He knew to have three loving beauties who would even sacrifice their lives for him was his great fortune. He had to treasure them well.

After the short meetup, Chu Feng had no choice but to leave. Even though he was extremely unwilling to in his heart, Zi Ling, Su Mei, and Su Rou, who were all considerate, didn't hold him back.

On the other hand, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang wanted to head out with Chu Feng, but this journey required him to break through a slaughtering formation. Chu Feng didn't know what it looked like, so he didn't know if he could protect the two or not.

And so long as they imagined they wouldn't be of any help and instead possibly a burden, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang also chose to remain on the Misty Peak.

As for Chu Feng, he had no choice but to step on the journey filled with unknown, alone.

“I truly hope there will be one day I can give him a hand, so he won't need to do everything on his own,” Zhang Tianyi said in a low voice as he looked in the direction of Chu Feng's departure.

“I have the same thoughts of course, but even with the Imperial Bloodline, it seems that it'll be very difficult to catch up to him.” Jiang Wushang on the side also had a face full of helplessness.

“Actually, that may not be so. Junior Chu Feng told me his real cultivation right now is only the ninth level of the Heaven realm. He's only a rank three Martial Lord because of his special power.

“Now, I have a slight feeling that I will make a breakthrough soon. As long as I am successful, my cultivation will be the exact same as Junior Chu Feng! Moreover, with the strength I currently possess, as long as I can step into the ninth level of the Heaven realm, I can even put up a fight against a rank one Martial Lord.

“If I become a Martial Lord, I will be able to comprehend even stronger power from my Forbidden Mysterious Technique. At that time, perhaps I won't be as heavy as a burden as I am right now.” As Zhang Tianyi spoke, a hint of yearning emerged onto the face.

“Big Brother Tianyi, I didn’t expect this to be such a coincidence! Recently, I’ve also felt I’ll make a breakthrough soon! How about... we have a race and see who makes the breakthrough first?” Jiang Wushang said with a smile.

“Any time!” Zhang Tianyi also laughed. He was elated when he imagined he would catch up to Chu Feng. This was not really a serious contest; they just hoped they could fight together with their brother and not always hide behind Chu Feng’s protection.

Chu Feng of course knew nothing of their plans. Going through the Teleportation Array at the Misty Peak, it sent him straight to the Winter Plains, and since that Teleportation Array wasn’t controlled by the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Chu Feng didn’t need to worry about meeting any enemies.

But, just in case, Chu Feng still used the Transformational Mask to change his appearance. After all, wanted posters of himself had been interspersed about the Eastern Sea Region. He also didn’t know whether the people at the Winter Plains knew his appearance, nor did he know whether they were enemies or allies. So, it was still better to disguise himself.

After a long journey within the Teleportation Array, the exit finally appeared in front of Chu Feng. After stepping out, a blinding white light shone into his eyes.

The Winter Plains was indeed as its name suggested. Ice and snow were endless and everywhere, covering the soil deep underneath themselves. Moreover, the sky was gloomy and it was snowing heavily.

Although the cold air could not harm Chu Feng’s body, after seeing such a freezing scene, there was a mental effect on Chu Feng’s heart; he couldn’t help but feel a bit chilly.

“Quick! Quickly go! If we’re late, we’ll miss a great fight!”

“Who’s come out?”

“They’ve all come out! The head of the Stone Sword Sect, many of their elders, and even their core disciples have all come out! This will definitely be a huge battle, and a great show that cannot be missed!”

Suddenly, there were rowdy noises coming ahead. At the same time, several people flew over. There seemed to be something lively there to watch.

The world of martial cultivation had never been peaceful. Battles between sects were the most common, and since Chu Feng had business in hand, he didn’t want to nose into anything.

Especially so since he was not far from the entrance of the Burning Heaven Church, Chu Feng didn’t care what was happening. Instead, he went the opposite direction of the liveliness, impatient in wanting to enter the Burning Heaven Church and see if Qiushui Fuyan was there or not.

If she wasn’t, then Chu Feng would personally search for the so-called Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix at the old address of the Burning Heaven Church. When she drew the entrance of the Burning Heaven Church, Lady Piaomiao also drew the image of the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix.

Clearly, Lady Piaomiao also hoped if Chu Feng were unable to find Qiushui Fuyan, he would directly bring back the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix to the Misty Peak.

swish swish swish But shortly after Chu Feng flew, there were several more people who flew in front of him. After hearing their discussions, Chu Feng’s heart trembled and his expression changed slightly. He couldn’t help stopping his forwarding steps and stood in the air, carefully listening to their words.

Chapter 845 - Stone Sword Sect

MGA: Chapter 845 - Stone Sword Sect

“Doesn’t this mean the Stone Sword Sect truly went over to the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s side, and is making the Crippling Night Demon Sect an enemy?”

“Right now, the Stone Sword Sect is fighting people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect! That is absolutely true!”

“Hurry, quickly! If we’re late, we’ll miss out on a good show!”

The people were rushing over. They flew over as they chatted, and simply didn’t even give Chu Feng a glance. They flew past him, clearly in a great hurry.

However, after Chu Feng heard their conversation, he could not remain a bystander.

“People from the Crippling Night Demon Sect?” Chu Feng had never heard of the Stone Sword Sect, but from what they said, this Stone Sword Sect seemed to be truly fighting members from the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

If the Stone Sword Sect were fighting with others, then Chu Feng wouldn’t even bother interfering. However, they were fighting against the sect he himself belonged to. As such, Chu Feng could not ignore it.

So, he turned around and tailed those people. He flew towards the battle to see what exactly was happening.

Indeed, a few thousand miles away from the Teleportation Array, a villa was filled with corpses. Blood formed rivers, and outside the villa, there was a frightening battle in progress.

There were two groups. One group had a rather large number of people—they wore robes, held stone swords, and were laying a formation, surrounding ten or so people within.

Of the surrounded people, there were males, females, old, and young. There was also a varying level of cultivation strength—it was quite incongruous. There were Martial Lords, and also experts in the Heaven realm. There were even children who hadn't started cultivation.

However, of the surrounding people, there were not only over a hundred people holding stone swords, they were also all Martial Lords.

Both sides were exchanging blows, and of the smaller group, there were only three Martial Lords who were suitable for fighting out of the entire group. Even though their strengths were quite outstanding, they were in a great disadvantage since they had to protect their companions and consider attacks from all directions. They were constantly taking steps back.

And other than that ongoing battle, there was another at the distant sky. There were two old men, and their cultivations were both of a rank seven Martial Lord. Moreover, their fighting strength could truly shock the heavens and the earth—it was quite intense.

“That is truly the head of the Stone Sword Sect! However, isn't that the Nine-fingered Old Man fighting him? Weren't the people killed by the Stone Sword Sect from the Nine-fingered Villa?”

“The Nine-fingered Old Man and the head of the Stone Sword Sect have always been close friends! Why are they now fighting to the death? So many people died from the Nine-fingered Villa... They weren't all slaughtered by the Stone Sword Sect, right?”

“What's happening? Wasn't it said that the Stone Sword Sect is fighting against the experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect? Why has it become an internal battle between the Stone Sword Sect and the Nine-fingered Villa?” Many locals frowned slightly after seeing such a scene, revealing confused expressions.

“None of you know this, huh? The Nine-fingered Old Man and the others are all members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! However, since they hid it so well before, no one had ever known,” said a person smugly who knew what exactly was happening.

“What? So the Nine-fingered Old Man and his family were actually members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! However, the head of the Stone Sword Sect is clearly good friends with the Nine-fingered Old Man! The old man had even brought experts from the Nine-fingered Villa and fought against enemies many times alongside the head of the Stone Sword Sect, yet he still has the heart to attack the Nine-fingered Old Man and the others?” The observers were stunned.

“The head of the Stone Sword Sect has wanted to join the Immortal Execution Archipelago for quite a while already, but they had never viewed such a small sect like the Stone Sword Sect with any importance. However, if the Stone Sword Sect kills the Nine-fingered Old Man and his family, then they would have accomplished something great! Not only would they receive an enormous power to rely on, they would even receive a splendid reward!

“As they say, ‘If you don’t think for your interests first, you won’t be able to survive.’ The head of the Stone Sword Sect chose to point his blade at his brother in the face of power and wealth. This is not something that can be blamed on him completely,” some said.

“However, the Nine-fingered Old Man treated the head of the Stone Sword Sect like family! Yet now, he is actually doing this?! It is too unloyal and unrighteous,” said another. There were many others who felt furious.

“Shh, quiet! If the Stone Sword Sect hears you, a disaster will fall upon your head!” Seeing that person’s displeasure, there was a good friend of his who kindly advised him to be quieter; otherwise, he would possibly be killed.

At that instant, Chu Feng had also went near and coincidentally heard their discussions. At that moment, since the Nine-fingered Old Man and his

family were all wearing casual clothing, Chu Feng could not determine whether they were members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

So, Chu Feng was left no choice but to use the Heaven's Eyes to examine them.

Before the Heaven's Eyes, all things were shown bare. In spite of the clothes, Chu Feng was still able to see their backs. As expected, the Nine-fingered Old Man's family who were currently surrounded and attacked by the Stone Sword Sect—with the exception of children—all had a black incomplete moon on their backs. They were indeed members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“Shi Jingtian, I viewed you as a brother and told you my secret of being from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Yet now, you aim to kill me, and want to slaughter my entire family! Today, I will tear your corpse into a million pieces, otherwise the hatred in my heart will eternally remain!”

At that moment, the Nine-fingered Old Man held an Elite Armament blade. He was enraged; every single strike and attack he made were aimed to kill.

“Haha, Jiu Zhi[1], I'm afraid you won't have the chance to do that.”

However, the head of the Stone Sword Sect did not show any weakness either. Although the Elite Armament in his hand was odd—it was a stone sword—as it swirled with light, its aura was extraordinary. While fighting against the Nine-fingered Old Man, radiance shone in all directions and shock waves swept out uncontrollably. It shocked everyone watching, and neither one of them was superior to the other.

Although the two of them were unable to determine who would win, the family of the Nine-fingered Old Man were an entire case completely. They were not in a good situation at all. Even though the strongest experts in the Nine-fingered Villa—other than the Nine-fingered Old Man—were within the remaining group, when they faced the surrounding attack of so many elders and disciples from the Stone Sword Sect, they were forced to exert an enormous amount of strength. Slowly, they were being defeated.

“Jiu Zhi, if you don’t defeat me soon, your family will be completely killed! Even if you can escape, I’m sure there’s no point in surviving all alone, right?”

“Ahh, look! Your grandson’s aptitude in cultivation is quite excellent, and in the future, he will definitely become a cultivation genius. However, quite sadly, no matter how much better his foundations are, he is still too young. Before he even has a chance to cultivate, he will die! That is truly a shame. Haha...” As the head of the Stone Sword Sect fiercely attacked, he mocked the Nine-fingered Old Man.

“I will kill you!”

When he heard those words and saw the corpses of his relatives which were strewn across the ground below, and then saw his weeping grandson who hid behind his surviving family as well as his children who were drenched with blood, fighting ferociously, the Nine-fingered Old Man gnashed his teeth in fury. His entire body trembled, and after an enraged roar, he once again attacked with everything he had.

“Haha, it seems that you’re truly desperate now! However, you won’t have the chance to save them.” The head of the Stone Sword Sect laughed more and more madly. Then, he howled, “You trash, what are you still hesitating for? A hundred people can’t defeat a dozen?”

“Quickly end their little lives. No matter gender or age, kill them all! I will reward those who can take down their heads!”

“KILL—” After hearing those words, the people from the Stone Sword Sect acted as if they had

chicken blood injected into them

,

as they started sending their most powerful attacks. With such a fierce bearing, they surrounded and attacked. They fought to behead the heads of

the Nine-fingered Old Man's family. Even children barely several years old were not spared of their strikes.

As they faced such an attack, the family of the Nine-fingered Old Man all had deadpan faces. They knew, in a situation like this, they no longer had a chance at surviving. They couldn't help but give up on resisting.

“All of you truly deserve to die!”

However, in that absolutely crucial moment, a shout filled with bloodlust exploded in the air. At the same time, an extremely boundless aura surged forth. An immense horrifying bloodlust also descended from the sky, surrounding the battlefield, oppressing everyone from the Stone Sword Sect.

Chapter 846 - It's Chu Feng

MGA: Chapter 846 - It's Chu Feng

“Who?” The sudden change of events drew out surprise to those from the Stone Sword Sect. Only after raising their heads did they discover a young man. He was weaponless, but had the might of a rank three Martial Lord. Moreover, an aura full of bloodlust was engulfing them.

“Swords up, attack!”

Seeing the unfavourable change in circumstances, the people from the Stone Sword Sect quickly changed their positioning. They gave up on attacking the Nine-fingered Old Man’s family, and instead, with raised stone swords, started to attack Chu Feng.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

A hundred swords faced the sky, its might endless. The atmosphere surrounding their attack was even fiercer than before when they were attacking the Nine-fingered Old Man’s family.

boom However, Chu Feng opened his palm, and struck downward. The swords of light shot from the stone swords were all shattered by that single palm attack, and they all dissipated in the air.

Not only did it completely shatter their attack, even the stone swords in their hands shattered.

Of all the experts from the Stone Sword Sect, the ones with relatively powerful strength spat out blood and fell onto the ground. The ones with relatively weak strength exploded immediately, thus dying.

“Heavens! Who is that person? With only one strike, he completely defeated the Runic Stone Sword Formation laid by the peak experts of the Stone Sword Sect?”

When they saw that, the observers were all shocked. They, who were initially watching the battle between Nine-fingered Old Man and the head of the Stone Sword Sect, now all cast their gazes towards Chu Feng and the others.

In fact, even the two of them who were in an intense battle, fighting to the death, cast their gazes over. After they saw the killed and wounded elders and disciples of the Stone Sword Sect, both of their complexions changed greatly.

“Who are you? There is no enmity between you and my Stone Sword Sect. Why have you attacked us?” shouted the head of the Stone Sword Sect in a rage.

Those who fell by Chu Feng’s attack, no matter elder or disciple, were the elites of his Stone Sword Sect. Yet now, they were all heavily injured—and even killed—by him. He, the head of the Stone Sword Sect, had truly received quite severe losses by such an attack, so naturally, he was enraged.

However, seeing Chu Feng’s age and strength, he felt that he had a special origin. As such, he didn’t attack immediately and first asked him instead.

He wasn’t the only one who had such a question. Nearly everyone closely looked at Chu Feng, desiring to learn of his origin and thus the origin of his strength.

“Hmph.” Chu Feng snorted at that question, then raised his arm, covering his face with his sleeve, and when he dropped his arm, his countenance had transformed to its original appearance. Then, he said with a light smile, “Do you know who I am?”

“Heavens! It’s him?” After seeing Chu Feng’s face, almost everyone’s expression changed greatly. They couldn’t help but deeply gasp from the heavy shock they felt.

At present, in the Eastern Sea Region, there were drawings of Chu Feng posted almost everywhere. And since his name had already spread

throughout the Eastern Sea Region, after his wanted poster appeared, everyone went to look at it immediately. They wanted to know the appearance of such an outstanding genius.

As a result, in this very time and day, virtually everyone in the Eastern Sea Region knew Chu Feng's appearance. And now, since Chu Feng revealed it, the crowd naturally recognized him in an instant.

“You... You're Chu Feng?” The head of the Stone Sword Sect tightly furrowed his brows as a hint of uneasiness emerged into his eyes.

The rumours regarding Chu Feng were quite impressive in the Eastern Sea Region, especially when regarding the battle of the Zi family at the Flower Valley. That was something the entire Eastern Sea Region knew.

Chu Feng not only killed the patriarch of the Zi family, he even killed two rank seven Martial Lords from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

If that rumour were true, then the head of the Stone Sword Sect, as a rank seven Martial Lord, naturally had a disaster heading his way. Even if he didn't want to be afraid, he couldn't.

“Since you know who I am, why ask?” Chu Feng sneered, then loudly said, “Your tiny Stone Sword Sect truly has quite the nerve! You dare to attack members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect? Do you not know you've committed an enormity, worthy of the destruction of your entire sect?”

After hearing Chu Feng's words, the brows of the head of the Stone Sword Sect were furrowed even tighter. The uneasiness in his eyes became even stronger, but after a short moment of blankness, he suddenly started laughing abnormally.

“In the instant I started attacking the Nine-fingered Old Man, I knew very well I would be an enemy to the Crippling Night Demon Sect in the future. So, I have already expected this to happen.

“However, if the one who came here today was an expert of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, then I would not be able to do anything. But you... a

hairless brat like you... I feel no fear.

“Right now, the world speaks of you like some sort of divine being. But I don’t believe you can defeat experts with far superior strength while you possess only the strength of a rank three Martial Lord.

“Elders, come out. I’ll hand this child over to you. Let the world know that this so-called genius is no more than a weakling.

“As for my Stone Sword Sect, it will be the one to destroy this legend.”

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh

After the head of the Stone Sword Sect spoke, the sky in the distant started to tremble. At the same time, six boundless auras surged over amidst six aged figures.

Every single one had white and grey hair, and they were so thin that bone was directly beneath their skin. They were unsightly due to their age—old men who had lived for some unknown number of years. However, despite their age, they all possessed extraordinary strength—they were rank six Martial Lords, and their auras were all far stronger than the Zi family patriarch’s.

“They are the six supreme elders of the Stone Sword Sect! Isn’t it said for prolonging their life, they decided to train in seclusion? Why have they also come out today?” The crowd endlessly cried out in surprise after seeing these six old men.

“They are indeed the supreme elders of the Stone Sword Sect. In terms of seniority, they are above the head of the Stone Sword Sect, but their cultivations are a bit inferior. It’s said that Chu Feng doesn’t even put rank seven Martial Lords in his eyes! Will these six old monsters be able to defeat Chu Feng?”

However, even though those six experts appeared, there were some who doubted whether they were able to defeat Chu Feng.

In reality, not only did the observers doubt, even the head of the Stone Sword Sect lacked confidence. Although his tone was forceful just now, when Chu Feng had attacked, he was able to feel his extremely powerful fighting strength. It was indeed not something typical of a rank three Martial Lord.

But, since things had turned out the way they did, he could not give up so easily. If he successfully killed the Nine-fingered Old Man and the others, then he could go to the Immortal Execution Archipelago and take credit. Not only would he obtain a bountiful of rewards, he could even relocate to the headquarters of the Immortal Execution Archipelago and receive their protection and resources. It would not be wrong to say he would reach the heavens with just a single step.

But, if he failed, then judging by today's situation, Chu Feng would not let him go easily. What awaited his Stone Sword Sect would be the eradication of his entire sect.

Since he would die if he gave up or tried, then why not give it a try? He was being held in place by the Nine-fingered Old Man and was unable to attack Chu Feng himself. So, he could only call out the six elders to test Chu Feng's strength.

Chapter 847 - Fighting the Six Elders

MGA: Chapter 847 - Fighting the Six Elders

“You brat, you dare to attack the disciples of the Stone Sword Sect? We’ll skin you alive!”

The six supreme elders of the Stone Sword Sect had come up to Chu Feng in a blink. Moreover, each of them flashed out a stone sword with light swirling around it. As they spoke, with the might of rank six Martial Lords, they stabbed their respective swords towards Chu Feng.

“Hmph.” However, Chu Feng didn’t fear the slightest bit as he faced the attacks from the six elders. He sneered, then with the flip of his palm, the Royal Armament, the Silver Dragon Spear, appeared within his hand.

boom Immediately after it emerged, its might shocked everyone. The weather changed colour and thunder bolts roared. The power Chu Feng emanated far suppressed the head of the Stone Sword Sect and the Nine-fingered Old Man’s combined power.

“This is a Royal Armament?” After seeing the Royal Armament, almost everyone’s eyes lit up, especially the head of the Stone Sword Sect’s. Greed instantly came forth into his eyes after he saw it.

Royal Armament—to say it was a treasure of the legends would not be inappropriate. The number of people in the Eastern Sea Region who had truly seen the might of a Royal Armament was very, very few. At least, of those here today, none had seen it before.

“This child has such a weapon? We cannot be careless. Formation!”

Feeling the power of the Royal Armament, the six supreme elders who didn’t put Chu Feng in their eyes at all now furrowed their brows tightly.

They no longer dared to hold a single trace of carelessness.

Changing the direction of the stone sword in their hands, layers upon layers of runes were laid out, and they became a formation which imprisoned Chu Feng inside.

As he was within the envelopment of the runes, Chu Feng's power had been pushed down by quite a bit.

“Although these six old men are people soon to die, their fighting strength cannot be overlooked, especially the formation they laid. At the same time they suppressed me, they increased their own power. It seems that I cannot underestimate them.”

At that moment, even Chu Feng himself frowned slightly. He didn't think the six old people from the Stone Sword Sect would be so exceptional.

One had to know that Chu Feng, who had the Royal Armament, could easily defeat typical rank six Martial Lords. He could even put up a fight against a rank seven Martial Lord.

Yet, right now, within the so-called Stone Sword Formation, the fighting strength of the six old men was truly not simple at all. Even though Chu Feng had the Royal Armament, he didn't dare to be careless.

“Brat, die!”

whoosh whoosh whoosh

When the formation was laid, the six supreme elders received a boost in confidence. As all of them held stone swords in their hands, they started fiercely attacking Chu Feng with the power of the formation, perfect coordination, and skillful sword techniques.

“I'm afraid you won't have the chance to kill me in your current lifetime.”

Even though he knew they were no simple people, Chu Feng was not afraid in the slightest. With the power he possessed, the six old men at most were of

some

difficulty. However, it was impossible for them to defeat Chu Feng. They shouldn't even think of killing Chu Feng

whoosh whoosh whoosh

bang bang bang

Chu Feng was instantly in a fight against the six elders of the Stone Sword Sect. The Royal Armament and the six stone swords were unceasingly clashing with one another, and every time they did, a sky full of sparks would be made in addition to violent shock waves. When they saw such scene, the observers were all dumbfounded. They sighed endlessly in admiration as astonishment filled their tense complexions.

“This Chu Feng lives up to his rumours! He truly is powerful. With the cultivation of a rank three Martial Lord, he is fighting against six rank six Martial Lords! If I wasn't personally seeing this, I wouldn't be able to believe it!”

“Haha, I've heard this Chu Feng possesses overwhelming fighting strength, and not only that, he possesses the legendary Secret Skills! He even made a contract with a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World, and now, with the Royal Armament, he will soon be invincible in this world!”

“It's said even rank seven Martial Lords are no match for him! From what I see, these six old monsters from the Stone Sword Sect are also no match for Chu Feng.”

“Ah, don't underestimate these six elders from the Stone Sword Sect. When they entered seclusion back in the day, they were the peak experts of our Winter Plains!

“Not only did all of them have outstanding strengths, the Stone Sword Formation they laid in coordination with one another was absolutely unstoppable. It's rumoured even rank seven Martial Lords were killed by

them! So, with these six fighting against Chu Feng, who obtains victory is still uncertain!”

Seeing the battlefield with endless appearances of sword attacks, afterimages, and destructive shock waves, the observers all sighed once again at the incredible scene between Chu Feng and the Stone Sword Sect’s six elders. Discussions burst out all around, but what could not be denied was that they were stupefied by Chu Feng’s strength.

“This child’s power is indeed impressive, worthy of the title of genius. But, from what I see, he is still unable to defeat rank seven Martial Lords.

“This won’t do. I have to quickly defeat this Nine-fingered Old Man. Only after defeating him can I take care of Chu Feng. As long as I join up with the six of them, this Chu Feng will die with no doubt.

“If I can kill this Chu Feng and take the Royal Armament from him, that will be a great accomplishment. We will become people who have performed great deeds for the Immortal Execution Archipelago.”

At that instant, even though the head of the Stone Sword Sect was intensely fighting the Nine-fingered Old Man, he still had his eyes on Chu Feng’s fight.

After having all those thoughts, a cold smile arose. Then, he flipped his palm and—not one, nor two—

three

Forbidden Medicine appeared on his hand. Opening his mouth, he consumed all of them at the same time. Afterwards, he roared with laughter and said, “Give me your life!”

boom After the consumption of the Forbidden Medicine, the head of the Stone Sword Sect rose greatly in strength. Every time he waved the stone sword in his hand, there would appear power that could cut the skies and split the earth.

“Dammit! This despicable bastard is dealing with me by using the Forbidden Medicine I helped him acquire!”

The Nine-fingered Old Man’s expression changed greatly when he saw that. Initially, when fighting the head of the Stone Sword Sect, they were on a fairly equal scale. However, when the head used the three Forbidden Medicine, the equal scale started tipping. In merely an instant, he was in a disadvantage.

Most importantly, he recognized the Forbidden Medicine that the sect head had just consumed. It was taken from many powers back in the day—and he himself had helped him take them.

Moreover, because of camaraderie, the Nine-fingered Old Man didn’t take a single one of them and gave them all to the head of the Stone Sword Sect. Yet, right now, he was actually taking these very same medicine to deal with him. How could he

not

be furious?

“Haha, don’t overrate yourself. I didn’t use these three for you, but for that Chu Feng. Right now, all of you will die! Hahaha...”

The head of the Stone Sword Sect sinisterly laughed when he heard the Nine-fingered Old Man’s mutter—it was a very mocking laugh.

The Nine-fingered Old Man understood his intentions. He hurriedly shouted to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, run! Leave us behind! You are a rare genius, and the future hope of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Do not sacrifice your great future for our filthy lives! Ignore us and run!”

Upon hearing their shouts, Chu Feng too noticed odd power surging within the body of the head of the Stone Sword Sect. It was the effect one obtained upon using an extremely powerful Forbidden Medicine.

Chapter 848 - Fighting with Life on the Line

MGA: Chapter 848 - Fighting with Life on the Line

Chu Feng didn't just know that the head of the Stone Sword Sect consumed Forbidden Medicine, he also knew after doing so, it was clear that the Nine-fingered Old Man would be defeated.

If everything remained the same and continued, then the Nine-fingered Old Man would be eventually killed. However, since Chu Feng had showed himself to help them, he would naturally not ignore them. He loudly replied, "Senior, don't worry. As long as I, Chu Feng, am here, I will not leave you behind and ignore you. I am also a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Since we are from the same sect, we are family! We should share both our fortunes and disasters.

"This Stone Sword Sect is truly audacious! They dare to make our Crippling Night Demon Sect an enemy! Instead of letting our brothers kill them, why not we do it ourselves!

"Don't need to be afraid. At the very worst, we will only die. So, today, we will fight to the very end."

Chu Feng's shout drew out the praises from the crowd. Not to mention the Nine-fingered Old Man and the others who met Chu Feng for the first time, even the observers, completely unrelated to Chu Feng, gave him a thumbs up deep within their hearts.

It was because Chu Feng's words were the manifestation of a single word—righteousness.

In this world, everyone put their own interests at the forefront. There were truly very few who emphasized righteousness as much as Chu Feng. He

even had such a mindset at such a young age! That was truly something rare to come by.

Today, even though the people watching had admired Chu Feng for quite a while already, they saw him in an entirely new light today.

Not only was his talent unparalleled, his character was also superior to those in the same generation. No matter how cruel and ruthless he treated his enemies and how he cared not of the methods to achieve his goals, at least, when facing allies, he was a person worthy of trust.

Even though Chu Feng's words just now had given the Nine-fingered Old Man some confidence and perhaps he would thus last a bit longer, Chu Feng knew confidence alone would not increase his power. If all things remained the same and time continued forth, then the head of the Stone Sword Sect, without a doubt, was going to defeat the Nine-fingered Old Man.

As such, Chu Feng, who knew the circumstances were unfavourable, no longer hid anything. He used his full strength, waved the Silver Dragon Spear in his hand, and started an extremely ferocious attack. He wanted to quickly defeat the six old men in front of him, then go give the Nine-fingered Old Man a hand.

boom— But Chu Feng had still underestimated how annoying they were. With the Royal Armament, Chu Feng would defeat them sooner or later, but it was not easy to defeat them quickly.

“Seeing that you’ve all cultivated for many years, I had planned to leave you complete corpses, to leave you undamaged honour. But since you continue forcing this, you cannot blame me for showing no face.”

Suddenly, a hint of fierceness flashed past his eyes as he spoke with sinister on his face and in his eyes.

“Haha, little brat, quite some confidence you have there!

“We admit: you do have powerful fighting strength. You

are

a genius we had never heard before, but you want to defeat us six brothers? That's a foolish delusion. Today, you are dead."

The six supreme elders had lived in seclusion for many years, so they had clearly never heard of Chu Feng before. They didn't know how powerful he was, and now, they were shamelessly saying they were going to take Chu Feng's life.

hmm Chu Feng, who had already decided to quickly finish this fight, naturally gave them no more chances. With a thought, a World Spirit Gate appeared.

wuaooo— After it appeared, a strange howl came from inside. At the same time, peculiar black flames surged out, instantly enveloping the six old men.

"Ahh—"

"Dammit! What the hell is this?!"

At that moment, the six old men who were even brimming with smugness earlier changed their complexions instantly. They were in complete panic.

In the instant the black flames wrapped around them, they felt fear that they had never felt before. The Stone Sword Formation they so carefully laid was instantly destroyed.

"Remember. This power is called Asura."

Chu Feng sneered, then he swung the Silver Dragon Spear. Six spear-shaped lights explosively shot out, and after six muffled explosions, the Stone Sword Sect's six supreme elders no longer retained any signs of life. They were completely destroyed by Chu Feng, and not even any remnants of their corpses were left behind. Before they died, Chu Feng even absorbed their Source Energy.

"Eiyayaya, you've finally released me, huh?"

After the six old men were killed, a beautiful person slowly walked out of the World Spirit Gate. That person was the queen, Eggy.

“Waa, what a pretty woman? There’s actually such a beauty in this world? Who is that?”

“Idiot, that’s a World Spirit Gate. Since she walked out from it, it means she’s the rumoured ruthless World Spirit, the queen from the Asura Spirit World!”

“Powerful. In the end, the six supreme elders who had cultivated for innumerable years had still died by Chu Feng’s hands. This child’s fighting strength truly defies logic. He’s an outstanding genius and he truly does live up to his name!”

After seeing Eggy, the observing people were all tongue-tied. They were deeply stunned by the power she showed. But even though it was her who reversed the situation, the one they admired was still Chu Feng.

After all, regardless of the World Spirit’s strength, they were still a part of the World Spiritist, their master. To make a powerful World Spirit serve you wasn’t something all World Spiritists could do. In the end, it was all still a representation of Chu Feng’s own abilities.

“Dammit! This brat is truly this terrifying! Even the six of them weren’t able to defeat him!”

Seeing the six elders dead, the head of the Stone Sword Sect changed his expression greatly. The ruthlessness in his eyes became even stronger after knowing the extremely dreadful situation he was in. Then, with another flip of his palm, ten powerful Forbidden medicine appeared on his hand. Without a moment’s hesitation, he consumed them all.

aooo—

After ingesting the medicine, his entire demeanor became completely different. Not only was his eyes blood-red, he even let out an odd roar. It was even more horrifying than a beast.

At that very instant, he didn't seem like a person. He seemed more like a humanoid monster. Not only were there changes in terms of appearances, the change in strength was even clearer.

“Heavens! The head of the Stone Sword Sect consumed so many Forbidden Medicine! Does he not desire his life?”

Seeing that he ingested so many powerful Forbidden Medicine, the observers were all frightened because every single one he used was invaluable. Although they were able to provide a great increase in strength, the backlash he'd receive would be very fierce as well.

The accumulation of backlash from so many Forbidden Medicine was extremely horrifying. His very actions were akin to committing suicide.

“No. He's preparing to fight by putting his life on the line! Chu Feng is too powerful. The head of the Stone Sword Sect can no longer retreat, and if he doesn't do this, then he will die. If it were me, I would do the same.” However, there were a few astute people who knew the intentions of the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

Chapter 849 - The Furious Eggy

MGA: Chapter 849 - The Furious Eggy

“Today, you will all die!” After the odd roar, the head of the Stone Sword Sect shouted angrily again. Then, he abruptly jabbed with his sword. A sword of light enhanced with layers of runes shot towards the Nine-fingered Old Man.

“Dammit!” At that instant, his complexion changed greatly. He knew it was a very powerful attack, so he quickly put forth his full strength. In a breath, he used several powerful defensive martial skills to block the strike from the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

At the same time, he rapidly backed away to dodge the ferocious attack.

bang bang bang bang...

But it was useless as his strike was simply too powerful. In the moment it collided into the Nine-fingered Old Man’s defenses, it completely destroyed them all. Not only was its power undiminished, it instead became even more powerful and had already arrived in front of the Nine-fingered Old Man.

“Black Tortoise Armour Technique!”

However, just as he felt he was absolutely dead, Chu Feng had arrived in front of the Nine-fingered Old Man. He used the Secret Skill, the Black Tortoise Armour Technique, to block the attack from the Stone Sword Sect.

wuaoo—

Simultaneously, Eggy had flown up as well. With her black flames, she laid them in front of Chu Feng. It formed a black shield in the air.

boom rumble rumble

However, they had still underestimated the attack. After an explosion, even Eggy's black flames were split open.

When the shock waves burst out, Chu Feng, Eggy, and the Nine-fingered Old Man were forced back several thousand meters before they could stabilize themselves.

At the same time, the head of the Stone Sword Sect rushed over again to attack with the stone sword in hand.

“Dammit! With the power of the Forbidden Medicine, he broke through my technique! I will make you a useless person!”

Her black flames being dispersed made Eggy furious. She leapt forward, and with the boundless black flames, she fought the head of the Stone Sword Sect who had taken thirteen Forbidden Medicine.

“Hahaha, so what if you're a genius? So what if it's a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World? Today, you will all die by my hands! Everyone in the Eastern Sea Region will know my name!”

The head of the Stone Sword Sect had neared insanity. He, who had obtained great power with the Forbidden Medicine, was cutting off his future. He opened his mouth and actually threw in two more in. With the stone sword in hand, he fought Eggy without any signs of weakness.

With the support of fifteen powerful Forbidden Medicine, the strength possessed by the head of the Stone Sword Sect was devastating. Even the strong Eggy felt enormous pressure. She was continuously forced back and was in a horrible situation.

“Senior, quickly bring your family away,” said Chu Feng decisively. He frowned lightly when he saw the unfavourable circumstances.

“No! Chu Feng, you risk your life to save us. We cannot leave you here.” The Nine-fingered Old Man shook his head, refusing.

“Senior, I have a way to defeat him. But, if you’re here, you will only become a burden. Quickly leave, otherwise I will be disturbed,” Chu Feng said gravely.

“Then... thank you. In the future, I will definitely repay this favour.”

The Nine-fingered Old Man no longer hesitated after hearing Chu Feng’s words. He flew back to his family, and with a wave of his sleeve, he lifted the surviving young ones. Then, he flew towards the Teleportation Array, aiming to leave this warzone.

“You want to leave? All of you will die!” The head of the Stone Sword Sect was unwilling to let the Nine-fingered Old Man and the others leave. He jabbed out again, and a fierce sword light flew to take away their lives.

“Your opponent is me.” But how could Eggy give him that chance? Channeling large amounts of black flames, she blocked his attack.

boom

“Ahh—”

However, Eggy, who was only focused on saving the Nine-fingered Old Man, was careless. The head of the Stone Sword Sect found an opening and a shock wave came forth, injuring her.

“You are looking to die!” She was already furious, and now, she was surprise attacked. That put Eggy in a rage. Like a volcano, layers of black flames surged out endlessly from her body. They were like black clouds as they covered everything, yet also like a huge wave as they rolled towards the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

However, he, who had taken fifteen Forbidden Medicine, was really too strong. Regardless of Eggy’s strength, she was unable to defeat him.

In reality, seeing Eggy struck by a surprise attack made Chu Feng tightly clench his fists. He gnashed his teeth in anger, and he yearned to skin the head of the Stone Sword Sect alive. But he who still had some reason in

him—unlike the sect head—knew that continuing fighting was not the best choice.

As such, Chu Feng forcibly endured the anger in his heart, and yelled at Eggy, “Eggy, run! Follow me!” After speaking, Chu Feng leapt forth and fled in another direction.

“You old bastard, you better remember this! In the future, I will strip away your skin and extract your tendons alive!” Despite furious, Eggy followed Chu Feng’s instructions. She leapt, then entered the already opened World Spirit Gate, and disappeared.

“Hahaha... What genius? What Asura World Spirit? You are all nothing special! Before me, you can’t even take a single strike!”

Seeing that Eggy hid into the World Spirit Gate and Chu Feng stepped on an azure dragon, running for his life, the head of the Stone Sword Sect laughed. His laughter was full of madness, then with a flip of his palm, yet another Forbidden Medicine appeared in his hand. He threw it into his mouth.

After consuming that Forbidden Medicine, his body had twisted. Not only were his eyes fiery red, even his skin was fiery red. His body exuded bursts of heat, and even his robe was being burnt.

After his entire body was showed bare, everyone could see clearly that there seemed to be countless insects running around within his skin. His flesh was squirming—it was both horrifying and disturbing.

But the head of the Stone Sword Sect didn’t seem to feel how ugly he was at that moment. Instead, he was very proud, as if he were an invincible ruler.

As he felt such pride, he pointed at Chu Feng, who was escaping, and said, “Chu Feng, you can’t escape! Your Royal Armament is mine, and your World Spirit is mine!”

swish

He leapt forward, and after a huge boom, the air in which he stood on trembled, his figure disappearing afterwards. His speed was quick, so quick it was dumbfounding.

“Dammit, he’s consumed another Forbidden Medicine! How many does he have!

“If he didn’t have any, I would have killed him like a dog!” At that instant, Eggy had returned to Chu Feng’s body. However, she still felt hatred due to the surprise attack of the head of the Stone Sword Sect. She was gnashing her teeth, furious.

Chapter 850 - Arctic Killing Formation

MGA: Chapter 850 - Arctic Killing Formation

“Heh, the power he has right now is all due to the Forbidden Medicine. If it was a normal battle, he naturally stands no chance against my queen.

“But, since he dares to be so arrogant by relying on the power of Forbidden Medicine, then it would be too good of a deal to kill him right now.

“Rather than taking a risk and using the World Spirit power you lend me, I am much more willing to see him kill himself. In a while, let us watch him how pitiful he becomes as he receives the backlash of the Forbidden Medicine.

“He’s taken over ten Forbidden Medicine, and the backlash of every single one is something excruciating! I truly want to know how his life will end,” Chu Feng said with a smile. If he used Eggy’s power in addition to the Royal Armament’s might, it didn’t matter how many Forbidden Medicine the head of the Stone Sword Sect took—it would all be useless.

However, Chu Feng now knew the enormous risks associated with borrowing Eggy’s power to increase his strength. Not only risks to himself, but also to Eggy.

Typically speaking, after a World Spirit lends its power to its master, it would only increase the strength of the master’s physical body. There would be no rise in fighting strength, and even if there were, it would be negligible.

At least, with the cultivation Chu Feng currently possessed, after borrowing the power of the World Spirit, he shouldn’t have received an

increase in fighting strength. It was for no other reason but because his body could not take it.

Yet, when he was fighting Old Feng and Old Lei back then in the Flower Valley, Chu Feng had acquired an enormous increase in fighting strength after borrowing Eggy's power.

Chu Feng, who had a greater understanding in Spirit Formation techniques, knew that was an atypical situation. Afterwards, Chu Feng had asked Eggy why that had happened.

At first, Eggy wanted to hide it, but upon constant questioning from Chu Feng, Eggy very unwillingly spoke the reason.

Back then, when Eggy lent her power to Chu Feng, not only did Chu Feng sustain huge risks, in order to decrease the damage done to Chu Feng, Eggy too had sustained huge risks and paid an enormous price.

Before even becoming an actual Martial Lord, Chu Feng had borne Eggy's power without dying. And, while receiving Eggy's power, not only was his physical body more powerful, his fighting strength had a huge increase. All of that was because of Eggy.

It was Eggy who sacrificed her own life by touching upon a taboo, which allowed Chu Feng to receive that rise in fighting strength.

That meant if Chu Feng wanted to use Eggy's power to increase his fighting strength, not only would Chu Feng have to pay an agonizing price, Eggy, the queen, would have to pay an even greater price than Chu Feng.

So, from the day he learnt of the truth, Chu Feng decided, unless absolutely necessary, to not use that ever again. He was willing to bear through pain, but he was not willing to have Eggy sacrifice so much for him.

“Chu Feng, hand over your Royal Armament and I'll leave you a complete corpse!” Just at that moment, a huge pressure came from behind. The head of the Stone Sword Sect had caught up.

“Heh, old thing. I’ll let you feel proud for a bit more. In a while, let me see how painful you’ll die.”

Chu Feng had already expected that. Even though the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique was very fast, the head of the Stone Sword Sect had used his life as the price for his power. He ingested many Forbidden Medicine, so his strength was very horrifying as well. It was completely reasonable for him to possess the speed to catch up to Chu Feng.

But Chu Feng had already made preparations. He had first run in a circle to buy time for the Nine-fingered Old Man and the others to escape, and only after he felt they had safely fled did Chu Feng head towards a goal and fly quickly.

After a while, an icy mountain range appeared in front of Chu Feng. It was an extremely vast mountain range.

It was a very strange one too—there weren’t any trees, nor any accumulated snow. What existed was only ice that exuded chilliness.

Moreover, the peaks on the mountain range were very straight—they were akin to countless enormous swords imbedded into the ground.

As for where that place was, it was the entrance to the Burning Heaven Church, the place titled as the Arctic Killing Formation.

swish At that instant, Chu Feng used the Heaven’s Eyes. Before his fierce gaze, all sorts of traps appeared. A path others could not discover emerged into his eyes, and he locked onto it.

He increased his speed and entered the Arctic Killing Formation. This was the place where he was going to send the sect head to the grave.

“Hmph. You want to die together? Even if I die, I will first kill you! I will shred your corpse into a million pieces, then play with your beautiful World Spirit.”

The head of the Stone Sword Sect had grown up in the Winter Plains. He was a person who had witnessed the glory of the Burning Heaven Church, so how could he possibly not know what sort of area the Arctic Killing Formation was? This was a forbidden land no one dared to enter in the Winter Plains.

But now, it was different. When he consumed all ten Forbidden Medicine at the same time, he had already prepared to die. But, he could not die for no reason at all. Before death, he wanted to kill Chu Feng, and to kill him with the cruellest techniques possible. Otherwise, he could not endure such resentment.

He had plotted this betrayal for a very long time. He had carefully laid a trap. He initially thought he could rise immediately with this move.

However, everything that he had done was destroyed by Chu Feng. He was truly unable to endure that. He had to kill Chu Feng.

whoosh So, without even thinking, the head of the Stone Sword Sect followed Chu Feng straight into the Arctic Killing Formation.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

It was completely foggy within the Arctic Killing Formation. Even the vision of Martial Lords was restricted by such odd white fog.

Moreover, within the Arctic Killing Formation, there was a strange pressure. This was a very powerful formation. It was definitely laid by several peerless experts after exerting much of their energy.

The layout of the Arctic Killing Formation was complicated. There were countless traps, and if one took a single wrong step, they would die.

However, in such a perilous region viewed as a forbidden land, Chu Feng was like a fish in water. There were no traps that could harm him.

But the head of the Stone Sword Sect, the old cunning thing, was quite smart. He knew Chu Feng's Spirit Formation techniques were excellent.

So, he closely followed Chu Feng's steps and walked only where Chu Feng walked in order to avoid death via the horrifying traps within the Arctic Killing Formation.

“Heh, it seems that I've still underestimated this old thing. He's able to follow me for so long! But, I would quite like to see how much longer you can continue.”

But even so, Chu Feng was not afraid. Instead, he smiled oddly and no longer ran in circles. Instead, he flew straight towards the entrance of the Burning Heaven Church.

The Arctic Killing Formation was very vast, but to Martial Lords, they could easily pass through even larger regions because their speed was simply too quick.

So, in order to increase the difficulties of outsiders entering the Burning Heaven Church, they made a huge maze within the Arctic Killing Formation.

One could even say if they wanted to enter the Burning Heaven Church, they had no choice but to enter the Arctic Killing Formation. Moreover, there was only one possible path. If a single incorrect step was taken, there would be no recovery.

Chapter 851 - Rubbing Salt into a Wound

MGA: Chapter 851 - Rubbing Salt into a Wound

At that moment, Chu Feng had already discovered the secrets to the Arctic Killing Formation. If he wanted to continue wasting time here, then he had only one choice—to run straight towards the entrance of the Burning Heaven Church. Otherwise, if he ran into a dead end, then that would be quite tragic.

“Ahh—”

However, when Chu Feng approached the entrance, the head of the Stone Sword Sect finally couldn't continue. He first howled with pain, then opened his mouth and spat out putrid black blood.

At the same time, he lost the ability to fly. Like a sandbag, he fell onto the floor. After fiercely crashing down, he started painfully shrieking.

“AHH—”

At first, the head of the Stone Sword Sect planned to commit suicide when the pain of the backlash came. He knew how horrid he would end up after consuming so many Forbidden Medicine. Rather than bearing through such pain, why not just quickly finish it?

But, the power of the backlash didn't give him that chance. When the pain slammed into him, when the power he obtained from the Forbidden Medicine disappeared, he no longer had any chance to choose.

At that very moment, he had lost his control over his own body. He could only allow the agonizing backlash to engulf his flesh.

Right now, what he could do, other than bearing the price of the Forbidden Medicine, was only to let out the heart-wrenching screech akin to the howling of wolves and the crying of ghosts.

“Heh, has it finally started? Oh oh oh, he truly looks pitiful.”

When he saw the sect head finally falling to the backlash, Chu Feng stopped running away. Instead, he turned around, and walked back. With crossed legs, he sat on a protruding piece of ice and squinted his eyes slightly. With an appearance of schadenfreude, he looked at the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

Even though it was merely a glance, it was truly pleasant. The head of the Stone Sword Sect who had used sixteen super-powerful Forbidden Medicine was now feeling pain even Chu Feng hadn't felt before.

His skin had turned blood-red, the bones throughout his body were all cracked, and his internal organs were all full of injuries. How did he even look like a person lying on ice? He appeared more like a live pig being cooked in a pot—a scene near unbearable to watch.

In order to let Eggy personally see the head of the Stone Sword Sect's pitiful appearance, Chu Feng specially opened the World Spirit Gate and released her.

“Haha, well deserved. This is truly well deserved. You old bastard, who told you to consume so many Forbidden Medicine, huh?”

The depressed feelings Eggy had earlier were all swept away when she saw that. She felt even greater

schadenfreude

than Chu Feng. She was skipping, jumping, clapping, cheering, and even walked up to the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

“Sa-sa-save me...”

“I-I'm begging you! Grant me death, grant me death!”

The head of the Stone Sword Sect really could not bear such pain. Tears had already flowed down his face, and after seeing Eggy, he actually acted as if he saw a savior and very shamelessly begged Eggy to kill him.

Of course, the usual benevolent and generous queen naturally couldn't just leave a dying person alone. Her lips curled upward, and on her beautiful face, there was a pitying smile. She said, "Don't worry, I won't let you die so quickly! Don't be afraid, I will make you live a bit longer."

As Eggy spoke, she willed the head of the Stone Sword Sect to rise into the air. Then, she released her black flames. After they appeared, being controlled by Eggy, they lay flat underneath the head of the Stone Sword Sect. As though roasting a pig, she started smoking him.

At the same time, Eggy raised her pure-white hand slightly, then used her black flames to create a little dagger.

It was a very sharp dagger, and very odd as well. On its edges, there were countless minuscule hooks.

puchi Suddenly, Eggy stabbed downward with her dagger. It pierced deeply into his already messy body.

"AHH—"

Afterwards, Eggy pulled it out quickly. Not only did it bring black, fetid blood, there were large amounts of muscles and flesh on the hooks of the dagger. That made him once again shriek as if his heart were being torn out.

How was Eggy helping him? She was simply throwing a stone down a well, rubbing salt into a wound.

"Dammit! You monster, you demon!"

The head of the Stone Sword Sect even thought Eggy would help him escape such agony. Quite oppositely though, Eggy started to torture him

even more ruthlessly. However, when Eggy spoke the following words, he could truly cry.

“You are correct! I am a monster, I am a demon.” Eggy was extremely beautiful, and her smile was extremely moving. It was quite disharmonious to her cruel move.

“Chu Feng, do you have pellets to temporarily prolong the life of a dying person?” Eggy asked Chu Feng with a smile.

“Oh, interestingly, I

do

have those pellets! What do you need them for?” Chu Feng also had a smirk on his face. He clearly knew what Eggy was thinking, but he still intentionally asked, feigning confusion.

“It’s not much, I just want to let this old bastard live for a bit longer, so he can enjoy a bit of this pain before dying. At least his life won’t be so despicably and shamelessly wasted away,” Eggy said with a smirk as well.

“Haha, good! Good idea! Here, take ‘em.” Chu Feng roared with laughter, and as he spoke, he threw several pellets to Eggy.

When the head of the Stone Sword Sect saw that, his face already fiery red like a monster turned green immediately. He had seen some vicious people, but he had never seen people as vicious as them. So, he quickly closed his mouth, afraid Eggy would truly feed him those pellets that would prolong his life.

whoosh

However, Eggy didn’t even bother saying anything. With a cold glint, the dagger in her hand swept past and actually cut off his lower jaw. Then, threw the several pellets into his mouth. Afterwards, she used her power to help push them into his stomach, then helped him refine them.

“Ahh—Mm—Ahh—”

At that instant, the head of the Stone Sword Sect who lacked a lower jaw could not speak. He could only make endless howls as tears streamed down his face.

At that moment, he truly regretted. He regretted angering Chu Feng and Eggy. If he knew a scene like the one now would appear, then he shouldn't have put everything on the line to fight Chu Feng. He should have just used a single Forbidden Medicine then escaped.

But, there was nothing he could do. There was no medicine for regret in this world, and similarly, there was no way to walk back the path he had already taken. Right now, the only choice he had was to endure the price due to his very action.

“You are truly two ruthless brats. But, you should stop when appropriate. How about you give me face today, and release him?”

But just at that moment, an extremely powerful voice rang out from afar. In the instant that voice rang out, even the Arctic Killing Formation—the Spirit Formation filled with runes—swayed violently. There were even countless small cracks on the surrounding ice.

At the same time, a boundless pressure swept over. It enveloped everything. That pressure belonged to a Martial King.

Chapter 852 - Paradise

MGA: Chapter 852 - Paradise

“Dammit! Eggy, run—”

Chu Feng’s complexion changed greatly when he felt the powerful aura binding him. He quickly opened the World Spirit Gate and called Eggy back, preparing to escape.

“Hmph. You’re lucky today.” Eggy coldly snorted upon feeling the aura as well. After casting a glance at the head of the Stone Sword Sect, indicating she was not finished yet, she stepped into the World Spirit Gate.

“Haa—”

Chu Feng explosively shouted and tightly grasped the Royal Armament in his hand, increasing his power, to fight against the imprisonment of the Martial King’s might.

“That Royal Armament does not belong to you. Return it immediately, and perhaps I can spare your life.” That voice rang out again, and it was coming nearer and nearer. One could tell that person was quickly approaching.

“Who are you?” Chu Feng asked with the Royal Armament in hand as he used his Martial power.

“I am the Third Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.” That voice rang out again. His tone was full of confidence, as if Chu Feng were already dead.

“As I thought, it’s someone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. You want to take back this Royal Armament? That’s dependant on your ability.”

However, after knowing who he was, Chu Feng coldly snorted. Then, he bent his knees slightly, and put force into his legs.

bang Afterwards, Chu Feng not only used the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, he even became a stream of light, flying towards the entrance of the Burning Heaven Church.

He had actually escaped the binding pressure of a Martial King.

Chu Feng flew forth, channeling almost all of his strength into the skill. The Third Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago followed. That was not good at all.

Right now, Chu Feng understood the Immortal Execution Archipelago a bit, and he especially understood someone as famous as the Third Immortal. Chu Feng knew the Third Immortal wasn't just a rank two Martial King, his Spirit Formation techniques were very skillful as well.

Even amongst other Gold-cloak World Spiritists, his Spirit Formation techniques proved superior. Therefore, he became very well known within the entire Eastern Sea Region.

And, right now, there was an expert of such level following him. Chu Feng felt enormous pressure, but he had no other choice. He could only put his life on the line as he fled towards the Burning Heaven Church, because he had no other path to run towards.

He could only hope there were places to hide there so he wouldn't be captured by the Third Immortal.

As for Qiushui Fuyan, Chu Feng didn't have many hopes. First of all, he was unable to ascertain whether she was still inside.

Second of all, from what Chu Feng knew, even though Qiushui Fuyan was also a Martial King, she was only a rank one Martial King—at least, for now, she was only a rank one Martial King. So, even if she were here, unless she had some special technique, she wouldn't be able to defeat the Third Immortal.

Martial Kings and Martial Lords were different. The difference of ranks between Martial Lords was already very clear. To defeat those in superior levels was something done only by true geniuses.

As for the difference of ranks between Martial Kings, it was even clearer. There was a very small number of people who could defeat those in superior levels. At least, in the Eastern Sea Region, none had appeared yet.

The distance between the ranks of Martial Kings was very big. No matter what sort of powerful techniques one grasped, it was a near impossibility to defeat those in superior levels.

Right now, Chu Feng's only option was to escape and flee with all his might. He had to quickly rid himself of the Third Immortal.

whoosh Shortly after Chu Feng flew away, a person suddenly descended from the sky, landing by the side of the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

That old man had golden hair, and he was holding an exquisite World Spirit Compass in his hand. He was even clad in a golden World Spirit Robe, but it only loosely rested upon his body. As such, one could see the clothing underneath was one of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's.

That person was none other than the Third Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. His Spirit Formation techniques were amongst the best in the entire Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“As I thought, he's not as simple as he seems. Although I was too far and my pressure was quite weak, an ordinary Martial Lord definitely couldn't have resisted something like that.”

The Third Immortal had arrived at Chu Feng's former location, and as he looked in the direction Chu Feng had fled to, he lightly smiled. He, however, did not continue chasing after Chu Feng. Instead, he flipped his palm and took out several special pellets varying in colour and auras, then put them inside the mouth of the sect head.

Quickly after, he sat cross-legged, and with a thought, boundless golden Spirit Formation power was cast out. Under his control, it became a powerful formation which enveloped the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

It was a formation of healing, and it was very complex and profound. It wasn't one that a typical Gold-cloak World Spiritist could lay; unexpectedly, the Third Immortal wanted to save the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

“Mm, mm—”

Initially, the sect head thought he was absolutely dead, but after the formation enveloped him, the unendurable backlash pain was diminished.

That feeling let him know his life was saved. As he looked at the Third Immortal, his eyes were full of gratitude. Yet, he could not speak and could only groan in thanks.

“Why isn't he chasing?”

However, Chu Feng knew nothing of the Third Immortal's actions. He only knew he hadn't caught up.

But even so, Chu Feng did not dare to relax. He continued rushing forward in madness, and like that, he finally reached the end.

He encountered a cave with pond inside of it. Since the pond wasn't frozen despite being located in the Winter Plains, Chu Feng knew he had arrived at the true entrance of the Burning Heaven Church.

Since this was the only path he could take, Chu Feng gave no signs of hesitation and with a splash, dived into the pond.

Chu Feng continued moving forward along the currents. After swimming for a good while—to the point where he had lost track of time—he finally reached the end.

When Chu Feng leapt out of the water, he discovered an entirely different world before his eyes.

The sky above his head was not overcast. Instead, there were white clouds and a blue sky. A bright sun hung high up in the air, illuminating everything beneath it.

As opposed to the outside, where he was met with falling snow, he encountered the vibrant scenery of spring within the Burning Heaven Church.

No matter the tall mountains in the distance, or the grassland beneath his feet, everything was lush with vegetation. All sorts of exotic flowers, herbs, and plants flourished in this area.

A burst of fragrance entered Chu Feng's nose as he inhaled the air. To discover a world such as this within the Winter Plains... It could truly be considered a paradise.

whoosh Despite being dazed by the scenery before his eyes, Chu Feng did not stop to admire it. Instead, he leapt forward and continued fleeing. He didn't know when the Third Immortal would catch up, so he had to swiftly pull as much distance as he could.

ta Just as Chu Feng entered that new world, two people had also arrived within the cave inside the Arctic Killing Formation.

They were the Third Immortal and the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

At that moment, the sect head's complexion was as pale as paper. In comparison to before, he was much thinner. Not only was his aura weak, he was discoloured and exhausted, as though he would die at any moment.

However, his lower jaw had been restored, and the injuries throughout his body had disappeared. His external injuries were all healed. This was all due to the Third Immortal's treatment.

'This Chu Feng is truly not simple at all. I have entered this Arctic Killing Formation many times before, but I had never been able to find the entrance.

‘I didn’t think by following Chu Feng this time I would truly stumble upon this place! This child possesses quite a few unordinary techniques. I must capture him alive, otherwise I would have wasted his exceptional abilities.’ Looking at the entrance in front of him, the Third Immortal’s mouth curled up to form a hint of a peculiar smile.

Chapter 853 - Two Treasures

MGA: Chapter 853 - Two Treasures

“Lord Third Immortal, thank you for saving me. I didn’t think an insignificant person such as myself would be worthy of your great exertion of power.

“You have given me a new life, something that can never be repaid. However, as long as you demand it, Lord Third Immortal, if you ask me to be an animal, I will not refuse.”

At that instant, the head of the Stone Sword Sect felt endless gratitude towards the Third Immortal. He knew it was he who saved him. He also knew the Third Immortal had spent hefty sum on him—at least those several medicinal pellets were very rare treasures. Even to the point where the value of every single pellet was higher than himself, a rank seven Martial Lord.

“I’ve seen your determination and strong desire to join the Immortal Execution Archipelago. We must protect people like you with everything we have. If you truly feel grateful, then in the future, just devote yourself to the Immortal Execution Archipelago,” said the Third Immortal with a faint smile.

“I will definitely pledge myself to the Immortal Execution Archipelago.”

After hearing the Third Immortal’s words, the head of the Stone Sword Sect felt even more grateful. But other than giving his thanks, there was nothing else he could do. In the end, he cast his gaze towards the pond and asked, “Lord Third Immortal, is this the entrance to the Burning Heaven Church?”

“Yes. The Arctic Killing Formation was not simple at all. It was all thanks to Chu Feng that we were able to come here.

“He must have seen a map, otherwise how did he know the entrance was here?”

“From my understanding, the identity of Chu Feng’s master is very enigmatic. Judging by my experience with him, he himself is quite special as well. Not only is he related to the Crippling Night Demon Sect, he’s even related to the Burning Heaven Church. I truly want to know who his master is,” said the head of the Stone Sword Sect curiously.

“You should have heard that Chu Feng has quite good relationship with Lady Qiushui, from the Lovers Terrace, right?” the Third Immortal asked with a smile.

“I have.” The head of the Stone Sword Sect nodded.

“We’ve always suspected that Lady Qiushui was the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church. And since Chu Feng is so closely related to her, naturally it means he is closely related to the Burning Heaven Church,” said the Third Immortal with a faint smile.

“So that Lady Qiushui is the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church! But didn’t they relocate into the Holy Land of Martialism? Qiushui Fuyan didn’t go?” The head of the Stone Sword Sect was very shocked when he heard that.

“It’s only a guess. It cannot be confirmed.

“The reason why I didn’t capture Chu Feng immediately after discovering him was because I felt he had come here possibly for the Burning Heaven Church. So, I secretly followed to find his actual goal. It seems my speculations were correct and he had indeed come here for the Burning Heaven Church.

“Initially, I believed Chu Feng knew the true entrance of the Burning Heaven Church as well, which was why he dared to directly enter the Arctic Killing Formation.

“However, after coming here, I discovered he actually didn’t know where it was. He’d always had a Spirit Formation activated, and was searching with a very special method. He had found this entrance himself. So, that’s why I said he truly isn’t a simple person at all,” the Third Immortal said.

“This means he is truly quite amazing, and he truly does have Secret Skills on him. This child cannot slip away because he himself is a huge treasure.

“Lord Third Immortal, are we going to go down now and capture Chu Feng?” the head of the Stone Sword Sect asked.

“Of course, but judging by your state right now, you should not go. Follow this map and head back to the Stone Sword Sect.” The Third Immortal gave a map to the sect head.

Opening it and giving it a glance, he couldn’t help but be taken aback. The map seemed to be just created; it was likely drawn by the Third Immortal as he followed the path Chu Feng chose.

Clearly, the Immortal Execution Archipelago hadn’t had their eyes on the Burning Heaven Church for merely a day or two. It was likely that soon, the Burning Heaven Church would be renamed to the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

However, after receiving the map, the head of the Stone Sword Sect did not leave immediately. He was hesitating over something. He looked as if he had something to say, but didn’t dare to speak.

Seeming to have seen through the sect head’s thoughts, the Third Immortal faintly smiled, then said, “Don’t worry and return. I’ve seen what you did. I’ve already ordered someone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago to head to the Stone Sword Sect. He will arrange a spot in the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and from now on, your Stone Sword Sect is an ally with the Immortal Execution Archipelago. You will receive our protection.”

“Thank you Lord Third Immortal, thank you Lord Third Immortal!” When he heard those words, the head of the Stone Sword Sect rejoiced. He

quickly bowed and clasped his hands at the Third Immortal. Only when he was urged away did he turn around and leave, following the path on the map.

After the head of the Stone Sword Sect left, the Third Immortal looked back at the entrance, and said with a smile, “This Shi Jingtian is correct: Chu Feng is indeed a huge treasure. But what is awaiting me is not only a single treasure, but two. Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, you have truly helped me greatly.”

After speaking, the smile on the Third Immortal’s face became even wider, and as he spoke, he leaped and entered the water.

At that moment, Chu Feng was still flying quickly within that paradise. After some quick traveling, Chu Feng was certain he was safe.

Due to a moment of carelessness—causing him to be followed by the Third Immortal—Chu Feng had exhausted nearly all of his Spirit power to the most sensitive state. Moreover, he laid many Detection Spirit Formations, so he was certain the Third Immortal hadn’t tailed him.

On the road, Chu Feng not only saw many beautiful sceneries, he even saw many exquisite and aesthetically pleasing buildings. All of the structures in here were made out of gold, and there were even engravings of flames. It was clear this was the Burning Heaven Church.

“Eggy, typically speaking, within an endless winter plains, such a paradise shouldn’t appear, right? Say, is everything here real or fake?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“The flowers, plants, trees, and even buildings are real. However, from what I see, the sky, clouds, and the fiery sun are fake. This is a space opened by a powerful World Spiritist,” Eggy said.

“This is many times vaster than the space in the Asura Ghost Tower. However, back then, the strongest person in the Burning Heaven Church was Huangfu Haoyue. Judging by his strength, he shouldn’t be able to open up a space.

“Could it be a senior from the Burning Heaven Church?” Even though he had made guesses, after Eggy confirmed that the world was not real and it was only a space created up by a Spirit Formation expert, Chu Feng still felt greatly astonished.

“Heh, silly, no one in the Burning Heaven Church has the ability to do this.

“However, judging by the various things from the Ancient Era in the Everlasting Sea of Blood and at the Misty Peak, there had truly been geniuses and experts in the Eastern Sea Region before. This place should have been created by experts of the Ancient Era.

“But perhaps by chance, someone from the Burning Heaven Church discovered this place and received a lucky opportunity. As such, they established this place to be the Burning Heaven Church, and had quite a smooth development as well,” Eggy analyzed.

“Mm, that makes sense.” Chu Feng nodded, his question in his heart answered. However, suddenly, his pupils suddenly shrank as he shouted, pointing in front of him, “Eggy, look there!”

Chapter 854 - Oddity

MGA: Chapter 854 - Oddity

At that moment, Eggy's mind was concentrating on chatting with Chu Feng, so she didn't even notice the situation in front of them.

Only after hearing his words did she close her eyes, feeling Chu Feng's current gaze.

Though quite a trivial action, Eggy herself jumped in fright at what she saw. A hint of joy then emerged onto her beautiful little face.

Far away in the distance, there was a vast mountain range, and all sorts of peculiar peaks stood upright. But of those peaks, atop a mountain resembling a

mantou

, there was one peak that emitted various faint colours. It stood quite in contrast with the others; it was very captivating.

“There's seems to be something good there. Chu Feng, head over!” Eggy shouted.

Where was the need for Eggy's reminder? After discovering it, Chu Feng had increased his speed and flew towards the colourful mountain range.

The closer he approached, the more excited Chu Feng became. As he went even nearer, he was able to more clearly see what exactly that thing was.

It was a mountain peak—a very vast mountain peak. On it, there were all sorts of medicines. Not simple medicines, but very precious ones.

Even though they were used for creating pellets and weren't all that useful for cultivation, they were still worth quite a bit.

World Spiritists were also experts in concocting medicines. When he had spare time, Chu Feng would study the usages and states of various plants. Of those, naturally they included medicinal plants.

As such, Chu Feng was able to instantly tell that the medicines on the peak were very precious. Every single one was invaluable, and very difficult to find in the outside world. Yet now, there were so many in here. Most likely, the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix was within those medicines.

“Haha, I’m rich now! I didn’t think the Burning Heaven Church had left behind such a large sum of wealth!” Chu Feng finally arrived on the peak.

Looking downwards at the glowing and invaluable medicines of varying effects, his heart was very excited. Even though those things didn’t help his cultivation, they were still very valuable.

Not to mention him, even such an enormous power like the Immortal Execution Archipelago, upon knowing of these medicines, wouldn’t hesitate to send a powerful battle force to occupy this place.

Most importantly, under the gaze of his Heaven’s Eyes, he had already found a very special-shaped medicine—it was the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix.

Within the vast world of medicine, the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix was absolutely not the most precious one. There were many more that had stronger effects.

Even though Chu Feng had a great understanding of medicine, there were still quite a few here Chu Feng didn’t know the names of. The value of these medicines was priceless.

whoosh

But even so, Chu Feng still rushed up to a Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix. After all, no matter the value of the other medicines here, the most important one to Chu Feng right now was the Holy Medicine of

Dragon and Phoenix because it was a main component in helping Zi Ling fight the Heaven Gripping Pellet.

hmm After landing, without even thinking, Chu Feng used the golden Spirit Formation power and laid a boundless Spirit Formation above the medicine. It was an Opening Formation, a necessity in harvesting medicinal plants.

Medicinal plants and cultivation resources were different. In accordance to their strength, cultivation medicines possessed varying fighting power. No matter if it was spiritual medicine, Origin medicine, Profound medicine, Heaven medicine, Martial medicine, Spiritual Beings, or Sacred Entities, they had their respective spirits, and they had the strength to protect themselves.

However, medicinal plants were different. Most of them did not possess intelligence, nor any powerful attacks. At least, most of them didn't possess either.

However, it was not as simple to harvest them. It required a World Spiritist to lay an Opening Formation in order to pick them.

If he picked them directly, then in the instant they left the soil, they would wither immediately and die. His effort would have been for nothing then. Similarly, in accordance to the different medicinal strengths of the medicinal plants, the strength of the formation would vary as well.

None of those plants were simple plants, and the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix was of that category. Luckily, Chu Feng was already a Gold-cloak World Spiritist; otherwise, to harvest it would truly require quite some effort. But now, it was much easier.

“Open!” Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted. The boundless formation in the air became a strand of golden light, and like a falling golden dragon, it shot straight towards the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix and enveloped it within.

rumble rumble rumble For an instant, even the earth trembled. Countless golden runes surrounded the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix and swirled around, pulling it from the ground.

In a situation like that, the medicine itself wanted to resist, but it was useless as Chu Feng's Spirit Formation was too powerful. No matter how unwilling it was, it could only be slowly removed from the soil. As it was enveloped by the golden Spirit Formation, it landed into Chu Feng's hands.

“Haha, I've finally gotten it!” With the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix in hand, Chu Feng carefully put it away because it was really too precious to him.

Just in case, Chu Feng picked several more ripened Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix, and only then was his heart at ease.

whoosh After harvesting them, Chu Feng did not continue blindly reaping these precious medicines, and instead, rose into the air and looked down from above. With the Heaven's Eyes, he gazed downward, carefully searching for the most precious medicines within that vast sea of medicine.

Chu Feng knew the ones to enter the Burning Heaven Church would definitely not be him alone. The Third Immortal would arrive sooner or later.

Even though the space in the Burning Heaven Church was very big, regardless of its size there would always exist an end. He didn't know when the Third Immortal would enter.

He did not have that much time to reap all the medicines here. He was short on time, so Chu Feng could only choose the most excellent ones and harvest them as such.

“This is truly not simple at all! What sort of spiritual power is in this soil? It actually bred so many medicinal plants that have an abundant of power! It seems that this journey has been quite worth it.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng's eyes lit up. Then, he leapt forward and flew towards one of the medicinal plants.

That plant was very ordinary. It wasn't just dim, its appearance was very simple as well. Judging by its external appearance, it was simply an ordinary weed.

But, before Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes, its actual shape had been revealed. This plant was very powerful. It contained extremely strong medicinal power, and to say it was the king of medicines in this vast sea of medicine was quite appropriate.

whoosh As expected, before Chu Feng even went close to it, the medicine flashed with light and actually pulled itself from the ground. Then, with its two tiny legs, it started madly running on the ground. It was also very quick, and even Chu Feng was shocked.

"Haha, it has intelligence, and it has the ability to move! It is indeed the king of this place!" Chu Feng was elated when he saw that. He made a grab, and with the boundless envelopment of his pressure, he wanted to suppress the Medicine King.

But it was useless as the Medicine King was too powerful. It emitted a green-coloured light from the inside, and as it was surrounded by such a light, it ignored Chu Feng's power and continued running.

Just as it arrived at the end of the sea of medicine, with a poof, it burrowed into the ground.

"Hmph. Where are you running off to?" Such a good medicine was a treasure. How could Chu Feng allow it to escape so easily? He leapt forth, and followed it, burrowing into the ground as well.

"Crap!" However, though he didn't expect anything when he burrowed in, Chu Feng's complexion changed once again. From his initial ecstatic face, it became completely pale. He even broke out in a cold sweat.

At that instant, Chu Feng was able to clearly feel an extremely horrifying killing intent emanating from deep underground.

Within the soil of the vast sea of medicine, there was something strange!

Chapter 855 - Guardian Formation

MGA: Chapter 855 - Guardian Formation

Such a sudden change shocked Chu Feng. With the observational power of his Heaven's Eyes, he looked deep underground and discovered a terrifying killing formation.

It was a very strange formation. It seemed to be made by a person, yet also by nature. Even Chu Feng found it difficult to determine which one made it.

However, a fact that could not be denied was the power it contained was extremely horrifying. So much even a rank one Martial King could not defend against it—it had a very powerful attack.

Luckily, Chu Feng had reacted in time. Otherwise, if he had gone just a bit deeper and entered the range of the formation, he would have completely activated it. At that moment, with the strength Chu Feng had, he would have been killed in just a blink.

“What a crafty Medicine King. It wanted to lure me in!”

After finding the source of such horrifying power, Chu Feng was a bit angry. Although the killing formation was frightening, as long as he avoided its range of activation, there wouldn't be any danger to his life.

On the other hand, the Medicine King could step into its range but not be harmed in the slightest. When he hid within the formation, Chu Feng could not capture it. In a situation like that, Chu Feng could really do nothing to it.

“Chu Feng, why would such a powerful killing formation appear out of nowhere?”

“Moreover, this is a mountain peak. How can so many strong medicinal plants be grown? Don’t you think this is very strange?”

“Although the plants can receive the energy from natural essence and thus grow, this is a vast mountain range. A few appearing would be already quite good. Yet, on this single mountain peak, it is filled with medicinal plants. This doesn’t make much sense.

“Moreover, there is such a frightening killing formation deep underground. Don’t you think this is odd?” Eggy reminded.

“Of course it doesn’t make sense! Let me look with the Heaven’s Eyes first.” Chu Feng didn’t hesitate as he leapt up, back to the surface, and started carefully circling around and observe the mountain peak full of medicinal plants.

With the detailed observation of the Heaven’s Eyes, as he continued his analysis, Chu Feng felt even more shocked. Even the suspicion in his eyes turned into joy, and that joy was becoming stronger and stronger.

In the end, he was even ecstatic. On his face, there was an uncontrollable excited expression.

Chu Feng discovered this land was truly not simple at all. There was definitely a Natural Oddity hidden in a certain part of this peak.

That killing formation was not a simple formation—it was a Guardian Formation Aperture. As long as he could deactivate it, he would be able to find the entrance and thus obtain the Natural Oddity.

“Hah, I originally thought this journey was worth it just by being able to obtain these medicine. No matter what, I never would have thought I would have a discovery like this! In this man-created space, a Natural Oddity formed! And it has even developed for at least several thousand years!”

There was no need describe how happy Chu Feng was.

There were many types of Natural Oddities. The most common ones were Spiritual Beings and Sacred Entities.

Spiritual Beings possessed intelligence. After formation, they had the ability to move, and could even transform into a human shape. They could cultivate in this world as a human, and since they were bred by the earth, they had very long lives. If they could mature, their future was unimaginable.

At first, the Phoenix of Ice at the Wolf Ivory Mountain was a Spiritual Being. However, it hadn't been in development for very long, and it hadn't matured. It was merely an embryo. It could not leave its place of growth, so dealing with it was very easy.

As for Sacred Entities, they never possessed intelligence, nor could they form into a human shape. They would only remain in their place of growth, and continue to grow. They awaited for the fated to take them away.

In other worlds, Spiritual Beings were the children bred by the world, while Sacred Entities were gifts from heaven, bestowed to cultivators.

However, Sacred Entities were not like fish on a cutting board. Not anyone could take them away. Coincident with their growth, there would be a natural Guardian Formation Aperture that protected them.

Unless one were able to deactivate the formation, they shouldn't even think of getting their hands on it. They couldn't even look at them. That could be said to be a test from the heavens.

“It truly is a Natural Oddity! The Burning Heaven Church is able to use the power of this Natural Oddity to grow so many medicinal plants. It means they've already discovered it a long time ago.

“These plants require time to grow, so it's reasonable that they didn't take them when they left, since the plants were not ripened yet. On the other hand, this Natural Oddity is so precious. Why didn't the Burning Heaven

Church take it away?” Eggy was still very confused after confirming it was a Natural Oddity.

“When we saw the Guardian Formation Aperture, it was changed. Quite clearly, it was changed by the Burning Heaven Church.”

Chu Feng could already tell the reason the killing formation appeared was so strange was because it was formed naturally, yet also altered by humans.

“Interesting. But, I just don’t understand why they did that.

“However, since it’s a Natural Oddity and it had been growing for so long, it will definitely help your cultivation greatly. Perhaps you could even make a breakthrough and become a Martial Lord!

“However, if you can’t deactivate that killing formation, you won’t be able to find the Natural Oddity.” Eggy curled her lips, feeling quite a shame.

“Actually, I do have a plan. Perhaps it can help me get this Natural Oddity,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“What plan?” Eggy asked anxiously.

“Even though there are a large amount of medicinal plants grown here—a normal person would know this place is not simple at all—it’s very difficult to find anything off with this place using ordinary searching methods of a World Spiritist.

“As for that Guardian Formation Aperture, on the surface it looks like a very powerful killing formation so it’s very difficult to notice it’s an aperture for a Natural Oddity.

“Moreover, since the Burning Heaven Church had changed it, even if it’s deactivated, a typical person won’t be able to find the location of the hidden Natural Oddity.

“However, I have the Heaven’s Eyes. I have already roughly found its location. But, the aperture isn’t deactivated, so I can’t enter that place.

“In addition, I believe that the person who

can

deactivate this aperture has arrived. I can use him to break it open, and thus obtain the Natural Oddity,” Chu Feng explained.

“You’re saying to use that Third Immortal?” Eggy asked.

“Exactly. To use him.” Chu Feng firmly nodded his head.

“That would work, but at the same time, there are huge risks. I do want to know how you will attract him over though.” Eggy still had some doubts.

“Isn’t that simple? I can just use a few techniques and he’ll discover this place.

“However, that person is too powerful and is skilled in Spirit Formation techniques. Since I’m preparing to use him, then I will have to put a bit more effort into this. Otherwise, the one who’ll be at a disadvantage will be me.”

Chu Feng oddly smiled, then flew down and laid a complicated formation.

After several hours, the Third Immortal had entered. Moreover, in order to find traces of Chu Feng and the treasure, he used a special technique that made his eyes light up even brighter than a lamp. That not only increased his range of vision, it even allowed him to discover things ordinary people could not discover.

At that moment, he was standing in the air with the World Spirit Compass in hand. He was looking down from above, aiming to find some clues.

Then, suddenly, his eyes lit up. The corners of his mouth subconsciously rose to form a smile.

At the same time, he put away his special gaze and concealed his aura. Then, he leapt forth and flew towards the direction he was looking at.

And that direction was the location of Chu Feng and the Natural Oddity.

Chapter 856 - Hiddenly Observing the Fight

MGA: Chapter 856 - Hiddenly Observing the Fight

The surface of the peak full of medicinal plants was serene, as if completely untouched.

However, a strange invisible aura arose from the ground, into the air, and straight through the clouds, enveloping the space above the peak.

An auspicious aura—the indication of special treasure. Actually, with so many medicinal plants gathered in a single area, there was already an auspicious aura, though very weak.

Yet now, a very strong aura came from the depths of the ground. The reason for this was naturally due to Chu Feng.

Since the Third Immortal was a powerful World Spiritist, he definitely had special detection abilities others did not possess.

As such, Chu Feng knew if the Third Immortal were to approach this area, he would be quickly pulled into the false auspicious aura he created.

And since Chu Feng had increased the auspicious aura exuded by the medicinal plants and the Medicine King hiding within the Guardian Formation, even the Third Immortal wouldn't discover such a scheme. After all, Chu Feng too was very skillful in Spirit Formation techniques, and this was also made with intensive preparations.

At that moment, for safety's sake, Chu Feng hid in the air and looked down from above, silently watching the changes occurring to the peak full of medicinal plants.

He had already made all possible arrangements, and concealed his aura to a point barely any was leaked. Thus, he was not worried he would be discovered by the Third Immortal, nor worried he would be affected by the shock waves resulting from the Third Immortal laying a formation later.

hmm Suddenly, there was a ripple in space atop the peaceful mountain peak. A person then appeared out of nowhere above the sea of medicinal plants—it was the Third Immortal.

“Heh, he’s quite cunning. Not only did he conceal his aura, he even concealed his physical body.”

Chu Feng smugly smiled. He had to admit, the Third Immortal was quite impressive. His technique of aura concealment was very powerful as well.

But sadly for him, Chu Feng was prepared. Regardless of the Third Immortal’s following actions, he couldn’t change the fact that he was in the open, while Chu Feng was hidden in the dark.

“I’ve heard there were large amounts of medicinal plants within the Burning Heaven Church, so I reckoned they wouldn’t take them away since the plants were not fully grown yet. My suspicions were correct.

“The Burning Heaven Church has left for many years, and now, these precious medicinal plants have grown fully. There are so many which haven’t even been taken by others. It’s clear the heavens have prepared this for me.”

The Third Immortal smiled lightly, but was not in a rush to harvest them. Instead, he walked over to the burrowing location of the Medicine King, and said with a smile, “The aura of auspiciousness is the strongest here. There is definitely an intelligent plant hidden underground and secretly growing.

“But sadly, even if you can hide yourself from others, you can’t hide yourself from me. Reveal yourself!”

whoosh After speaking, the Third Immortal leapt forth and rushed into the ground. He didn't even move the soil as he used a special technique that allowed him to pass through normal soil and walls. It was named the Wall Passing Technique.

“Finally, he's fallen for the trap.” Upon seeing the Third Immortal enter the ground, Chu Feng, observing in the dark, couldn't help making a smile.

Chu Feng felt, after the Third Immortal discovered the Medicine King hiding within the Guardian Formation underground, he definitely wouldn't retreat like Chu Feng due to his strength. Instead, it was more likely he would attempt to break through the formation with his full strength. After all, the Third Immortal did have the power to do so.

boom As expected, shortly after he burrowed into the ground, the entire peak trembled. However, the peak was clearly reinforced by some special power. Despite such intense shaking, only a few rocks fell and it was not destroyed. It remained quite firm.

whoosh Quickly after, a person shot out from the ground—it was the Third Immortal.

However, with contrast to his former calm expression, the Third Immortal now had a hint of seriousness, especially so for his fierce eyes. They emitted a blinding light, like two lanterns. He closely gazed at the surface of the Guardian Formation, giving it a careful examination.

aooo—

Just at that moment, a furious roar suddenly broke out. Afterwards, the soil on the surface surged and several thick tree branches of ten or so meters shot out from the ground.

Those tree branches were very strange. They were not only equipped with spikes, they even contained extremely horrifying power. On every single branch, there was a pair of blood-red eyes, resembling a monster.

“What a powerful Guardian Formation. It’s even scarier than what I initially predicted. Luckily I didn’t activate this before, otherwise I wouldn’t even have had the chance to escape. I would have already been killed while still underground.”

Chu Feng instantly knew the branch wasn’t a true monster though. It was only a technique of some sort stemming from the Guardian Formation. However, something that couldn’t be disagreed upon was the immense power of these several thick branches. They were extremely troublesome, and even a rank one Martial King would be no match for them. As such, the Third Immortal didn’t dare to be careless in the slightest.

At that instant, Chu Feng was very worried—worried the Third Immortal would give up due to the overwhelming strength of the Guardian Formation.

“Haha, interesting. The Burning Heaven Church even left behind a killing formation like this? It’s for protecting the Medicine King, which possesses intelligence?”

“This killing formation could indeed stop quite a few people, but sadly, it cannot stop me. All the plants here are mine! Not a single one should even think of escaping!”

However, Chu Feng’s worry was unneeded. The Third Immortal had no plans to retreat, and he even expressed his excitement. With his sword-like brows furrowing deeply, he overlaid his palms and attacked the branches released by the Guardian Formation.

boom boom boom boom The Third Immortal’s attacks were very fierce. They weren’t all that beautiful, but every single strike was skillful and contained endless power.

The special power within the peak had made itself extremely tough. If it were any other peak, any of the Third Immortal’s attack would have destroyed it completely. There wouldn’t even be anything left.

In reality, other than that peak, which remained undamaged, all other peaks nearby became dust, disintegrated by the shock waves from the Third Immortal's attack.

The power of a Martial King was indeed terrifying. It was several times superior to a Martial Lord.

aoo—

However, the branches sent by the Guardian Formation were not there for nothing. As they slashed through the air, they were able to cut even space itself. How did those even look like simple branches? They were simply unstoppable sharp blades.

boom

Suddenly, another wave came from the Guardian Formation. After being struck by that wave, flames appeared on the ferocious branches.

The flames were very strange. They continuously made crackling sounds, and even had the power to burn through everything. Before such fire, even air was set ablaze. In an instant, flames arose everywhere and engulfed everything within a hundred miles. Even though the peak was undamaged, everything outside the peak was buried beneath an inferno.

Luckily, Chu Feng was already prepared—he was hiding in the sky. Otherwise, the remnants of their battle alone could turn Chu Feng into dust.

whoosh However, just at that moment, Chu Feng's complexion suddenly changed. He couldn't help casting his gaze behind him, because he felt a person floating downwards nearby, landing atop a white cloud.

Chapter 857 - Fierce Woman

MGA: Chapter 857 - Fierce Woman

When Chu Feng looked more carefully, his eyes lit up. He noticed the person who came was rather tall, and had a pure-white long-sleeve dress even whiter than snow.

That dress was quite long as it tightly wrapped around her body. Even her palms and shoes were covered by that long dress. One could truly say not a single inch of her skin was revealed.

However, judging by her firm and round chest, Chu Feng still knew that the person who came was female.

However, she also wore a white-coloured conical hat, and on the hat there was even a white veil that drooped down, covering her appearance.

At that moment, Chu Feng didn't dare to use the Heaven's Eyes, nor did he dare to use Spirit power. So, he could not determine her strength, true age, or appearance.

However, the innate aura she possessed was not something clothes could cover. Chu Feng was nearly certain she was not a simple person at all.

It was because she too had concealed her aura, and like Chu Feng before, was staring at the mountain peak, at the Third Immortal who was fighting the ruthless branches. Judging by feeling, Chu Feng knew she was not a kind one. Most likely, she had come here for the plants on the peak.

boom boom boom

At that very moment, the battle on the peak had become more and more intense.

The ablaze branches were akin to flaming dragons arising from the ground. They were very ferocious.

“The unique flames of the Burning Heaven Church... As I thought, this is something left by the Burning Heaven Church. That’s fine. Let me see how strong you are!”

But in spite of all that, the Third Immortal was not afraid at all. With the flip of his palm, a long rod three meters in length appeared within his hand.

That rod was completely green, and there were interwoven runes engraved on it. It was an Incomplete Royal Armament.

When that rod appeared, the aura surrounding the Third Immortal became completely different. It had risen enormously.

swish

Then, he abruptly waved the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand, and stirred up an ear-piercing swish.

After waving the Incomplete Royal Armament, a jade-green wave of light shot out from his Incomplete Royal Armament in a half-moon shape, slashing towards one of the branches. An explosion thus followed.

bang

The jade-green light wave was too powerful. With only a single strike, it cut one of the branches in half.

bang bang bang

Quickly afterwards, the Third Immortal kept on waving the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand. In a situation like that, the branches with horrifying flames had lost their ability to attack. One after the other, they were severed.

“So powerful. It’s said that Royal Armaments are prepared for Martial Kings. It seems that it is true.”

Chu Feng nodded when he saw such a scene. He was greatly convinced by the Third Immortal’s powerful fighting strength. He too had an Incomplete Royal Armament, but in his hands, he could not create power as strong as the Third Immortal’s.

Even though the body of a Martial King was superior to him by a few times, he had to admit that in the Third Immortal’s hand, the Incomplete Royal Armament had become several times stronger. He had truly displayed the power of an Incomplete Royal Armament.

However, after such a scene, Chu Feng couldn’t help but think if an Incomplete Royal Armament in the hands of a Martial King was so powerful already, what would happen if a Royal Armament were in the hands of a Martial King?

bang bang bang...

Just at that moment, there were several more explosions. After those explosions disappeared, the world beneath the sky had become extremely tranquil.

If one looked around, they would see that the horrifying flames which engulfed everything beneath the peak had disappeared. What remained were only pitch-black mountain rocks and dust.

Looking back at the mountain peak, the terrifying branches sent by the Guardian Formation had all been cut in two. They lost their former power and their frightening offensive strength.

At that moment, from its physical form, the branches became golden rays of light. Moreover, those rays of light were spreading apart, and becoming countless golden dots. They were like fireflies as they shrank back into the ground

Those branches were only an attack from the Guardian Formation. Even though they were destroyed, the Guardian Formation was still undamaged.

Of course, the Guardian Formation which lacked an attack was akin to a tiger without teeth. It no longer presented any threat.

At that moment, as long as the Third Immortal used a bit of power, he could easily break through the Guardian Formation. Then, the Sacred Entity hidden here would also appear, and Chu Feng could then snatch it away after all his hard work.

“Hahaha, the killing formation of the Burning Heaven Church has disappointed me!

“It looks like even if the Burning Heaven Church were still in the Eastern Sea Region, they would be no match for the Immortal Execution Archipelago!”

At that moment, the Third Immortal laughed madly. His laughter was very happy, and even a bit excited.

It could be seen that he assumed the Guardian Formation was the Burning Heaven Church’s killing formation—not a Guardian Formation. So, after breaking through such a formation, he was so happy.

After all, the Burning Heaven Church was named as one of the strongest powers in the Eastern Sea Region. The Immortal Execution Archipelago back then did not even stand a chance against them.

And even though the Immortal Execution Archipelago had risen in power now, the Burning Heaven Church existed no more. They were unable to compare themselves with the Burning Heaven Church. However, this killing formation had satisfied the Third Immortal’s heart of pride.

“Little thing, without the protection of this killing formation, where are you going to escape now?” After laughing, the Third Immortal abruptly extended his hand and grabbed downwards. He wanted to completely break

open the Guardian Formation deep underground and pull out the Medicine King hiding inside.

When he saw that, Chu Feng's pupils shrank. He felt a lump rise in his throat as he felt extreme nervousness.

The situation before his eyes was really too crucial. As long as the Third Immortal completely opened the Guardian Formation, the Sacred Entity that had been growing for several thousands of years would appear. Regardless of its appearance, it was a cultivation treasure to Chu Feng that he could not miss out on. He had to get his hands on it.

whoosh In such a crucial moment, the white-dress female hiding within the clouds leapt forth and emanated an extremely powerful might. Like light, she rushed towards the mountain peak.

“This aura!” Seeing the white-skirt woman making her move, Chu Feng's complexion changed greatly because at that instant, he could feel what cultivation she possessed.

A rank nine Martial Lord. She was a rank nine Martial Lord, but her aura was different from others. That feeling was extremely similar to Chu Feng's aura—it was an alteration in aura due to extremely powerful fighting strength.

From that, it could be seen that despite being only a rank nine Martial Lord, she was still very strong, possibly even relatively stronger than Chu Feng.

“Who are you?” The Third Immortal also noticed her at that moment. He stopped breaking open the formation, and cast his fierce gaze as well as his boundless pressure of a rank two Martial King towards the sky, planning to shock her completely.

However, the woman ignored the Third Immortal's question. She didn't reply to the Third Immortal's question, and not only that, the pressure from the Third Immortal—a rank two Martial King's—was of no effect to her.

boom She even, when less than three thousand meters from the Third Immortal, waved her sleeve and made her move first. She attacked the Third Immortal.

Upon seeing such a scene, not to mention Chu Feng, even the Third Immortal, as a rank two Martial King, changed his expression greatly.

It was because the attack she sent had completely destroyed the Third Immortal's pressure. It was very powerful, causing even the Third Immortal to feel very astonished.

Chapter 858 - Frightening Strength

MGA: Chapter 858 - Frightening Strength

boom rumble rumble

A boundless attack was sent out upon a sweep of the woman's sleeve. It was a burst of chilliness—chilliness that pierced the bones. In front of such chilliness, one could even see frost appearing in the air.

Even the pressure sent by the Third Immortal collapsed immediately. The chilliness, with a horrifying bearing, descended from the sky and went straight for the Third Immortal.

“What an audacious brat! You dare to attack me?”

Even though he felt she was not a simple person at all, she was still a rank nine Martial Lord. Why would the Third Immortal, a rank two Martial King, be afraid?

whoosh He waved the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand and several green light waves, which had severed the horrifying tree branches, burst out, flying towards the white-dress woman in the air.

“Break.” Just at that moment, an extremely pleasant voice came from the woman's mouth. That voice was very mellifluous—it was akin to a clear bell, yet also to a soft cry of a bird.

The power that came with that voice was extremely strong. When the woman lightly shouted, a snow-white hand appeared from the end of her sleeve, one as exquisite as jade.

A boundless pressure came along with the appearance of that hand. With a boom, just by a single attack from her palm, it destroyed the attack from the Third Immortal's Incomplete Royal Armament.

boom boom boom boom

However, that wasn't even much. After destroying the Third Immortal's attack with a single strike, she sent more palm attacks forth.

With the attacks continuously raining down, it invisibly made a formation of attack akin to a storm. However, the power the formation contained was not something a storm could even match.

After those palm attacks appeared, even the Third Immortal tightly furrowed his brows. He clenched the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand and quickly flung it about. He continued sending green light waves to block her attacks.

whoosh However, she was just too powerful. Just as the Third Immortal finished destroying the palm attacks she sent, she had already appeared behind the Third Immortal like a ghost, and slammed her palm down at his head. The power it contained was as if it could break through everything.

swish In a situation like that, the Third Immortal was quite frightened. His aged face instantly turned pale because he never expected a mere rank nine Martial Lord to be so powerful.

At that moment, even though he wasn't willing to admit she was strong, he didn't dare to be careless. He leapt forward and fled to the distance. He had found out she was too quick, and her attacks were too strong. The chilliness she exuded from her body pierced the bones at short distances. It was unendurable, so he had to keep his distance.

However, the woman who had already neared him simply didn't give him a chance to escape. As the Third Immortal flew through the air, the woman also followed as her dress fluttered.

She waved her arm, and flipped her palm. Layers upon layers of destructive power endlessly surged towards the Third Immortal.

She was really too powerful. Her attacks were blunt and fierce and without weakness. Even though the Third Immortal held an Incomplete Royal

Armament and put forth his full strength, he could only dodge her attacks but do nothing else.

Since her attacks were so fierce, the Third Immortal was actually wounded by the remnants of the attacks. His clothes were quite ragged, and his long hair was in chaos. Even his face swelled, and layers of frost started appearing and spreading in all parts of his body.

“If I may ask, what past animosity do you have towards me to prompt such relentless attacks?” the Third Immortal asked as he felt he was at a disadvantage.

He knew she wasn’t a normal rank nine Martial Lord. The strength she had made even him fearful.

As such, he felt that she was likely some peak expert from the Eastern Sea Region who concealed her identity and cultivation. That was why she was so powerful.

However, she did not respond to the Third Immortal’s question. Not only that, her attacks became even fiercer, to the point it was nearly putting the Third Immortal to death.

“Haha, this is truly interesting! I didn’t think there would be such a powerful person in this Eastern Sea Region!

“Chu Feng, this person likely hasn’t concealed her cultivation. A rank nine Martial Lord—that’s probably her actual cultivation.

“And to possess such strength with merely this cultivation... that is almost comparable to you! Finally, someone decently presentable has appeared in this region of mediocrity.

“It seems that you’ve finally met a good opponent!” The battle which disgraced the Third Immortal made Eggy elated.

“Yeah! From what I see, I don’t think she’s all that old. She likely in the same generation as me, yet she has such ferocious strength. It is truly quite

unbelievable.

“As a rank nine Martial Lord, she forced a rank two Martial King to a state like this, and the Third Immortal even has an Incomplete Royal Armament, which increased his fighting strength greatly.

“Yet, that woman is not only bare-handed, she feels it beneath herself to even use a martial skill! With might alone, and the most direct physical attacks, she forced the Third Immortal to a state like this.

“Impressive. Truly too impressive. But, who is she? Such a powerful person shouldn’t be so unknown.

“Why have I never heard of her before?”

Chu Feng was also dumbfounded by that woman’s powerful strength. This was the first time, ever since meeting Zi Ling, that Chu Feng met a person who had superior fighting strength to him yet also in the same generation. Moreover, her strength was clearly superior to even Zi Ling. It was truly unimaginably powerful.

“I am the Third Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Senior, I dare say I have never met you before, and it’s likely that the Immortal Execution Archipelago isn’t your enemy either. Yet, Senior, you don’t even say anything before your attempts to kill me. I am very puzzled.

“Senior, please speak of the reason and let me die with meaning. Even if I am beaten, I would like to know why.” Seeing as he was about to be defeated, the Third Immortal did not loudly curse. Instead, he had a respectful attitude as he asked the origin of his opponent.

whoosh And after he spoke, the woman suddenly stopped attacking and stood in air.

Seeing that, the Third Immortal quickly took that chance to pull apart the distance. Only after he felt safe did he stop.

At that moment, the Third Immortal not only had disorderly hair, he was even gasping for breath as sweat drenched him. His body was trembling slightly as well.

Chu Feng could see a layer of frost on his clothes. It was clearly due to the woman's unique and peculiar aura of chilliness. One must admit that the appearance of the Third Immortal right now was an unbearable sight to behold.

But, after seeing her horrifying strength, the Third Immortal did not rashly make a move. Instead, he clasped his hands at her, bowed, and politely said, "Senior, may I ask for your name? What action has this junior done to displease you? Could it be that this is your territory?"

"I am not the owner of this place, but since I have come here, everything belongs to me. I don't care where you came from, but you cannot take even a single blade of grass from this place.

"You are old, even older than my grandfather. Yet, you call yourself junior, and call me senior. This is truly pitiful.

"Due to that, I'll spare your life today. Scram. If I see you again, I will not let you off so easily," said the woman mockingly as she moved her long sleeve.

Chapter 859 - Shameless and Despicable

MGA: Chapter 859 - Shameless and Despicable

When he heard such words, the Third Immortal's mouth twitched as his complexion became quite distorted.

Her words were truly too ridiculing. She was clearly telling the Third Immortal that she wasn't, in his eyes, a hidden expert, an old monster that had cultivated for many years.

She, instead, was a young person, much younger than the Third Immortal. Otherwise, she wouldn't have said her grandfather wasn't even as old as the Third Immortal.

Putting aside status and age, her words of "I am not the owner of this place, but since I have come here, everything belongs to me" meant she didn't put the Third Immortal in her eyes at all, especially so when she said "scram". That was too mocking.

To the Third Immortal—a person whose status and strength was very high, and one of the peak characters in the Eastern Sea Region—it was a bare insult to him.

"Thank you." Though displeased, the Third Immortal didn't say much. Instead, he clasped his hands at her, then leapt forward and drifted away.

After the Third Immortal left, the woman stood on the spot and carefully looked. She even cast her extremely fierce Spirit power to be certain he had truly left.

"What a powerful Spirit power." After feeling the woman's Spirit power, the admiration in Chu Feng's eyes became a bit stronger. He could feel that it was very strong; it even surpassed his own. That meant she not only had

frightening strength, she was even a World Spiritist. Her Spirit Formation techniques were likely very powerful as well.

whoosh Only after confirming the Third Immortal had left did the woman float down. As her snow-white dress fluttered, she came up to the Guardian Formation and examined it.

At that instant, Chu Feng's heartbeat sped up. His entire body was tense, as if the lump he felt in his throat was as big as his heart.

She was too powerful, so he truly worried that she could tell there was a Sacred Entity concealed in this place. If that were the case, his work would have been for nothing, and instead, it would have helped someone else instead.

But it seemed Chu Feng's worries were unneeded. After she gave it a glance, she didn't have any shocked expression, nor was she in a hurry to capture the Medicine King hidden in the Guardian Formation.

Instead, she came up to a very ordinary medicinal plant, laid a formation, and prepared to harvest it.

Her Spirit Formation techniques were truly quite impressive. Due to the golden Spirit Formation, Chu Feng could tell she was not only a Gold-cloak World Spiritist, her Spirit Formation strength was not weaker than Chu Feng at all, possibly even stronger. She truly possessed a horrifying level of strength.

In front of such a powerful Spirit Formation, the medicinal plant could not resist. In merely a blink, it was harvested by her, and put into her sack.

After successfully harvesting a single medicinal plant, she still didn't pay attention to the Medicine King. Instead, she went up to another very ordinary medicinal plant and continued harvesting.

“Why isn't she rushing to harvest the Medicine King, and instead, is harvesting these relatively ordinary plants?”

Chu Feng felt confused at her actions. He didn't really understand what her target was, but he couldn't really do anything. He could only silently watch and await her to quickly pick the plants.

rumble rumble rumble However, just at that moment, the sky suddenly started violently trembling. Quickly after, the world started trembling. An aura belonging to someone extremely powerful was rapidly nearing, twisting even air itself.

“Brat, you are arrogant and disrespectful! Today, I'll kill you!” At the same time, a fierce shout came forth. It was the Third Immortal. He did not truly leave, and instead, had returned to take revenge on the woman.

“You are looking to die.” After knowing the Third Immortal had returned, the woman coldly snorted. Then, she leapt forward and with icy killing intent, met the Third Immortal head-on.

“Brat, die!” Just at that moment, the Third Immortal had come close. His figure had appeared within Chu Feng's and the woman's vision.

However, at that moment, his demeanor was completely different. Not only did his power rise, there was dazzling radiance swirling around his Incomplete Royal Armament. It also emanated destructive and horrifying power.

boom Just as Chu Feng saw the Third Immortal, he had attacked. He abruptly waved the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand, and a boundless pressure instantly enveloped the woman. Then, a white light soared into the sky, becoming a huge sword that could cut even the world itself. With light-like speed, he stabbed it towards the woman.

“This is a Mortal Taboo martial skill, the Illusory Sword Technique!”

When he saw this, Chu Feng couldn't help inhaling deeply because Chu Feng could truly not be any more familiar with that strike.

It was a Mortal Taboo martial skill, called the Illusory Sword Technique. It was a core skill only cultivated by the higher echelons of the Immortal

Execution Archipelago.

Moreover, Chu Feng had seen Ya Fei, Zhan Feng, and also Murong Wan use it before. He knew its power was very frightening.

However, the young Martial Lords who had used it clearly couldn't be compared to the Third Immortal, a rank two Martial King, because the Illusory Sword Technique he used was much more horrifying. It was as if its might could simply destroy this world.

boom—

As shock flooded Chu Feng, the Illusory Sword Technique had arrived, engulfing the unprepared woman.

The Illusory Sword Technique streaked through the air, and the pressure it exuded alone shattered space itself, causing endless darkness to appear in mid-air.

Then, soon after, the Illusory Sword Technique exploded as well. Its blinding light engulfed everything as if the sun had descent upon the earth. Moreover, a destructive might swept through everywhere.

“This damned Third Immortal. He's this despicable! So the reason he admitted his loss was to channel this Mortal Taboo martial skill. After it finished, he used special techniques to secretly approach, then surprise attack her. That is too shameless.”

Seeing the horrifying ripples wreaking havoc over on the woman's side, Chu Feng tightly furrowed. Even though he and she were unrelated—both the woman and the Third Immortal could be called his enemy—when the Third Immortal, a senior, used such methods against a junior such as her, Chu Feng couldn't continue watching.

aoo—

But just at that time, a deafening howl suddenly rang out. At the same time, in the direction of the Illusory Sword Technique's explosion, a

violent hurricane appeared. The deafening howl had come from that hurricane.

The hurricane was extremely large, and after it appeared, what came from it was suction power. It was absorbing the energy ripples sent by the Illusory Sword Technique.

The power released by the hurricane was too horrifying. In merely a blink, it had completely absorbed the shock waves from the Illusory Sword Technique, and space itself, which had already collapsed due to the Illusory Sword Technique, gradually returned to its natural state like broken glass shards.

At the same time, the woman once again appeared before Chu Feng and the Third Immortal.

“Heavens, this girl...”

After seeing her, even though Chu Feng had experienced quite a few things in this world, his complexion couldn't help changing as he felt dumbfounded.

Chapter 860 - Tantai Xue

MGA: Chapter 860 - Tantai Xue

At that moment, she was standing in the air. Her snow-white dress was undamaged, and it fluttered with the wind.

However, the hat she wore on her head had disappeared. Thus, without the concealment of the veil, her appearance appeared within Chu Feng's vision.

Even though, in his angle, he could only see half of her face, he was still frightened by her complexion.

Her appearance could be described with two words: incomparably ugly.

She was truly incomparably ugly. There was acne all over her face, and of varying sizes. Because there were really too many, one could not even see her facial features all that clear. With a glance, it gave a single feeling to others: revolting.

Her skin was as white as snow, yet on such a fair countenance, there were some red and some purple acne. They densely filled up her entire face. Was it not revolting?

Moreover, putting aside the acne, the outline of her face was very odd as well. Likely, even without the acne, she would have still been an ugly person.

“Ugly! Why are there so many disgusting things on her face? As a World Spiritist, she's allowing such nasty things on her face and isn't doing anything about them?” When she saw that, even Eggy was frightened quite a bit because her complexion was definitely the most ugly she had seen.

“There are only two possibilities in consideration of what I know. The first is that she's intentionally using these things to cover her face, thus hiding

her identity.

“The other is that it is innate, and it cannot be changed through external power. Even with Spirit Formation techniques it cannot.

“I feel that it’s likely the latter for her. There are many ways to hide one’s appearance, so there was no need for her to choose this one. Besides, her fighting strength is quite overwhelming. It’s possible to say her body is special. Those with special bodies are indeed unable to change certain things. One’s complexion is one of those things.

“However, rather than her face, I’m more interested in her true strength. I really want to know how powerful she is. She remains unharmed even after forcibly taking a Mortal Taboo martial skill. Only the hat on her head was hit away.” Chu Feng frowned slightly. The astonishment in his eyes was fully shown. He felt quite a bit of admiration towards her powerful strength.

However, in contrast to Chu Feng, the Third Immortal’s expression changed greatly. On his old face, there was shock everywhere because the Illusory Sword Technique was one of the strongest trump cards he had.

Yet, such a powerful killing blow, when forcibly taken by her, did no damage. How could he not panic? Such a scene meant one thing—her strength was far above his own, so far that he could not truly harm her in any way.

A rank nine Martial Lord had fighting strength above a rank two Martial King. If that was said to others, no one would believe it because that was not something that made any sense.

Yet, right now, it had indeed happened, and it had happened on a famous person like the Third Immortal.

whoosh

Seeing as things were progressing poorly, the Third Immortal turned around, and with a gale spawned beneath his feet, he shot into the distance

as if he were light. It was a powerful bodily martial skill, and it was very quick. He wanted to escape.

“You truly deserve death.”

But just at that moment, an extremely horrifying aura burst out of the woman’s body, instantly enveloping several miles of land.

It was not only might. There was also icy, bone-chilling bloodlust. She was enraged. She was several times more furious than before. It was not only because the Third Immortal didn’t stay true to his words and returned to surprise-attack her, it was more so because the Third Immortal made her hat fly away, causing her appearance to be shown.

“I will kill you!”

Suddenly, she shouted. When her voice came out of her mouth, everything violently quivered. The clouds in the sky were blown away, and the mountains underneath her were destroyed. Everything within a thousand miles collapsed or cracked.

“Ah—”

Before such might, the Third Immortal, who was swiftly fleeing, trembled before a mouthful of blood was coughed out. Not only that, even his entire body instantly cracked. Large amounts of blood started gushing out of various places, and the sharp-red blood had instantly dyed his clothes red.

Soon after, like a kite with its string snapped, he fell from the air.

“She’s this powerful?” When he saw that, Chu Feng was shocked once again. It was one thing if she only had the strength to defeat a rank two Martial King, but a single furious howl half-killed the Third Immortal! And that was even with his strong body! If it were a normal person, then before such might, they would have exploded and become a pool of blood! Nothing would even remain.

It was too horrifying. The fighting strength she displayed was too powerful. It was simply so powerful that it was unfathomable. By rough estimations, even if it were a rank three Martial King she could put up a fight. She was a true monster.

boom

However, just as the Third Immortal was about to land on the ground, an extremely powerful aura burst from his body. He then flew up again, and fled to the distance. He instantly disappeared in the horizon.

“Hasn’t he just run again? But, the price for that is still quite heavy.” Chu Feng heaved a long sigh. Since she didn’t chase after him, Chu Feng knew the Third Immortal was successful in his escape.

But, Chu Feng could also tell the reason he had such an abrupt burst of power was because he consumed a Forbidden Medicine, and a very fierce one at that.

So, Chu Feng knew the Third Immortal wouldn’t stay here anymore. He would definitely leave quickly; otherwise, when the backlash of the Forbidden Medicine attacked him, he would lose all his ability to escape. If he were caught by her, then he was as good as dead.

“What is your name? Do you dare speak it?” But just as Chu Feng felt the Third Immortal had been successful in keeping his life, his voice rang out again. He still dared to speak so loftily at her.

But upon another thought, it was still understandable. A grand rank two Martial King, a famous person whose name shocked the Eastern Sea Region, was forced into consuming a Forbidden Medicine due to a rank nine Martial Lord, and forced to escape whilst bruised as well. That was quite laughable. His bitter feelings were within reason.

“I am Tantai Xue. However, there’s no need to search for revenge. I will go visit your Immortal Execution Archipelago.” The woman did not back down and loudly replied.

“Tantai Xue. Damn Tantai Xue. I’ve remembered it. The next time we meet, I will definitely make you pay the price for today’s actions.” The Third Immortal’s voice rang out again, and one could even hear his gnashing teeth. However, his voice was fading away more and more, and it was quieter and quieter. As such, one knew he had truly escaped.

“Hmph. A little Immortal Execution Archipelago. You think I’m afraid?” However, the woman did not see the Third Immortal’s threat as anything. She grabbed out in the air, and the hat that flew away reappeared within her hand.

After putting the hat back on, the woman floated down and continued harvesting the plants.

“Tantai Xue, huh?” However, even when Chu Feng saw her drive the Third Immortal away then continued harvesting the medicinal plants, he did not feel too happy. Instead, he thought, “Tantai Xue, oh Tantai Xue, I don’t care where you came from, nor who your master is. I just want to know why you aren’t harvesting the precious plants, and instead, harvesting these ordinary ones?”

“Please, I’m begging you, take that Medicine King and help me deactivate this Guardian Formation!”

Chapter 861 - Completion

MGA: Chapter 861 - Completion

Chu Feng was very anxious. He didn't understand why the powerful Tantai Xue ignored the most precious Medicine King and, instead, harvested the most commonly found medicinal plants.

Chu Feng was very worried—worried that Tantai Xue was an odd person. He was worried she didn't need precious medicinal plants and instead, only needed the typical plants. If that were true, then it'd mean Tantai Xue would ignore the Medicine King, which in turn meant she wouldn't help Chu Feng deactivate the Guardian Formation.

The formation was very strong, and even though the most horrifying attacks were gone—it was now like a toothless tiger—a tiger was still a tiger. Even if it didn't have teeth, Chu Feng wasn't certain if he could control it or not with the strength he currently had.

However, Chu Feng's worries were superfluous because after a while of observation, Chu Feng discovered a few things regarding Tantai Xue's increasingly pleasant expression.

Actually, it wasn't that she liked only normal medicinal plants, she just had a habit of collecting things from low to high, from the worst to the best.

She had started harvesting the most worthless medicinal plants, and bit by bit, she started harvesting the more precious ones. To her, that was a very enjoyable progress, and now, she was feeling quite joyful.

However, that made Chu Feng very anxious because if she continued that, even if she harvested them quickly, there was an entire mountain peak of plants! It would take at least several days for her to harvest them all. Chu Feng did not want to hide in the sky for several days and do nothing at all.

whoosh

ji ji ji However, it seemed that the heavens were helping Chu Feng. Just as he panicked, not knowing his next step, the Medicine King that was hiding within the Guardian Formation suddenly came out of the ground.

The Medicine King's movements naturally attracted Tantai Xue's attention. So, she too couldn't help casting her gaze at the medicinal plant.

However, when it saw Tantai Xue's gaze, it even dared to wave its leaves, doing a provocative action towards her. Then, it burrowed back into the ground, and returned to the Guardian Formation.

“It is truly looking to die!” The medicinal plant's action successfully attracted Tantai Xue's fury. With a slight tremble of her body, she disappeared.

boom Coincident with her disappearance, an explosion came from underground. It was caused by Tantai Xue. She had invisibly entered the ground and was deactivating the Guardian Formation.

Shortly after the explosion, Tantai Xue once again appeared above the mountain peak. Moreover, there was an extra plant in her hand—it was the Medicine King.

Tantai Xue's Wall Passing Technique was too powerful; it was even stronger than the Third Immortal's. She was able to pass through soil without even making any sound.

But, at that very instant, Chu Feng didn't have the mind to notice such a thing because his gaze was already completely attracted by the intangible change on the peak.

He was staring at a place—a wall near the bottom of the mountain peak. It appeared very normal, but in reality, it was an entrance. Moreover, that entrance had already been opened.

“Success, finally! I’ve waited for long, so many unexpected things happened, but at last, the Guardian Formation has been deactivated!”

Chu Feng was elated at that moment. Not only was the Guardian Formation deactivated by Tantai Xue, the entrance Chu Feng predicted had completely opened as well. So long as Chu Feng entered, he would find the Sacred Entity hidden within.

Chu Feng didn’t stand in the sky anymore. He carefully shifted forward towards the entrance.

Even though the concealment techniques Chu Feng used right now required a great deal of time for careful setup, when facing such an incomprehensible expert like Tantai Xue, he didn’t dare to be careless in any way. Instead, he moved slowly to the bottom of the peak from high in the air.

That required half a day...

When Chu Feng reached the bottom part of the peak, it was already midnight.

At the apex of the peak, golden radiance still endlessly appeared. Tantai Xue did not rest yet. Instead, she was continuing her harvest, enjoying this fun task.

As for Chu Feng, he was extremely excited. He had already passed through that wall and entered a cave.

In the instant he entered, Chu Feng’s heart was rapidly beating. He could feel an unspeakable aura that filled the entire cave. The emitter of such aura was pushing him forward, deeper into the cave.

Finally, Chu Feng reached the place with the strongest aura. This was a very narrow end of the cave, and there was a strange rock here. The aura that made Chu Feng’s body feel extremely comfortable came from that rock.

It was too beautiful. Although it was a rock, its shape resembled more a tree. It was very similar to a willow tree; no wonder its Guardian Formation—its strongest attack—was several branches.

Quite obviously though, the rock was not a tree because the power it contained had told Chu Feng of its identity—it was the Sacred Entity.

“I’ve finally found you.” There was no need to even mention the joy Chu Feng felt. His merry smile was uncontrollably revealed on his face. He could truly not wipe away his grin.

Despite very happy, Chu Feng knew the current circumstances very well. So, he didn’t examine it and instead, quickly used a Spirit Formation to sever its connection with the peak.

The Sacred Entity was grown within the peak. The peak was akin to its mother—there was a connection between the two. Only by cutting that connection could it be taken away, and after doing so, the peak would also lose its special power.

After severing the link between the oddity and the peak, just in case, Chu Feng laid a simple formation which wrapped around this Sacred Entity. Only then did he put it into his Cosmos Sack and slipped away.

At that moment, Tantai Xue, who was still at the apex of the mountain peak, was completely focused on harvesting medicinal plants. Naturally, she didn’t notice Chu Feng’s actions.

And when Chu Feng felt he had escaped Tantai Xue’s range of detection, he hurriedly used the Secret Skill, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, and went onto the path he used to enter, and quickly escaped.

As for whether there were other treasures in the Burning Heaven Church, Chu Feng didn’t even bother checking. With Tantai Xue, such a horrifying existence, Chu Feng was also afraid there would be any unexpected situations. So, he knew when to stop—right now.

As for the Third Immortal, Chu Feng was not too worried about him. He felt that the Third Immortal was already like a bird frightened by the sound of a released bow. After escaping, he was definitely heading towards a safe place to heal himself. He would not dare to stay here for long.

And since the Third Immortal himself had left, he naturally wouldn't send other experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago to commit suicide here. As such, Chu Feng felt now was the best time to leave this place. Otherwise, if the Immortal Execution Archipelago had come later on, that wouldn't be good at all.

Chu Feng's expectations were the same as reality. After Chu Feng went through the Arctic Killing Formation and returned to the Winter Plains, he hadn't seen any person from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and thus he safely left this disastrous area.

However, shortly after Chu Feng left, the multitudinous medicinal plants on the mountain peak started to wilt. Nearly all of the ones not harvested yet died in a blink.

“Why has this happened?”

Such a sudden changed made Tantai Xue's expression change greatly. She felt she was in a daze, and didn't know what to do.

Chapter 862 - Rushing to Become a Martial Lord

MGA: Chapter 862 - Rushing to Become a Martial Lord

As Tantai Xue stood atop the peak, she didn't move. As she looked at the medicinal plants that were originally swirling with light, yet now wilted and died, she contemplated for a good while.

Suddenly, it seemed that she thought of something. She flipped her palm, and a special World Spirit Compass appeared within her hand. She willed her boundless Spirit power outward, then she flew into the air.

She carefully examined every single inch of that peak as she circled around it. She aimed to get to the bottom of this.

Finally, when she arrived at the wall entrance, she stopped.

After seriously looking at it, her body couldn't help but tremble. She cried out with an extremely joyful tone, "I didn't expect this to be a place of growth for a Sacred Entity! No wonder that killing formation was so strange."

After discovering the secret in this place, she was elated. She took a big step forward and passed through the wall, entering the narrow cave. However, when she arrived at the deepest part of the cave, as if petrified, she was frozen instantly on the spot.

She did not see the thing she expected. However, that thing had, truly, appeared here. It was just that all the evidence pointed her towards one answer: she had come late.

Looking at the empty end of the cave, at the already severed link, and feeling the remnants of the special aura, an immense bloodlust exploded from her body. She coldly shouted, "Who? Who did this?!"

After she shouted, the entire world shook. The mountain peak which extended into the clouds fragmented with a boom.

Moreover, the aura full of bloodlust had spread out. Everything it passed was shattered. It was very frightening.

However, Chu Feng simply couldn't hear such a furious roar and such horrifying bloodlust, nor could he feel it.

At that moment, Chu Feng was still at the Winter Plains. He came to a rather remote area, and hid within thick layers of ice. He truly couldn't help himself from refining the Sacred Entity.

“No wonder the Burning Heaven Church didn't bring this Sacred Entity away even though they could have.

“This Sacred Entity does have a tiny bit of spiritual nature. If it continued its growth, after some number of years, perhaps even it could develop intelligence and become a Spiritual Being. At that time, its power would even be above typical Spiritual Beings.

“In addition, the energy in this Sacred Entity is too violent. Normal people simply cannot refine it. Other than using it to grow medicinal plants, it truly isn't useful for anything else.

“The Burning Heaven Church must have felt it'd be useless to bring it with them. So, it was just better to leave it in the peak and leave it up to grow on its own.” Chu Feng discovered its specialness after examining the Sacred Entity.

“The Burning Heaven Church teaches kindness to others. That's why they left this Sacred Entity here.

“However, if it were the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they wouldn't have been as kind as that. From how they do things, what they cannot obtain, others shouldn't even think of obtaining either. They would rather destroy this Sacred Entity than keep it there and let it grow,” Eggy said.

“Of course. If I couldn’t refine this and if it weren’t so useful to me, I wouldn’t have cut off its future. After all, it does have a bit of a spiritual nature. After some number of years, perhaps it too will be a life.” Chu Feng nodded, expressing his agreement with Eggy thoughts.

“Chu Feng, although this Sacred Entity has been in growth for quite a while, and the energy contained within is extremely violent, since it had bred so many medicinal plants for so many years, the natural energy inside has been exhausted quite a bit. It’s not too powerful right now. Do you think it can help you make a breakthrough, and let you become a Martial Lord?” Eggy asked.

“I don’t know either because the lightning beasts in my body are having bigger and bigger appetites. I don’t even know how many cultivation resources they need to help me make a breakthrough.

“But no matter what, this Sacred Entity will help me greatly. We will know the result when I refine it.” Chu Feng lightly smiled, and without waiting for any more words, he overlaid his hands and cast a special spell. A golden Refining Formation enveloped the Sacred Entity.

hmm After the activation of the formation, the outside layer of the Sacred Entity started becoming illusory. Strands of faint entities of light kept on drilling out from the Sacred Entity. Like little snakes, they swirled around the Sacred Entity.

However, the seemingly very soft light bodies were very horrifying. After they appeared, the areas they passed made black cracks appear—they were tearing the fabrics of space.

The energy contained within the Sacred Entity was extremely violent. However, right now, they were being shaved off bit by bit by Chu Feng with the Spirit Formation.

Once a small amount of energy was released, Chu Feng opened his mouth and a boundless suction power surged forth. He started absorbing the energy into his stomach and started the refining.

If it were a normal person, that was something simply unimaginable because the energy within the Sacred Entity was really too terrifying. If a normal person had absorbed it like Chu Feng, likely only a single strand would completely destroy their body.

However, Chu Feng was able to. Not only absorb it, but truly refine it. He didn't even waste a single speck as he converted the violent energy into energy that could increase his cultivation, after which he refined it.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng's cultivation that had stood in place for a long time started growing rapidly. The several lightning beasts within his dantian, silent for quite some time, started moving as well. They greedily engulfed the energy procured from the Sacred Entity.

The Divine Lightning in Chu Feng's dantian was very powerful. Even though there were already three that entered his bloodstream, it did not diminish the rate of consumption nor the speed of refining.

Even though the Sacred Entity had very berserk energy, to them, it was no more than a tasty dish.

Just like that, as Chu Feng expected, the Sacred Entity that could not be refined was being broken down by the Spirit Formation, then refined in his dantian.

Chu Feng's Spirit Formation technique was still limited. Even though his Divine Lightning's speed of refining was very quick, his speed of breaking down the Sacred Entity could not match it. So, Chu Feng only roughly finished refining the Sacred Entity after several days.

At that moment, not only half a fist's size remained of that Sacred Entity. Its initial appearance of a willow tree, due to refining, left only several branches.

As for Chu Feng's aura, it had increased several times in strength. That feeling was one of nearing a Martial Lord infinitely. With one more step, he could step past the Heaven realm and become a Martial Lord.

A true

,

genuine, Martial Lord.

Chapter 863 - Divine Lightning Shooting into the Sky

MGA: Chapter 863 - Divine Lightning Shooting into the Sky

BOOM— Finally, a horrifying explosion burst within Chu Feng's dantian.

It was a very strange sound. More deafening than thunder, more moving than a tiger's roar, mightier than a dragon's howl... However, others could not hear that sound. Only Chu Feng alone could.

At the same time of the explosion, Chu Feng's aura rapidly rose. It was extremely quick, and it was simply shocking.

Simultaneously, with Chu Feng as the center, Martial power within several thousand miles, as if they were summoned, started quickly surging towards Chu Feng's body and gathering around it.

At that instant, his aura was clearly different from before. There was a change in essence—this was true power.

He had made a breakthrough. Before the Sacred Entity had even been completely refined, Chu Feng's cultivation had rose. He had successfully surpassed the Heaven realm, and became a Martial Lord. He had

truly

become a Martial Lord.

Martial Lord—how many people worked for their entire life yet could not even touch this level and could only admire those who were able to? It was a realm seen as godlike in many people's eyes.

But Chu Feng, before the age of twenty, had entered such a realm. That was definitely quite an achievement.

At least, within the Eastern Sea Region, and to those in the eastern continents, only very few geniuses could accomplish such a feat.

Even though he was only a rank one Martial Lord, that was before Chu Feng used the power of the Divine Lightning. Now, this cultivation was one that belonged to Chu Feng himself—it was his real cultivation.

“Haha, success! I’ve finally succeeded! I’ve finally become an actual Martial Lord!” Chu Feng was elated and excited. His expression could not be represented by words.

Although Chu Feng hadn’t really used too much time to become a Martial Lord from the Heaven realm, the price he paid was very hefty. It was something a normal person could not afford.

Although there was a portion of luck in today’s success, it could not be denied that Chu Feng had exchanged his hard work for that success.

“Crap, this feeling!” However, just as Chu Feng felt elated, his complexion suddenly changed greatly. An unprecedented fear emerged in his eyes.

Chu Feng discovered with astonishment that when he became a Martial Lord, a strand of red lightning had surged out of his dantian, rapidly moving about in his body.

Typically, that was something normal and Chu Feng should be happy. After all, as long as Chu Feng passed a huge realm, he was able to obtain the power of a single lightning and freely use it for himself.

However, right now, it was a bit different. The red lightning, as it surged within his body, didn’t meld into his blood at all and give a feeling of union. Instead, it wanted to rush

out

of his body. The lightning wanted to break out, and leave the shackles of Chu Feng's physical body.

Most important though, it was not only the red lightning that wanted to rush out. The gold, blue, and purple ones that had already merged with Chu Feng's blood also wanted to rush out. They restless surged with the red lightning; they were all attempting to leave Chu Feng's body.

How could Chu Feng remain calm?!

Due to the restriction of the Divine Lightning, to make a single level of breakthrough required Chu Feng to pay a price several times of others. That made Chu Feng's outstanding comprehension strength useless. As such, he had to gather sufficient cultivation resources in order to raise his cultivation.

But, unquestionably, for all disadvantages there were advantages. Although the Divine Lightning increased Chu Feng's difficult in making breakthroughs, it gave him fighting strength that surpassed others. Moreover, the Divine Lightnings were truly very strong—unimaginably strong.

Right now, there were

four

lightnings that wanted to break out of his body and leave Chu Feng. No one knew if that was fortune or disaster, something of joy or of sorrow.

However, what was fated to happen would happen eventually. There were some things that Chu Feng could not stop, nor change. And for the Divine Lightning in Chu Feng's body, he could not control them either.

bzzzz...

Finally, from Chu Feng's body, a burst of lightning surged out. They—gold, blue, purple, and red—shot out from Chu Feng's body, pierced through the layers of chilling ice, straight into the sky.

In an instant, the initially pitch-black sky was taken over by the four colours of lightning. The rays of light illuminated everything, nearly enveloping the entire Winter Plains.

aoo—

Most importantly, after the four lightnings appeared in the sky, they became four huge beasts of varying shapes. They went through the clouds, above the Nine Heavens, and started darting. They let out deafening roars, shocking the world, stunning everyone.

“Heavens! What is that?”

“It’s so scary! It looks like lightning, but why has so much lightning appeared? There are even four colours!”

“Don’t be foolish. How can lightning make such a horrifying noise? They are clearly four huge beasts. Four huge beasts of lightning, so unimaginably powerful.”

Even though it was already deep in the night, the lightning that suddenly engulfed the entire Winter Plains, and the deafening roars, woke everyone up.

When they walked out of their houses, and looked at the sky, every single one of them was shocked. They were dumbfounded by the scene in the sky.

After feeling shock, the first emotion they felt afterwards was endless fear.

The four lightning beasts in the sky were truly too terrifying. No matter their shape, or their roars, both did not belong this world. Moreover, their power, inestimably powerful, told them a fact.

It was that no matter what occupied the sky, it was not something kind. If they decided to attack, then everyone living in the Winter Plains would die—no doubt. Likely, the vast Winter Plains itself would be completely destroyed.

At that instant, not to mention young children who were wailing from fear, even adult cultivators cried out in alarm.

In a split moment, the Winter Plains was flooded by panic. Most people could not continue looking at the scene in the sky, and even more people chose places to hide themselves in order to avoid such a calamity.

There were even some people who ignored their children, ignored their family, and flew up towards the Teleportation Array. They wanted to quickly leave this soon-to-be disaster zone.

At the same time, another person within the chilly icy mountain range was attracted by the scene in the sky.

She wore a conical hat, and had a snow-white long dress. It matched quite well with the surrounding ice and snow, as if she were an elf that walked amongst the snow and ice. As she stood in the night sky, she appeared rather beautiful. She was Tantai Xue.

“What a frightening phenomenon. However, this does not look like a premonition of a certain special body’s descent. It seems more like one that has appeared because of a breakthrough in cultivation.” However, in contrast with the fear of others, Tantai Xue was very calm. So calm it was even a bit terrifying.

Chapter 864 - Rank Five Martial Lord

MGA: Chapter 864 - Rank Five Martial Lord

“Hoh, this is truly interesting. I didn’t think there would be a person with such strength in a desolate place like this. It seems that I’ve truly underestimated the people here.” After observing for quite a while, Tantai Xue suddenly laughed. However, her laughter was very strange.

One could tell she was not afraid of the four terrifying lightning beasts in the sky, but instead felt surprise and shock by its appearance. The person who evoked such a phenomenon to occur had made the horrifying woman overturn her prior disdainful perspective. She even wanted to see the person.

As for the one who made such a scene appear, he was still hiding deep beneath the layers of ice.

However, Chu Feng, at that moment, was no longer alarmed. Instead, there was even a bit of joy on his face.

He discovered even though the four lightning had left his body, the connection between them still remained. He didn’t need to leave this place yet could see everything in the sky. He could even see some things he otherwise wouldn’t have.

When Chu Feng closed his eyes, his vision was the exact same as the four lightning beasts’ in the sky.

He could see that they were very high up. It was a distance incalculable from the ground surface, and they were simply about to enter the stars. It wasn’t a height reachable by a Martial King.

Right now, the four lightning beasts were running around the stars. They loudly roared. They were boasting of their strength. They wanted to let everyone know their power.

They were displaying their might!

aoo—

Suddenly, they made yet another roar, then flew down. From the sky, they rushed straight towards the Winter Plains.

When many of the people on the Winter Plains saw such a scene, their expressions changed greatly from fear. There were even some who just went limp and couldn't move anymore.

And, there were even some who became incontinent. There were also quite a few who just fainted from terror.

They could feel a true destructive aura descending from the sky, and it was impossible for them to survive from such an aura.

whoosh The four lightning beasts went through the clouds, and when they all saw that, they felt a calamity had arrived.

However, the beasts suddenly disappeared. The night sky illuminated as bright as day instantly returned to darkness. It returned to its former tranquility, as if the four lightning beasts had never appeared.

“What happened? Where did the lightning go?” Due to such an abrupt situation, the crowd first looked at each other, then looked around. They didn't know what happened.

As they all felt confusion, Chu Feng, sitting cross-legged underground, suddenly opened his eyes.

bzz

When he widened his eyes, radiance shone everywhere. In his eyes were the four lightning coiled—they had returned to his body.

Moreover, at that very instant, the four lightning were changing within Chu Feng's body. They were merging with him; not only into his blood, but also into his bones, organs, meridians... They were truly, absolutely, merging with Chu Feng.

During the merge, Chu Feng's cultivation rose once again. Rank one, rank two, rank three, rank four, rank five. Chu Feng's cultivation had soared immensely, and he became rank five Martial Lord.

However, such a climb had also stopped at rank five Martial Lord. At the same time, the lightning that surged within Chu Feng's eyes disappeared.

However, at that instant, Chu Feng felt elated because the four lightning had thoroughly fused with his body. The sudden rise in four ranks of cultivation was brought by the four lightning.

“Haha, has it finally approved of you, and have they completely become one with you?”

“You've made a breakthrough straight to a rank five Martial Lord! That is quite unexpected.” Eggy was incomparable excited. She was skipping and jumping in the World Spirit Space, and she was simply even happier than Chu Feng himself, as though the one who received such a great benefit was her.

He had become a rank five Martial Lord straight away, and it was also different from before.

At first, Chu Feng was only able to raise his cultivation by using the power of the Divine Lightning. Now, however, it was different. The lightning had fused completely with Chu Feng, and his current cultivation—a rank five Martial Lord's—was entirely his.

“That's not all. These four lightning hadn't only given their cultivation strength to me.” Chu Feng suddenly stood up. He had simply reached the extremes of joy.

“Chu Feng, what do you mean? Have you gained something else?” Eggy asked curiously.

“Heh, come out. I’ll show you.” Chu Feng chuckled, then opened the World Spirit Gate. Eggy also leapt out.

“Quick quick quick! Let me see what you’ve also gotten!” said Eggy impatiently. There was even a glint of expectation reflecting upon her beautiful eyes. From that, one could tell how much the queen wished for Chu Feng to become even stronger.

“The four lightning have completely merged with me, causing my cultivation to rise greatly. However, in reality, even if they didn’t, I could have still controlled them, which would have still raised my cultivation.

“The only difference between the two is that back then, although the lightning were in my blood, it was still external power in the end. Even though I could raise my cultivation with them, strictly speaking, it was not my actual cultivation.

“But right now, they have completely merged with me. The power they bring me is always surging within my body. Right now, rank five Martial Lord is my true cultivation.

“Despite a seeming lack of difference on the surface, the essence is completely different. That being said, however, the beneficial effect I gain is the same nonetheless.

“It didn’t matter if the four lightning became one with me or not. As long as they remain within myself, I can still acquire the power of a rank five Martial Lord.

“So, the reason I’m so happy is because in the instant they returned to my body and merged completely with me, I have received an entirely new power from the four lightning. Furthermore, I can control this power myself.

“The nine Divine Lightning have been in my body for so long, but this is the first time feeling I’ve truly grasped some of their power,” Chu Feng said with a smile. The excited expression on his face became stronger and stronger.

“Ahh, you! You think I wouldn’t know this?”

“What I want to know right now is what you’ve received. What did you get from that Divine Lightning? Quickly show me!” Eggy stamped her feet. If Chu Feng still remained silent, then she really would jump over and bite him.

Chapter 865 - Lightning Armour

MGA: Chapter 865 - Lightning Armour

“Heh, my queen, watch carefully because this is the first time ever that I’m

truly

able to employ the power from the Divine Lightning.”

Chu Feng lightly smiled, then his eyes became fierce. With a crackling noise, the sound of interweaving lightning, the four colours reappeared within Chu Feng’s eyes.

But that was merely the beginning. The four lightning not only appeared within Chu Feng’s eyes, they burst out from Chu Feng’s body. In an instant, countless lightning snakes gushed out of his body, through his robe, and covered his entire body.

At that very instant, Chu Feng was tightly wrapped by the four-coloured and different-natured lightning, becoming a lightning person with shining radiance.

The overbearing helmet, armour, and boots were all constructed by lightning.

They not only shone with brilliance, patterns resembling lightning were on his body. It was quite a domineering appearance.

Most importantly, when Chu Feng wore the lightning armour on his body, his cultivation rose again. He became a rank six Martial Lord.

His strength was not the only thing raised. The atmosphere he had surrounding him became completely different. At that very instant, he

exuded a slightly frightful aura—fright only produced by the Divine Lightning in his body.

It was that powerful aura which did not belong to this world.

“Waa, you can even raise your cultivation by using the Divine Lightning’s power! Not only your cultivation, but also your strength! Chu Feng, you’ve truly become strong!”

Eggy was very surprised because she found out Chu Feng hadn’t just

become a rank six Martial Lord, his fighting strength had also been raised. Right now, he was just as powerful as when he held a Royal Armament before!

Which also meant Chu Feng, with the cultivation of a rank six Martial Lord, had no problem defeating typical rank nine Martial Lords. If he had the Royal Armament, then his fighting strength would be even greater. Even if he couldn’t defeat a Martial King, he could at least escape from one.

Chu Feng’s breakthrough this time had truly gave him a leap in his essential strength. If he were to encounter Murong Xun again, Chu Feng would not fear him at all.

One could even say within the Eastern Sea Region, other than the horrifying woman Tantai Xue, there were no Martial Lords who could defeat Chu Feng.

“Eggy, you’re right. This Divine Lightning truly has exceeded my imagination. I’ve only understood just a tiny portion of it, yet I feel completely different from before. It’s as if I’m an entirely new person! In the future, if I can completely grasp this power...

“Heh, I look forward to that!” The Chu Feng’s lips curled to form a hint of a yearning smile.

“You and this Divine Lightning are already one. It means it has approved of you. As long as you continue your development, the remaining five Divine Lightning will sooner or later be yours.

“However, right now, you should return to the Misty Peak quickly.

“First of all, your fiancée is still waiting for this main component. Second of all, due to your cultivation right now, it’s time to cultivate the Earthen Taboo martial skill, the Firmament Slash,” Eggy reminded.

“Mm.” Chu Feng nodded, but he made an odd smile as he said, “However, before leaving, there’s a place I still have to visit.”

“Heh, if I’m not mistaken, you want to head over to the Stone Sword Sect, right?” she said with a slight giggle.

“Mm. Although reasonably speaking, the head of the Stone Sword Sect is most definitely dead, since his Stone Sword Sect dared to attack the Crippling Night Demon Sect, I cannot let them continue living peacefully. I must kill one to warn a hundred, and let the world know the result of making an enemy out of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“Otherwise, there will be more and more powers that ally with the Immortal Execution Archipelago in order to fight the Crippling Night Demon Sect. That wouldn’t be good at all,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s fine. Then let’s head there and use this little sect to test your current abilities.” Eggy’s face was one of expectation. She really wanted to see how powerful Chu Feng had become.

whoosh After deciding, Chu Feng leapt up, through the ice, and flew towards the Stone Sword Sect.

The Stone Sword Sect existed within the Winter Plains. Although it wasn’t the strongest sect, it could be counted as one of the peak existences.

Right now, it was already deep into the night, but the Stone Sword Sect was very brightly lit up. There were singing and dancing, and in the plaza,

several tens of thousands of people had gathered and drank together. That was quite a grand sight to behold.

Moreover, there were not only people from the Stone Sword Sect. The peak forces and characters of the Winter Plains were all there.

The reason so many people were celebrating with toasts and still hadn't left despite the night was all due to the head of the Stone Sword Sect, Shi Jingtian.

He was saved by the Third Immortal back then. Not only did he keep his life, he even brought with him the chance to lead the Stone Sword Sect into the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

However, due to the battle with Chu Feng, the Stone Sword Sect had heavy losses. Not only were their most powerful elders and disciples sacrificed, even the six supreme elders were killed by Chu Feng. At present, the Stone Sword Sect truly lost a great deal of its spirit. It was far inferior to before, and even other than the head of the Stone Sword Sect, there wasn't really a single true expert.

In order to hold a certain position after entering the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the head of the Stone Sword Sect, with the name of the Immortal Execution Archipelago,

invited

all peak forces and characters in the Winter Plains to ally with his Stone Sword Sect, and join the Immortal Execution Archipelago together.

Although this alliance sounded good on the surface, it was, in reality, engulfing other powers. No matter which sect or school, there was none that was willing. However, due to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, it didn't matter how unwilling they were. They did not dare to refuse. They could only accept the terms and choose to ally with the Stone Sword Sect.

In order to express his sincerity, the head of the Stone Sword Sect even hosted an alliance assembly.

Today was the third day of this assembly, and also the last day. After tonight, the head of the Stone Sword Sect would lead the many experts forth to the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They would, from then on, set up at the Immortal Execution Archipelago and leave the Winter Plains.

“Everyone, what do you think about the four lightning beasts in the sky just now? Was that a sight due to the arrival of a Divine body?”

In the middle of the plaza at the Stone Sword Sect, there was a huge palace. At the peak of this palace, there was a very bountiful banquet.

Those who were at that banquet were the most famous people in the Winter Plains. The head of the Stone Sword Sect was also there, and now, they were discussing the phenomenon Chu Feng stirred up just now.

Although the Stone Sword Sect had returned to its joyous scene of singing and dancing, the frightening sight before still remained within their minds. Even though the sight had disappeared, their hearts could not remain calm.

Chapter 866 - Unworthy of a Mention

MGA: Chapter 866 - Unworthy of a Mention

“It’s unlikely something caused by the Divine Body. I’ve heard when Zi Ling of the Zi family was born, there was indeed a phenomenon that had appeared. Moreover, many people had seen that. Although it was frightening, it was not as horrifying as today’s.”

“Yeah! I’ve also heard that the phenomenon of a Divine Body is only an omen of the arrival of a Divine Body. Although it appears powerful, it would not terrify others like the one just now, nor create an illusion of a disaster.

“On the other hand, the strange lightning before was completely different. Not only was it frightening, its horrifying aura seemed as though it would destroy this world! I truly do feel quite some fear when recalling it.”

Those famous people of the Winter Plains still had some cold sweat on their faces. They were endlessly recalling the previous scene before. If it weren’t for the head of the Stone Sword Sect who forbade them from leaving, it was likely they would have all flown away and escaped for their lives when the lightning appeared.

To them, the lightning was really too horrifying. So horrifying they could not control their fear, and could not resist.

So, even though the lightning beasts were gone, they could not retain a calm heart because they didn’t know whether it would reappear, and whether they would be able to survive if it did.

In reality, that uneasiness had spread throughout the entire Stone Sword Sect. If the peak characters from various forces were in such fear, then

naturally, the young ones, the disciples, felt terror.

“Everyone, if the thing before wasn’t an omen of a Divine Body, then what do you think it is?”

Finally, the head of the Stone Sword Sect who had been in silent spoke with a smile. He appeared rather calm, in contrast with the others.

However, no one knew this calmness was forced out by him. Since the crowd were so frightened, he had to soothe their emotions, and since he had to soothe

their

emotions, he would have to soothe his own first. Thus, he had to pretend to be very calm, and only then could he convince everyone else.

“Sect Head Shi, do you think the scene before truly represented the arrival of a Divine Body? Wouldn’t that mean on the Winter Plains, there is a new Divine Body?”

“However, if that were really an omen of a Divine Body, then in the end, there should be an indication telling everyone where it had appeared.

“From what I know, the Divine Body of the Zi family had such an indication. Everyone could see the descent of the huge purple bell in the sky, which quickly became a purple stream of light and swirled above the Zi family. After quite a while, it landed into the Zi family, and only then did Zi Ling appear.

“Yet, the frightening lightning just now was not like that. When it appeared, it was as if it were going to destroy everything. Although it still disappeared, it was a very strange disappearance. No one knows where it went.” However, there was someone who expressed suspicion to the sect head’s words.

It was a short monk as thin as a match. He was very old, and not only was his skin full of wrinkles and marks, they were very loose, as though they

were detached from flesh. He was simply like a dead person already in a coffin.

He was a rank seven Martial Lord, and his cultivation was not inferior to the sect head's. He too was a famous person in the Winter Plains, named Monk Pingjing.[1]

“Sir Pingjing’s words are reasonable.” After hearing that monk’s words, the crowd nodded, expressing agreement.

Seeing there was someone speaking against him, the head of the Stone Sword Sect tightly furrowed his brows. He felt quite displeased, but didn’t know how to defend himself. As such, he could only cast his gaze at the black-haired old man by his side.

That black-haired old man was not a simple person at all. He was not only a rank eight Martial Lord, he was even sitting on the main seat in the banquet. Moreover, the clothes he wore made everyone feel both respect and fear, because he was a person from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Many of the peak characters in the Winter Plains had gathered here for that person, not really for the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

“Who made the rule that the omen for the arrival of a Divine Body couldn’t contain deterrence?”

“And who made the rule that the arrival of a Divine Body demanded an announcement to the world which family it would appear in?” The black-haired old man calmly spoke, but his serene words were full of threat.

“Eh...”

“This...”

After he spoke, the crowd was speechless. No one dared to argue whether the lightning was an omen of a Divine Body. Not because they didn’t know how, but because they didn’t dare.

“Haha, Lord Yan is correct. It’s most likely a Divine Body, otherwise how could something like that suddenly appear?”

“But so what if it’s a Divine Body? A Divine Body did appear at that Zi family, but other than a beautiful complexion, she had no accomplishments in cultivation.

“So, legends will only be legends. Even if it truly appears, it may not be as powerful as rumoured.” After a short moment in silence, there was someone who added on, agreeing with that Lord Yan’s perspective. It was quite a well-done bootlicking.

“Yeah! Not to mention the Divine Body isn’t as powerful as the legends, even if it were, so what? Right now, it’s said the most powerful genius is Chu Feng in the Eastern Sea Region. He is indeed quite shocking and grasps many legendary techniques.

“Yet, back then, wasn’t he still driven away by Sect Head Shi? Even an exceptional genius will be no match in front of a true expert.” More and more people started joining in. They used Chu Feng’s escape due to Shi Jingtian as an example to insult the title of “genius”.

“That’s right, that’s right! I’ve also heard of that, but regretfully, I wasn’t able to personally see it. Sect Head Shi, how about you tell us what happened back then?”

“Right right right! Sect Head Shi, quickly tell us whether that genius was as powerful as the rumours, and how he was beaten away like a dog by you!”

At that moment, the crowd’s tense emotions started to be relieved. They, who did not know the truth, actually took Chu Feng as a joke. They even asked the head of the Stone Sword Sect to narrate Chu Feng’s disgraceful scene.

As he heard their words, the head of the Stone Sword Sect first drank a cup of wine, then wiped his mouth before proudly smiling and saying with a

wave of his hand, “That Chu Feng was no match for me. He’s unworthy of a mention.”

“Unworthy of a mention, or too embarrassed to mention?”

“You’re afraid of telling the truth and being laughed at everyone here, right?” But just at that moment, a voice filled with mocking rang out from the disciples below. It shocked everyone.

“Insolence! Who dares to be so audacious and speak such nonsense?!” The head of the Stone Sword Sect was enraged when he heard that. He violently slammed the table, then stood up and loudly questioned as he pointed at a certain location in the plaza.

Seeing that, many disciples changed their expressions greatly from the fright. Their bodies trembled, and all of them drew some distance from the person who spoke, greatly afraid they would be affected by that fearless person. They wanted to rid themselves of fault.

In a situation like that, the densely packed plaza very soon became empty. Only a single person remaining standing there.

It was a young man. He was not only fearless, he even had a smile on his face. He was smiling and looking at the head of the Stone Sword Sect who stood at the peak of the palace, and said, “Old bastard, I didn’t expect you were still alive.”

Chapter 867 - Chu Feng's Attack

MGA: Chapter 867 - Chu Feng's Attack

“Chu Feng? It’s Chu Feng!” After they saw his person, everyone was shocked.

The famous people within the peak of the palace all stood up, as if they were facing a huge enemy. The disciples on the plaza all rose into the air, quickly backing away, creating some distance.

At present, his name was too ferocious. And, since everyone here was a part of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they were enemies to the Crippling Night Demon Sect. So, to them, Chu Feng was definitely an extremely dangerous person.

However, at that instant, the person who felt the most alarmed was none other than the head of the Stone Sword Sect. He was the only person here who had seen Chu Feng’s strength and techniques.

He knew very well what sort of person he was. Not only was his strength unbelievably strong, as a person, he was ruthless and cruel. He would never forget how Chu Feng and Eggy tortured him when he was receiving the backlash of the Forbidden Medicine.

If the Third Immortal hadn’t arrived, who knew how much more pain he would have felt.

So, when he saw Chu Feng again, he felt very afraid. His fear towards Chu Feng was already imbued into his bones.

But, no matter how afraid he was, he could not display any of it, and when he thought of the Third Immortal’s subordinate, Lord Yan, he felt quite a bit more at ease.

So, the head of the Stone Sword Sect coldly snorted, and said domineeringly, “Chu Feng, you truly have quite the nerves! Back then, I spared your life, yet you still dare to stir up trouble in my Stone Sword Sect? Do you truly think I won’t kill you?”

“Haha, what a joke! Spared my life? You are quite shameless.

“Have you forgotten the torture you felt back then in the Arctic Killing Formation?” Chu Feng laughed loudly. His laughter was very ridiculing.

“What? Arctic Killing Formation? Torture? What happened?” The crowd was taken aback by those words. As they looked at each other, they felt confused. Then, they cast their gazes, pleading for answers, at the head of the Stone Sword Sect, asking, “Sect Head Shi, what does that Chu Feng mean?”

“Don’t listen to his rubbish! When have I been tortured by him?” The head of the Stone Sword Sect had quite an unsightly face as he heard the crowd’s question. But, he still refuted Chu Feng’s accusation. He couldn’t, after all, admit that he was nearly killed by Chu Feng’s torture in the Arctic Killing Formation, right?

He was planning to rule over the people here! If he admitted to such a thing, where would his face go? Where would his dignity go? So, even if he were beaten to death, he would not speak the truth.

“That’s right! Back then, I had personally seen Sect Head Shi chase after Chu Feng as he was escaping. I didn’t think he would dare to so brazenly claim he tortured Sect Head Shi in the Arctic Killing Formation!

“Sect Head Shi, this person doesn’t want any face, so there’s no need to give him any mercy! Just do the same before and give him a good lesson!” someone shouted suddenly.

“That’s right! He’s right! This Chu Feng killed the Stone Sword Sect’s six seniors! That is a capital offense! Sect Head Shi, you don’t need to be kindhearted and spare him. You must kill him and avenge your six elders!” At that moment, even more people spoke.

“Kill him, kill him!”

The recollection of the six supreme elders being killed incited the fury of the elders and disciples from the Stone Sword Sect. In an instant, various shouts exploded and like thunder, resounded within the Stone Sword Sect.

“This...”

At that instant, the head of the Stone Sword Sect tightly furrowed his brows. He felt his heart beating as though his heart were a drum. He knew very well he could not defeat Chu Feng.

“What’s wrong? Without Forbidden Medicine, you’re afraid?”

“Or perhaps, you know you’re no match for me, yet you’re afraid of your lies being revealed, thus you don’t dare to fight me?” Just at that moment, Chu Feng calmly smiled and spoke with ridicule.

“Nonsense! You think I’m afraid of you?” Although he was indeed afraid of Chu Feng, his words still enraged the head of the Stone Sword Sect. Chu Feng was humiliating him in front of the many elders and disciples of the Stone Sword Sect, as well as all peak experts in the Winter Plains

If he didn’t counterattack, it would mean he admitted Chu Feng’s words to be fact. It would be akin to using his face to sweep the ground! He wouldn’t hold any more power then.

Amidst his helplessness, he cast his gaze at Lord Yan behind him.

Seeming to understand what he was worried about, Lord Yan calmly smiled and sent a mental message to him. “Go. With me here, I won’t give him any chance to humiliate you.”

After Lord Yan spoke, the head of the Stone Sword Sect rejoiced. Although Chu Feng’s fighting strength was quite powerful and he had a Royal Armament, he knew Chu Feng wasn’t so strong as to defeat a rank eight Martial Lord. If Lord Yan made his move, Chu Feng was undoubtedly dead.

With Lord Yan supporting him, the head of the Stone Sword Sect wasn't as afraid as before.

But, just in case, he still said, "Chu Feng, the reason you're so arrogant is only because of you have a Royal Armament. If you don't, do you think you're worth anything?"

"Hoh, it seems that you're just afraid I will use this Royal Armament. No problem, I'll satisfy your wish. I won't use the Royal Armament.

"Come, I don't need a Royal Armament to litter the ground with your teeth and make you into a cripple," Chu Feng said confidently.

"Quite the words you have there! Today, I'll show you the distance between us!"

The head of the Stone Sword Sect gained much more confidence seeing Chu Feng truly didn't plan to use his Royal Armament. He leapt into the air, and soon after, with his palms waving about, bursts of violent Martial power surged forth. They became glowing huge hands which slammed down at Chu Feng like a meteor shower.

It was a rank eight martial skill, and its power was very frightening. As such, one could see that the head of the Stone Sword Sect truly feared Chu Feng. Even though he didn't use a Royal Armament, that didn't mean the sect head could be careless. His first attack was a killing blow.

However, against all expectations, Chu Feng stood on the spot and didn't even move while such a horrifying attack came towards him.

"What is that Chu Feng doing? He's not attacking, nor is he dodging! Is he looking to die?" Chu Feng's action spread bewilderment amongst the crowd. All of their eyes glittered as they were clueless to Chu Feng's action.

boom boom boom boom boom

Amidst the confusion, the sect head's attack had struck their target. In an instant, not only did shock waves burst outward, explosions endlessly rang out. The plaza Chu Feng stood in was being bombarded. The ground was even violently shaking.

Seeing the chaos stirred up by the horrifying shock waves, everyone revealed joyous expressions because the sect head's attacks were very terrifying. Very few people on scene could block them.

Yet, such a powerful martial skill had blown on Chu Feng's body. Regardless of Chu Feng's strength, he was most likely dead—that was everyone's feelings.

huuu—

But just at that moment, a gale suddenly swept out and instantly blew away the turbulent shock waves. At the same time, Chu Feng once again appeared within the crowd's line of sight.

“Heavens! This... How is this possible?!”

After seeing Chu Feng, everyone was dumbfounded. A single word was written across their faces: astonishment. There were even some cowardly people who backed away, quite frightened.

Even Lord Yan from the Immortal Execution Archipelago had a great change in expression. He too felt disbelief.

Because at that very instant, the plaza Chu Feng stood on was filled with pits and holes. It was horrifically blown up, yet Chu Feng was still standing on the spot, his hand behind his back.

Not only were his clothes undamaged, he was uninjured in any way. There was even a mocking smile on his face.

Chapter 868 - Skinned Alive and Tendons Extracted

MGA: Chapter 868 - Skinned Alive and Tendons Extracted

“The glorious head of the Stone Sword Sect only possesses this level of strength?” Chu Feng said with a mocking smile.

“You...” The sect head’s mouth twitched when heard those words. His face was distorted, and he couldn’t help but cast his gaze towards the people at the peak of the palace.

After he saw them gazing towards him with raised heads, he frowned even tighter.

He was truly in a difficult situation. On one hand, he discovered that Chu Feng was too terrifying. He seemed to be many times stronger in comparison to the day they clashed before. He really didn’t want to continue fighting him because he knew Chu Feng was a freak.

On the other hand, everyone thought Chu Feng was no match for him. They were looking forward to Chu Feng’s death, and for a great display of might.

Right now, it was truly like he was riding a tiger and couldn’t get off. Despite the uneasiness in his heart, he had no retreat. Thus, he could only continue fighting Chu Feng.

whoosh As he had no choice, the head of the Stone Sword Sect could only make his move again. With the flip of his palm, a stone sword—a unique symbol of the Stone Sword Sect—appeared in his hand.

When it appeared, light swirled around it. The head of the Stone Sword Sect was using his full strength to channel his power into the stone sword.

He was not only channeling his own Martial power into it. All of the nearby Martial power was gathering towards the stone sword.

Due to that, the runes on the sword not only shone brightly, it even rocked to and fro. It endlessly trembled like a furious beast impatient to rid itself of its shackles to tear the enemy before it.

“This power... Could it be the strongest technique in the Stone Sword Sect, Stone Sword Execution?”

“Right! It’s Stone Sword Execution! I’ve heard if it’s mastered, it’s even superior to a rank nine martial skill!

“Today, we can finally see Sect Head Shi use this technique! It’s extremely fierce, so I would quite like to see how that monster Chu Feng will stop it!”

When they saw such a scene, the crowd cried out in surprise. They were dumbstruck by the power emanated by the stone sword.

When he heard their discussions, the head of the Stone Sword Sect looked even prouder. He shouted, “Chu Feng, you have been audacious! First you killed my elders, then you come to my sect to challenge me! Today, with this stone sword, I will take your filthy life!”

After speaking, the head of the Stone Sword Sect released his hand. The stone sword swirling with radiance flew down, and with such a horrifying aura, pressed its way towards Chu Feng.

That stone sword was an accumulation of nearly all his Martial power. Its power was truly terrifying. Before it was even near Chu Feng, the ground he stood on cracked. The plaza already filled with holes was bearing an enormous pressure. It was now collapsing.

But even so, Chu Feng remained unmoving. His hands were behind his back, he looked at the sky, and brought a smile to his face. He was not planning to dodge at all.

Only when the stone sword was about to collide into him did Chu Feng slowly raise his hand, and opened up his five fingers towards the stone sword.

“What is he doing?”

The crowd was puzzled by Chu Feng’s action at first, but after the stone sword had reached Chu Feng, they were terrified so much their heads went numb. Chills went down their spines. Everyone’s expression changed greatly.

Chu Feng not only stopped the stone sword with the power of a single hand, and thus stopped this horrifying Stone Sword Execution, with the clench of his sword, and a huge explosion, he shattered the stone sword.

The technique named as the sect head’s most terrifying strike was turned into dust by just one of Chu Feng’s palms. That strength truly surpassed all of their imagination. None of them could accept such a fact.

But that wasn’t even much. After shattering the stone sword, Chu Feng looked at the head of the Stone Sword Sect in the sky and coldly shouted, “Old bastard, your life is finished today. Get the hell down here and receive death.”

After speaking, an insane suction power surged out of his palm, instantly enveloping the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

“Ahh—”

Before such suction power, the head of the Stone Sword Sect cried out in alarm. Not only did he lose his ability to fly, he was even like a kite with its string cut as he lost balance, swayed left and right in the air, and rolled around as he shot straight in Chu Feng’s direction.

“Heavens! The difference in their strength is this big?”

“How is this the Sect Head Shi who beat up Chu Feng, forcing him to escape? He doesn’t even stand a chance against Chu Feng!”

“This is unbelievable. This is truly unbelievable. This Chu Feng is even stronger than the rumours.” Everyone was tongue-tied and dumbfounded when they saw that. Discussions arose as they shouted in surprise.

Even though they already knew Chu Feng possessed very powerful strength, they didn't think he was

that

powerful. After they saw Shi Jingtian chase after the panicking and escaping Chu Feng before, they naturally felt Chu Feng was now no match for the sect head either.

Yet, when they saw this scene, they were truly taken aback. They couldn't help but look at Chu Feng in another light because how could the sect head even chase after Chu Feng? He simply didn't even have any strength to fight against Chu Feng!

“Lord Yan, save me!” In a situation like that, the head of the Stone Sword Sect knew how poor the present circumstances were. So, he quickly asked for help from that Lord Yan.

whoosh In reality, Lord Yan had already made his move. He waved his big sleeve and the aura of a rank eight Martial Lord burst out. A powerful suction power surged from his sleeve, wrapping around the sect head in the air. He wanted to save him.

“This brat...” However, it was useless. Even though his suction power had enveloped the head of the Stone Sword Sect, it was unable to save him.

In the end, he could only watch as the sect head landed into Chu Feng's hands and was grabbed by the neck.

“Old bastard, you have been audacious! You dare attack members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect?! Right now, I shall skin you alive, and extract your tendons!”

After grabbing hold of the sect head, Chu Feng did not spare him anything. Back then, Shi Jingtian had killed the Nine-fingered Old Man's family and aimed to kill Chu Feng. The fury of him wounding Eggy surged into his head.

With anger overwhelming his heart, Chu Feng's next moves were merciless. Grabbing his neck, he flung him around like a sandbag. Only after swirling him a few times in the air did he slam down abruptly. With a bang, he was thrown into a deep pit underneath his feet.

“Ahh—”

Chu Feng truly put too much force into that slam, so much that the deep pit was unable to bear his strength. The head of the Stone Sword Sect actually shot straight into the ground like a sharp arrow, and one could only hear his heart-wrenching scream.

“Get the hell back here.” But how would Chu Feng let him go so easily? He grabbed out at the pit, and the head of the Stone Sword Sect returned to his hand.

However, at that moment, not only was blood all over him, his body even made creaking sounds—it was the sound of shattered bones. Chu Feng's strike had nearly completely destroyed the sect head's physical body. Not only his bones were destroyed, nearly all his organs were broken.

But clearly Chu Feng was not satisfied. He extended his palm, and like a sharp blade, it stabbed into the sect head's arm. Then, after pulling it back out, there was a blood thing within his hand—the tendon of Shi Jingtian's arm. At that instant, it was forcibly extracted by Chu Feng.

“AHH—” The pain was unendurable. Shi Jingtian screamed even more painfully than before.

But that wasn't even much. After Chu Feng pulled out one of his tendons, he extended his hand, and pulled. With a tearing sound, Chu Feng had torn off the skin of Shi Jingtian's entire face.

Chapter 869 - Outcome Decided

MGA: Chapter 869 - Outcome Decided

“AHH—”

At that instant, a heart-rending and extremely anguished scream rang out endlessly.

Other than that scream, there was nothing else that could be heard. The entire Stone Sword Sect was frighteningly silent.

It wasn't because there were no one in the Stone Sword Sect. Quite oppositely, there were many people in the Stone Sword Sect—several tens of thousands of people.

However, the reason for such quiet was because they were all stupefied by Chu Feng's powerful strength and cruelty.

Seeing the bloody Shi Jingtian rolling back and forth on the ground, one of his tendons extracted and his skin ripped off, the crowd truly felt chills and their hearts were beating heavily from their chest. An indescribable chilliness engulfed their bodies, causing all their hair to stand on end. They felt numb, and there were even many people who were trembling from fright. There were also a few who lost control of their excretory system.

“What a ruthless brat. Since you're so cold-blooded, to prevent any more innocent murders, I will remove a beast like you for the sake of the Eastern Sea Region's population!”

Finally, Lord Yan could not continue watching. As a person from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he couldn't even protect someone who joined them. He felt he had no more face.

He first explosively shouted, then flew up. With an Incomplete Royal Armament in hand, he rushed towards Chu Feng with the powerful might of a rank eight Martial Lord.

“Hmph. You’ve come at the right moment. Since you’re from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, you shouldn’t even think of leaving here alive.”

However, Chu Feng didn’t just feel fearlessness towards the incoming Lord Yan, he also sneered. Then, with the slight bend of his knees, he leapt forth. Like an inverted meteor, he flew into the sky and fought Lord Yan.

Violent shock waves brought about havoc. Powerful martial skills were used endlessly, and the battle between the two was undecidable.

However, their clash had truly frightened both the heavens and the earth. It was thrilling to the crowd, so as they watched, they sighed in admiration, yet also in fear and terror.

“What happened? Isn’t it said Chu Feng was a rank three Martial Lord when he first arrived at the Winter Plains? Why has he become a rank five Martial Lord after a few short days?”

“That’s not even important! The important part is that Chu Feng, with the cultivation of a rank five Martial Lord, easily tormented the head of the Stone Sword Sect, a rank seven Martial Lord! Even Lord Yan, a rank eight Martial Lord, can’t defeat him! This child’s strength is too terrifying. He’s even more powerful than the rumours!”

Everyone could also feel Chu Feng’s cultivation at that instant. They now knew Chu Feng was no longer a rank three Martial Lord, but a rank five Martial Lord.

However, they felt such shock and fright not because of his cultivation. It was more because of his fighting strength. Such horrifying strength was something they had never seen before. Likely only true geniuses could do such a thing.

“What should we do right now? We’ve already agreed to join the Immortal Execution Archipelago, yet this Chu Feng is so powerful! If Lord Yan is defeated, we won’t escape death either!” Amidst shock, some started feeling they couldn’t be guaranteed their lives.

“There’s no need to be afraid! No matter how strong Chu Feng is, he’s only a rank five Martial Lord. Although he is strong, Lord Yan has been the Third Immortal’s subordinate for many years! He is no pushover. It’s uncertain who will win in the fight between these two.” However, there were also some confident people who felt Lord Yan might not lose to Chu Feng.

“Don’t be foolish! Chu Feng isn’t using his full strength right now! Back then, I personally saw how powerful he became after using the Royal Armament! He has yet to even touch it, so if he does, even Lord Yan will be defeated!” Some people also felt quite certain that Chu Feng would win.

“What? Doesn’t this mean there’s a disaster heading our way, and we’re certainly dead today?” When they heard those arguments, the experts at the peak of the palace had pale-as-paper faces. Their bodies trembled, and even some couldn’t stand stably—they almost fell on the ground.

They didn’t dare to escape. If they did, the Immortal Execution Archipelago wouldn’t forgive them. They would then completely lose their protection. However, if they didn’t escape, Chu Feng clearly wouldn’t forgive them either. Either choice was difficult, so they didn’t know what to do. They only felt that a disaster was falling upon their heads and they had no retreat.

boom rumble rumble rumble—

Just at that moment, an explosion rang out above. A person also shot out from the shock waves and into the distant mountain range.

At that instant, they could see the one still standing in the air was Chu Feng, and as such, the person who was shot into the mountain range was Lord Yan.

whoosh Suddenly, Chu Feng also shot forth and instantly disappeared. With a powerful aura, he rushed into the mountain range.

boom boom boom boom boom

Quickly after, they could hear bursts of rumbles resounding continuously in the distance. The energy ripple could even light up the sky.

“Let’s escape! Lord Yan is no match for that Chu Feng! We will all die!”

“We can’t escape! Chu Feng is so powerful! If he wants to kill us, how could we escape?”

“In my perspective, we are certainly dead if we escape. But if we don’t, there might be a chance at survival. After all, in the end, we haven’t harmed anyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. We have also not truly joined the Immortal Execution Archipelago!”

The many experts atop the palace were indecisive. Their thoughts were incongruous: they wanted to escape, yet didn’t dare to escape. That feeling of nervousness and uneasiness nearly made their minds collapse.

hmm However, just at that moment, the head of the Stone Sword Sect suddenly stopped his painful shrieking.

Radiance shone everywhere from his bloody figure, then a ray of light shot out into the distance—it was a Consciousness. Shi Jingtian’s Consciousness. Seeing he could not retain his life, he didn’t give up. He abandoned his physical body and escaped via his Consciousness.

“Where are you escaping!” However, before he was even able to run for any sizable length, Chu Feng’s furious shout rang out.

At the same time, a boundless suction power shot out from the faraway mountain range. It streaked above the Stone Sword Sect, and chased after his Consciousness.

“Ahh—” Quickly after, a painful scream rang out. A Consciousness flew across the sky, drawn over by the suction power.

Shortly after he was caught, Chu Feng flew over from afar and once again appeared above the Stone Sword Sect.

However, when they saw him again, the several tens of thousands of people in the Stone Sword Sect were absolutely silent. A single word was written across their faces: terror.

Because, at that moment, Chu Feng was not only undamaged, there was even a faint smile on his face. However, there were two bodies of light grasped within his hand—two incomparably weak bodies of Consciousness.

Judging by their appearances, one was the head of the Stone Sword Sect's, the other was Lord Yan's of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

The battle had concluded, the victor and defeated definite.

Chapter 870 - Returning to the Misty Peak

MGA: Chapter 870 - Returning to the Misty Peak

“Lord Chu Feng, have mercy! Lord Chu Feng, have mercy!”

Suddenly, a person at the peak of the palace knelt onto the ground, and started kowtowing at Chu Feng, begging for forgiveness.

Chu Feng had already shown his power. Even Lord Yan of the Immortal Execution Archipelago was no match for him, so naturally it was impossible for any of them to defeat Chu Feng.

“Lord Chu Feng, have mercy! We haven’t joined the Immortal Execution Archipelago yet! We were forced to show up here! Lord Chu Feng, I ask for a clear judgement! We truly wouldn’t dare to impudently make an enemy out of the Crippling Night Demon Sect!”

After that person, many others atop the palace knelt orderly. Other than Monk Pingjing, who refuted the head of the Stone Sword Sect, everyone else knelt on the ground.

“HAVE MERCY—”

The most famous people in the Winter Plains knelt and asked for forgiveness. No matter if it was the elders or disciples from the Stone Sword Sect, or the elders or disciples from other places, all of them kowtowed and begged for mercy.

Seeing the terrified crowd, Chu Feng lightly smiled, then said, “I know you were forced here, so I won’t do anything to you. But, remember this well. If there is anyone who dares to make the Crippling Night Demon Sect an enemy, or join the Immortal Execution Archipelago, these two are how your life will end.”

Suddenly, a hint of fierceness emerged into his eyes. A special power was sent from his palm, and like a flame, enveloped the bodies of Shi Jingtian's and Lord Yan's Consciousness, starting to burn and refine them.

“AHH—”

“Chu Feng, you bastard! I curse you! Even as a ghost, I will not forgive you!”

“AHH—”

When they were set ablaze by such special flames, Lord Yan and Shi Jingtian felt endless pain. Even though they had already lost their physical bodies, they were still able to feel the pain of their Consciousness being refined.

Just like that, as they crowd gazed upon them, they were refined, slowly. It only ended when they completely disappeared from this world.

After refining their Consciousness, Chu Feng suddenly waved his sleeve. An invisible shock wave spread out and enveloped the entire Stone Sword Sect.

Quickly after, upon another wave of his sleeve, several cries of terror rang out from the crowd. At the same time, several people flew over towards Chu Feng as they rolled around in the air.

However, before they reached Chu Feng, they were turned into pools of blood amidst muffled explosions resembling firecrackers.

“These are those who followed that old bastard Shi Jingtian and killed members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. They deserve death.”

“But the rest of you... are very innocent. So, I will spare all of you today. However, I advise you to do what's good for you.”

After Chu Feng spoke, he moved and became a stream of light, flying towards the Teleportation Array.

“Thank you Lord Chu Feng for your mercy, thank you Lord Chu Feng for your mercy!”

Even after Chu Feng left, the people in the Stone Sword Sect still didn't dare to rise. They continued to kneel and kowtow while giving their thanks. One could tell they were truly quite frightened by Chu Feng.

Only after a good while, after confirming Chu Feng had left, did they dare to fly up like frightened group of birds.

No matter if it was the people from the Stone Sword Sect, or the people from other forces, they were escaping with everything they had. They wanted to quickly leave this dangerous zone of disaster.

After finishing that up, Chu Feng immediately went towards the Misty Peak through the Teleportation Array.

As he travelled, Eggy had asked Chu Feng why he didn't kill everyone from the Stone Sword Sect as a warning.

Chu Feng said that the head of the Stone Sword Sect deserved to be killed, and that Lord Yan deserved to be killed. However, there were some people who could not be killed.

Right now, he was a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. His very actions represented not only himself, but also the entire Crippling Night Demon Sect.

Thus, even though the people had indeed gathered at the Stone Sword Sect's plaza, and technically speaking they were slightly related to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they had, as they said, yet to truly join the Immortal Execution Archipelago. So, they

could

be killed, yet could also

not

be killed.

Rather than commencing a massacre, which would frighten the world, why not make a clear line between grudges and favours? That would also let the world know the people of the Crippling Night Demon Sect were not insane, nor would they kill the innocent.

With that, it could avoid evoking fury from the population, and it could also, to a certain degree, prevent more and more forces from joining the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Moreover, Chu Feng anticipated after today, the people from the Stone Sword Sect would leave the Stone Sword Sect. Not only would they leave, it was likely they wouldn't even dare to continue living in the Winter Plains and would scatter to various areas in the Eastern Sea Region.

And, as they were interspersed amongst the Eastern Sea Region, they would also spread today's events to various places. They would let those who wished to join the Immortal Execution Archipelago know the result was death if they were to make the Crippling Night Demon Sect an enemy.

It would also let the people who misunderstood the Crippling Night Demon Sect know that they weren't as ferocious as they had imagined. In reality, they were just a sect who knew the line between favours and grudges. They only treated their enemies fiercely.

After a while of hurrying, Chu Feng finally returned to the Misty Peak. After he did, he discovered that Chun Wu had returned as well.

He knew because she was currently standing at the entrance to the Misty Peak.

Chun Wu wasn't the only one there. Zi Ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei were also standing at the entrance. Those four, as they stood there, were chatting quite merrily.

As for the reason, it was quite simple. Clearly, they were waiting here for Chu Feng because after they noticed he was there, they all revealed joyous

expressions. They flew up and welcomed him.

“Chu Feng, you’ve finally returned!”

When they saw Chu Feng, they were very happy, especially so for Zi ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei. On their faces, there was not only happiness, there was also peace. One could tell when Chu Feng had left, these three fiancées had worried about Chu Feng quite a bit.

“Junior Chu Feng, your cultivation! You’ve actually...” On the other hand, Chun Wu had noticed Chu Feng’s change in cultivation. He had made breakthroughs, and it was even two levels continuously. He had caught up to Chun Wu.

“Waa, Chu Feng, you’ve made a breakthrough again?” After hearing Chun Wu’s words, Zi Ling and the others also noticed Chu Feng’s rise in cultivation. Right now, he had become a rank five Martial Lord.

“Heh, I have indeed gotten some unexpected harvests at the Burning Heaven Church.” Chu Feng nodded with a light smile.

“Ha, this is truly good news! However, after Senior Zhang and Brother Wushang, who’ve impatiently awaited your return, learn of this, I wonder if they will be a bit dispirited,” Su Mei said with a smile. Moreover, there was a smirk on her face.

“Little Mei, what do you mean?” Chu Feng’s face was full of confusion.

“Heh, Chu Feng, after you left, Senior Zhang and Brother Wushang went in seclusion for training. They wanted to catch up to your level, and right now, they have already made a breakthrough. Both have entered the ninth level of the Heaven realm.

“But, looking at it now, I’m afraid their wish will be denied because our Chu Feng hadn’t stopped improving and instead, improved at an even quicker speed than them!” Su Mei said with giggles.

“Eh... This...” There was some shame on Chu Feng’s face after he heard that.

Chapter 871 - A Question

MGA: Chapter 871 - A Question

“You are truly quite insane. After becoming a Martial Lord, those who can make one rank of breakthrough within several years are already not simple at all. Yet you’ve gotten two ranks of cultivation within such a short period of time! How can others even compete with that!

“Not to mention your two friends who want to catch up to you, even I’m depressed,” Chun Wu said as she curled her lips after hearing Su Mei’s words.

“Senior Chun Wu, don’t joke with me! Your junior has so many enemies. If I don’t raise my cultivation quickly, I won’t be able to protect myself!” Chu Feng smiled embarrassedly, then quickly changed topic and asked, “Senior Chun Wu, any news on Senior Qiushui?”

“Senior Qiushui has already returned, and she has already gotten the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix. Right now, my master is concocting the medicine in seclusion, so you don’t need to worry.

“But...”

“But what?”

“But Senior Qiushui knew you went to the Winter Plains. Afraid something would happen to you, after she returned with the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix, she went back to the Winter Plains to search for you.”

“What? You said Senior Qiushui went back to the Winter Plains?” Chu Feng’s expression changed when he heard that.

The Burning Heaven Church had now been discovered by the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Not only could the people from the Immortal

Execution Archipelago enter the Burning Heaven Church, there was even a terrifying woman inside.

It was no longer a serene paradise, and instead, an extremely dangerous place.

“Chu Feng, you’ve made it quite troublesome for me!” But just at that moment, Qiushui Fuyan’s voice rang out. At the same time, the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church appeared before Chu Feng and the others.

“Senior Qiushui, you’ve returned?” Chu Feng’s heart which had just tensed up returned to being at ease immediately after he saw Qiushui Fuyan.

“I’ve not only returned, I’ve also heard what you did~” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“What he did? Senior Qiushui, what did Junior Chu Feng do at the Winter Plains?” Chun Wu was immediately intrigued. As for Zi Ling, Su Ru, and Su Mei, they too cast their curious gazes at Qiushui Fuyan.

“This boy has done quite a huge thing!” Qiushui Fuyan didn’t conceal anything as she narrated what occurred between Chu Feng and the Stone Sword Sect in the Winter Plains.

From that, Chu Feng also learnt that Qiushui Fuyan had truly returned to the Winter Plains, and she had also returned to the Burning Heaven Church. However, when she was there, Chu Feng had already left, and the woman had already left as well. There was not a single person at the Burning Heaven Church.

That was why Qiushui Fuyan only knew what happened between Chu Feng and the Stone Sword Sect, but not what happened between Chu Feng and the Third Immortal—and the mysterious woman—in the Burning Heaven Church.

However, when Qiushui Fuyan discovered there was someone who intruded into the Burning Heaven Church and had done some damages, she

then used a technique outsiders knew nothing about and changed the Arctic Killing Formation, thus completely sealing the entrance to the Burning Heaven Church. Unless it were her or other higher echelons of the Burning Heaven Church, that seal could not be deactivated.

“Waa, Junior Chu Feng, even rank eight Martial Lords stand no chance against you! Then doesn’t that mean the next time you see that Murong Xun, you can give him a good beating and take revenge for what he did back then?” After hearing Qiushui Fuyan’s narrations, Chun Wu’s face was full of admiration, and one could also tell that she truly felt happy for Chu Feng.

Since Chun Wu felt that, naturally, Zi Ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei felt even happier.

There were really too many enemies Chu Feng had right now, and like he said, only by quickly developing could he protect himself.

“Chun Wu, Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, all of you return first. I have something I need to speak with Chu Feng alone,” said Qiushui Fuyan suddenly.

“Then, Senior Qiushui, we’ll take our leave.”

Zi Ling and the others looked at each other when they heard that, then said their farewells with Qiushui Fuyan. However, before leaving, Zi Ling went close to Chu Feng’s ear and said with a low voice, “I, Sister Rou, and Sister Mei are waiting for you~”

After speaking, Zi Ling smiled charmingly, and with Su Rou, Su Mei, and Chun Wu, she entered the beautiful Misty Peak.

“Follow me.” After they left, Qiushui Fuyan moved and flew towards the vast sea region outside the Misty Peak.

As for Chu Feng, he closely followed. Qiushui Fuyan only stopped after they were a good distance from the Misty Peak.

“Senior Qiushui, what do you want to discuss with me?” Chu Feng asked only after she stopped.

“Chu Feng, I have a question for you first. Is your rise in cultivation related to that Sacred Entity in the Burning Heaven Church?” Qiushui Fuyan asked.

“Truthfully replying, Senior, that Sacred Entity has been taken by me, and my cultivation was also obtained from refining it.”

Chu Feng concealed nothing and replied honestly because from the very beginning, he had never planned to hide that from her. Even if Qiushui Fuyan didn't ask him, he would have told her on his own accord.

“You truly refined it? How much?” Qiushui Fuyan seemed a bit excited upon hearing Chu Feng's response.

“I refined all of it. But, Senior, my body is a bit special, and for every rank of cultivation, I require an increasing amount of cultivation resources. So, even though the energy in the Sacred Entity was very powerful, it only allowed me to make a single rank of breakthrough,” Chu Feng said.

“Haha, you've truly shocked me! Although I already knew your body was special, I didn't expect you could even refine that Sacred Entity! That was something no one from the Burning Heaven Church could do anything to!” After hearing Chu Feng's words, Qiushui Fuyan didn't blame Chu Feng at all. Instead, she was both surprised and cheerful.

“Senior, that was still something that belonged to your Burning Heaven Church, yet I refined it just like that. Don't you blame me?” Chu Feng asked.

“That thing is only useful for growing some medicinal plants, and it could only be used in the Burning Heaven Church. It couldn't be moved.

“The Immortal Execution Archipelago had always wanted to take over the Burning Heaven Church. Even though they can't deactivate the Arctic Killing Formation now, who can guarantee they won't be able to in the

future? As long as they can, that would mean the entire peak of medicinal plants would belong to them.

“Rather than giving such an advantage to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, it’s better to just let you refine it. Besides, you are no stranger,” Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile.

After hearing Qiushui Fuyan’s words, Chu Feng felt very happy as well because she truly cared about him. Yet, she clearly didn’t owe him anything.

“That’s right. Chu Feng, the reason I called you out here was for something else. I just also asked about the Sacred Entity,” said Qiushui Fuyan suddenly.

“Senior Qiushui, if there’s anything you want to ask, just go ahead. As long as I know about it, I won’t hide it from you,” Chu Feng said.

“Has Huangfu Haoyue already gone insane?” Qiushui Fuyan asked.

Chapter 872 - Unrelated to You

MGA: Chapter 872 - Unrelated to You

“Senior Qiushui, you’ve heard about it?” Chu Feng couldn’t help but be taken aback by those words.

He had never told her that Huangfu Haoyue went mad. He only said he saw him in the continent of the Nine Provinces. Reasonably speaking, Qiushui Fuyan shouldn’t know that Huangfu Haoyue went insane, unless...

“Answer me first. Has Huangfu Haoyue gone insane?” Qiushui Fuyan quickly asked.

“This...” Chu Feng was in a bit of an awkward situation while facing that question. To a certain degree, the reason of Huangfu Haoyue’s insanity was related to his father. At least, he assumed he was.

But even so, Chu Feng couldn’t bear hiding the truth from Qiushui Fuyan because she had truly treated himself well. Ever since she saved him from Ya Fei, she had given Chu Feng much help.

So, in the end, Chu Feng still said, “Senior Qiushui, when I saw Huangfu Haoyue for the first time, he had already went insane.”

“As I thought... As I thought, it’s him.” Qiushui Fuyan instantly felt downcast.

“Senior Qiushui, what’s wrong? Yo-you didn’t see Senior Huangfu, right?” Chu Feng thought of a possibility when he heard her words.

“I saw him. The reason I returned so late from the Winter Plains is because I saw him there.

“However, he doesn’t even recognize me anymore. I chased after him for a long time, and passed through several regions, yet in the end, I still lost

him. Even though he had changed a lot, that feeling of his would never change. I knew he was Huangfu Haoyue.” Qiushui Fuyan even choked a bit when she said that.

“Senior Qiushui, sorry I hid it from you. I should have told you earlier.

“Also...”

“Chu Feng, you don’t need to say anything, nor do you need to feel any shame. I know why you didn’t tell me at the very beginning, and I also know why Huangfu Haoyue has turned into this.

“How would I discover nothing after following him for so long? I could tell he was afraid of something, and if I’m not mistaken, the existence he’s afraid of is related to you, right?” Qiushui Fuyan’s tone was very soft. It could be seen she didn’t resent Chu Feng.

“Senior Qiushui, I can’t give you a definite answer either. I’ve also been thinking that the ones Huangfu Haoyue is afraid of is my family,” Chu Feng replied truthfully. Only then could the shame he felt diminish a bit.

“Chu Feng, you don’t need to be like this. Back then, when Huangfu Haoyue carried you here, you were still a baby. No matter what he experienced—and even if your family did something to him—it’s your family’s fault. None of it is related to you, so you don’t need to feel ashamed.

“Moreover, it’s already a matter of the past. What we should do right now is think of a way to cure him. Although he’s gone mad, it’s only madness. As a World Spiritist, you should know there’s nothing a World Spiritist can’t do, especially related to deficiencies of one’s body. We can heal that as well,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Mm, Senior Qiushui, you’re right. But, what are you planning to do?” Chu Feng felt quite a bit better after hearing Qiushui Fuyan’s words,

“Right now, the most important thing is to first find Huangfu Haoyue. I’ve prepared to leave today in order to search for him,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“But do you know where Senior Huangfu is right now?” Chu Feng asked.

“I don’t know, but even if I don’t know, I must still look for him. Even if I need to search the entire world I must still find him. I can’t let him live a beggar's life in insanity,” Qiushui Fuyan resolutely said.

“Senior Qiushui, how about I contact the Crippling Night Demon Sect and ask them to help you?” Chu Feng said.

“No need. As they say, rather than asking others, why not ask oneself? Putting aside the fact they aren’t that close to you, so not everyone will believe you, I also don’t trust them too much.

“I’m not too friendly with the higher-ups of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, so how can I hope for them to help me?” Qiushui Fuyan shook her head, firmly rejecting Chu Feng’s thought.

“Senior is correct.” Chu Feng nodded after hearing Qiushui Fuyan’s words. Although she was a bit too cautious, her considerations were absolutely reasonable.

Even though the Crippling Night Demon Sect was treating Chu Feng quite well, they still didn’t completely trust Chu Feng yet. At least, the Crippling Night Demon Sect still emphasized the gains of the sect; Chu Feng was merely a member.

If there were truly one day when Chu Feng’s existence threatened the benefit of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, who knew if they would deal with him in the future or not.

Chu Feng would not forget the gazes of the Earth King and the others when he attempted to pull out the Royal Armament, the Demon Sealing Sword. At that time, Chu Feng truly felt if he had pulled it out, the Earth King would have killed Chu Feng with no hesitation because that was a weapon only usable by the head of the Demon Sect.

The Crippling Night Demon Sect wouldn’t hand such an armament over to Chu Feng.

“Okay, Chu Feng, then it’s decided. As of now, just let me look for Huangfu Haoyue.

“At present, the Immortal Execution Archipelago is still searching for you. Unless absolutely necessary, for safety’s sake, it’s best that you stay in the Misty Peak and avoid leaving,” Qiushui Fuyan reminded.

“Senior, thank you for the reminder. I understand.” Chu Feng nodded.

“Remember, don’t feel ashamed because of Huangfu Haoyue. Even if it’s related to your family, it’s not related to you.

“Also, I’ve chatted with your three fiancées and found out they are quite decent in many places. Most importantly, they do truly love you.

“So, do not disappoint them. You should take care of yourself even if just for their sake. Don’t do overly risky things and take your life as a joke.”

After speaking, Qiushui Fuyan lightly smiled, then rose into the air, flying towards the Teleportation Array.

From this, one could tell she was truly concerned with Huangfu Haoyue. Otherwise, she wouldn’t have headed out so quickly to search for him.

After Qiushui Fuyan left, Chu Feng entered the Misty Peak. He first went to Zi Ling’s residence, and when he came, not only were Su Rou and Su Mei there, even Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang were there.

“Junior Chu Feng, I’ve heard you’re now a rank five Martial Lord. Is that true?” After seeing Chu Feng, Zhang Tian and Jiang Wushang quickly surrounded him. From head to toe, they carefully examined him.

Chapter 873 - Good Brothers

MGA: Chapter 873 - Good Brothers

When they were closely examining Chu Feng, Chu Feng too discovered Zhang Tianyi's and Jiang Wushang's cultivation had risen to the ninth level of the Heaven realm.

Actually, before refining the Sacred Entity, Chu Feng's actual cultivation was also the ninth level of the Heaven realm. The reason the world thought he was a rank three Martial Lord was all because Chu Feng used the power of the three lightnings to raise his cultivation to rank three Martial Lord. Thus, the actual cultivation level he revealed to the world was merely an illusion.

Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi also knew this, so that was why they felt as long as they entered the ninth level of the Heaven realm, they would have caught up to Chu Feng.

However, after Chu Feng refined the Sacred Entity, there was a change in essence regarding his cultivation. The three lightnings were no longer external power but one with Chu Feng. Right now, his true cultivation was no longer the ninth level of the Heaven realm, but rank five Martial Lord.

“Heavens! You... you're too strong, aren't you? You've truly become a rank five Martial Lord, and you haven't even used the power from the lightning! You... You... You...”

“What are we supposed to do now?!”

Suddenly, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang shouted at the same time. They had looked at Chu Feng's eyes for a very long time, and discovered there was no lightning. So, they confirmed that not only was his cultivation raised, his cultivation was without the aid of the lightning.

However, even though they were grieving loudly, as though they received a huge blow to their hearts, because Chu Feng once again widened the gap in their cultivations, he could tell that they were actually very happy. They felt happy because Chu Feng was able to improve so greatly.

These were true brothers.

But since Chu Feng had some strength now, he wasn't willing to see his brothers and lovers travel too slowly on the journey of cultivation.

Although it was very difficult for Chu Feng to help the others, Jiang Wushang now had an Imperial Bloodline! Moreover, there was a single similarity between him and Chu Feng—the rise in cultivation relied on cultivation resources. And... Chu Feng had received quite a few good quality cultivation resources from Lord Yan of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Even though to Chu Feng, resources such as Heaven medicines and Martial medicines weren't of much use to him anymore, to Jiang Wushang, they would likely help greatly.

As such, Chu Feng only left a small portion of the cultivation resources to use as currency, and gave the rest to Jiang Wushang.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, you've already given me enough help. I can't accept these cultivation resources. Just keep them for yourself.” But, who would have expected Jiang Wushang to refuse Chu Feng's good intentions.

“You're being so polite even to me? If you don't take it, then don't call me 'Big Brother' anymore!” Chu Feng forcibly stuffed the cultivation resources to Jiang Wushang.

“Ahh...”

After a long hesitation, Jiang Wushang still took and put away the cultivation resources. However, as he did so, he helplessly heaved a long sigh.

“Brother Wushang, is there something troubling you?” Chu Feng asked.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, after acquiring the Imperial Bloodline, I do have greater requirements for cultivation resources, but my comprehension strength has become stronger as well. Yet, even so, I am still no match for you,” Jiang Wushang said depressingly.

“Brother Wushang, what do you mean?” Chu Feng asked.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, you said as long as you have enough cultivation resources, you can directly make breakthroughs. For you, the accumulation of power within your dantian is the difficult part, and the comprehension part when making a breakthrough is a piece of cake.

“So, I originally thought after receiving the Imperial Bloodline, I too could be like you. But I’ve discovered I was wrong.

“Even though the Imperial Bloodline has strengthened my fighting power, causing change throughout my body, even making my comprehension strength more powerful, but... if I want to make a breakthrough, I still find it quite difficult.

“Especially right now, when I’m facing the huge gap to become a Martial Lord. I have a premonition that even if I accumulate enough power, and understand the method of breakthrough, it will still be very difficult to succeed on my first try,” Jiang Wushang said.

“You’re saying there are high requirements to make a single breakthrough in regards to comprehension strength?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mm.” Jiang Wushang nodded, then as he looked at Chu Feng, his eyes were full of admiration. He said, “Big Brother Chu Feng, you are truly a genius. A true genius.”

“Brother Wushang, what’s with you now? Why did you suddenly say that?” Chu Feng was confused.

“It’s because I’ve discovered you acquired your cultivation attainments not only because you grasp special power, but also because your innate aptitude is extremely strong.

“The reason you have such powerful comprehension strength is perhaps related to your special power, but it is more so related to yourself. You’ve always had great talent in cultivation, so what’s why you have all these accomplishments.

“As for me, I don’t have your powerful comprehension strength, nor talent as good as yours. So, even though I now have the Imperial Bloodline and sufficient resources, I’m unable to quickly make breakthroughs like you,” Jiang Wushang said.

After hearing Jiang Wushang’s words, Chu Feng really didn’t know how to console him. He already knew about that—the Divine Lightning had indeed strengthened his body and brought him powerful strength. On the other hand, his outstanding comprehension power seemed more innate.

Before, when Chu Feng didn’t know much about cultivation, he felt his exceptionality in everything was all brought by the Divine Lightning. But, along with his greater knowledge and experience, he learnt that some aptitude in people was decided when born.

“However, Chu Feng, you don’t need to worry about me. Even if I’m inferior to you, I’m at least superior to others. I will work hard. I will work hard to catch up to you, Big Brother Chu Feng.

“Also, I’ve discovered that the Imperial Bloodline is very powerful. As long as I can become a Martial Lord, my fighting strength will rise again. Perhaps, at that time, it won’t be any weaker than yours!

“Moreover, that doesn’t only apply to me. It also applies to Big Brother Tianyi. Although he doesn’t have an Imperial Bloodline, the Forbidden Mysterious Technique he cultivates is very special. Before you returned, we had sparred and it ended up a tie!

“He also told me he has a faint feeling when he becomes a Martial Lord, he will be able to grasp an entirely new power. So, even if I become a Martial Lord and become stronger, he won’t be afraid of me,” Jiang Wushang said with a smile, as if afraid Chu Feng would worry.

In reality, Chu Feng was indeed much at ease after hearing his words.

Just like that, after Chu Feng had a small gathering with Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi at Zi Ling’s residence, Chu Feng headed towards Chun Wu’s residence.

He was preparing to cultivate the Taboo martial skill, the “Earthen Taboo—Firmament Slash”. However, that required a special land of cultivation.

Chapter 874 - Coincidentally Meeting Yan Ruyu

MGA: Chapter 874 - Coincidentally Meeting Yan Ruyu

At that moment, in order to concoct a cure for Zi Ling's Heaven Gripping Pellet, Lady Piaomiao had remained isolation for quite a while, and it was said she still needed more time before coming out.

Since Chu Feng didn't really like Xia Yu and Dong Xue, nor was he too familiar with Qiu Zhu, when he had requests, he always enjoyed looking for Chun Wu.

"Senior Chun Wu, I'll take my leave first." However, before entering Chun Wu's palace, Chu Feng heard a rather familiar voice.

jii—

Just as Chu Feng prepared to knock on the door, it was suddenly opened. At the same time, a familiar person appeared within Chu Feng's line of sight.

A tall figure, a bewitching body, white skin, charming face, and a unique aura—that person was Yan Ruyu.

After she saw Chu Feng, she couldn't help but be taken aback. Her beautiful eyes glittered endlessly—she was panicking slightly.

Chu Feng lowered his head, a bit embarrassed, when he saw Yan Ruyu. He didn't dare to look straight at her, because at that moment, he unavoidably recalled the scene of forcing her in the bed back then in the Azure Province.

But that was a thing of the past. After all, it had been quite a while, so following just an instant of hesitation, Chu Feng put on a light smile,

raised his head, and wanted to greet Yan Ruyu.

whoosh

But who would have expected before Chu Feng spoke, she had already moved and passed Chu Feng, leaving behind only a faint bodily fragrance.

Chu Feng did seem to expect that to occur, so he dryly chuckled, but didn't brood on that for too long. He strode forth and prepared to enter.

"Chu Feng." But when Chu Feng put one foot past the doors, Yan Ruyu had spoken.

"What is it?" Chu Feng turned his head around. He saw that she had already stopped and was looking at himself with a gaze containing complicated emotions.

"Thank you," Yan Ruyu said with a gentle tone, then after meaningfully looking at Chu Feng, she turned around, and left.

Seeing her fading figure, a relieved smile was worn on Chu Feng's face. From her eyes, he could tell Yan Ruyu didn't hate him at all. Instead, there was a hint of gratitude.

The old grudge with Yan Ruyu was finally resolved.

"Junior Chu Feng, what are you doing standing at the entrance?"

Just at that moment, Chun Wu's voice rang out. When Chu Feng looked into the palace, he saw Chun Wu smiling as she looked at him.

"Senior Chun Wu." Chu Feng walked in.

"Junior Chu Feng, didn't you say Junior Yan was your friend? Back then, you too had done quite a bit in order to save her! However, judging by that just now, you don't seem too close to her.

"Have you hid anything from me?" The intelligent Chun Wu instantly saw that the relationship between Chu Feng and Yan Ruyu wasn't close. They

were definitely not friends.

“To be honest, Senior Chun Wu, we are indeed not friends, and there was even a misunderstanding before! So, I suppose I owed her,” Chu Feng said with a bitter smile.

“No matter if you owed her or not, you’ve done enough for her. Even if there was a disagreement, it’s been compensated by now. After all, it was you who saved her life.

“But, don’t worry. Although Junior Yan doesn’t speak much, and it feels that there’s a layer between us, I don’t think she’s a bad person. I will still take care of her even without you asking. Also, my master likes her as well.”

As if afraid Chu Feng worried she wouldn’t take care of Yan Ruyu because of their distant relationship, Chun Wu specially expressed her thought towards Chu Feng.

“Thank you, Senior Chun Wu.” Chu Feng was truly thankful for Chun Wu’s concern. Concern not only directed towards Yan Ruyu, but also directed towards himself and everyone close to him. It could even be said she was the closest person to him in the Misty Peak, and also one who helped him with all her power.

And, the greater the intimacy, the less the constraint. So, Chu Feng said with a smile, “However, I have come here because I have a request, Senior Chun Wu.”

“You are my savior! If you say another word of thanks, I’ll kick you out!” Chun Wu curled her lips, feigning anger. Then, she said with a smile, “What is it? Just say it. If I can do it, I will help you with my full strength.”

“Senior Chun Wu, you remember I got a Taboo martial skill at the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, right? Since the requirement of it was too high, I have yet to do much with it.

“However, right now, I feel like I can give it a try. So, I’m preparing to cultivate it,” Chu Feng said.

“You... Don’t scare me like that! If I remember correctly, the martial skill you got was an Earthen Taboo martial skill!

“According to my master, that’s a martial skill even Martial Kings have difficulty controlling! Its power is very frightening, and it has extremely high requirements on one’s physical body. Its cultivation difficulty is very high as well.

“Junior Chu Feng, although your strength is very powerful, that Earthen Taboo martial skill is too fierce! You cannot rashly cultivate it; otherwise, if there’s a tiny bit of a mistake, it can possibly leave permanent damage to your physical body! It will also have an unimaginable effect on your future cultivation!” After knowing Chu Feng wanted to cultivate that Earthen Taboo martial skill, Chun Wu’s complexion changed greatly. She hurriedly attempted to convince him otherwise.

“Senior Chun Wu, thank you for your good intentions, but I more or less understand the requirements of this Earthen Taboo martial skill. I truly feel like I can attempt it right now, so that’s why I want to give it a try,” Chu Feng said with a smile. Moreover, there was not a single trace of fear on his face. Instead, it was filled with confidence.

“Junior Chu Feng, are you certain?” The worry on Chun Wu’s face instantly became shock.

“Senior Chun Wu, you’ve known me for so long! Have I ever lied to you?

“Believe me. If I don’t have a certain grasp on it, I wouldn’t even go touch that Earthen Taboo martial skill.

“I know it is very difficult to cultivate. Its difficulty is even dozens of times the Mortal Taboo martial skills, and hundreds of times rank nine martial skills.

“So, I will definitely not force my way through. If I cannot continue, I will stop when appropriate,” Chu Feng said.

“You truly do bring astonishment to others. My master clearly told me even typical Martial Kings find it difficult to successfully cultivate an Earthen Taboo martial skill. Yet you, a Martial Lord, are already preparing.

“Ahh, this is truly infuriating! Sometimes, I truly do suspect whether you are from our world. You wouldn’t be from the Holy Land of Martialism, right?” Chun Wu said with a joking tone.

“Senior Chun Wu, don’t joke with me! If I came from the Holy Land of Martialism, I wouldn’t be in the Eastern Sea Region right now!”

Chu Feng had a bitter smile. Although he didn’t know whether he was from the Holy Land of Martialism, he knew he was likely not from the Eastern Sea Region or the eastern continents.

Chapter 875 - Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation

MGA: Chapter 875 - Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation

“Since you’re planning to cultivate the Earthen Taboo martial skill, I’ll have to prepare a special area for you,” Chun Wu said.

“The one who truly understands me is indeed my Senior Chun Wu. I’ve come here exactly for that.” Chu Feng didn’t bother hiding anything and stated his intentions.

“Tch. Would I

not

understand you? Follow me. I’ll show you a mysterious place in this Misty Peak.” Chun Wu smiled, then walked towards the exit of the palace.

Chu Feng quickly followed because this Misty Peak was truly very special. He knew the place Chun Wu and the others cultivated martial skills was definitely a very special place, so he really wanted to see the appearance of the Misty Peak’s unique area for martial skill cultivation.

After all, everything here came from the Ancient Era.

Indeed, with Chun Wu leading, they passed through several heavily guarded checkpoints before arriving atop a peak.

Outside the peak, there was even a firm Spirit Formation Wall. Even Chun Wu needed to use a special Spirit Formation Key to open it.

Only after climbing onto the peak did Chu Feng notice the peak was very vast, but at the apex of this vast peak, there was a little tower less than ten

meters in height and three meters in width. Not only was it quite broken, one felt quite pitiful as they gazed at it.

However, the ancient aura it exuded told Chu Feng the little broken tower was not as simple as it appeared. Most likely, this was the most important part of this peak.

So, Chu Feng directly walked towards the tower, and only after nearing it did he discover there were several words written at the top: Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation.

“Junior Chu Feng, this is one of the most mysterious places of the Misty Peak, the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation. It is a holy land for cultivating martial skills.” Indeed, as Chu Feng expected, this broken little tower was the place for cultivating martial skills.

Right now, Chun Wu had already opened the door to the tower, and after opening, what Chu Feng saw through the door was not the inside of the tower, but a world. That tower was a gate to a whole new world.

“Impressive! It’s another gate to a new space! This Misty Peak is truly a treasure land.” Chu Feng endlessly sighed in admiration. Along with his increase in experience, he knew that powerful World Spiritists could open an independent space.

So, Chu Feng knew very well no matter if it was the Martial Marking Immortal Realm before, or the world within the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation, they were both likely spaces opened by a powerful World Spiritist.

“Heh, of course. If there were nothing good about our Misty Peak, the Immortal Execution Archipelago wouldn’t want to occupy this place. If it weren’t for my master threatening them, it’s likely they would have already made a move on the Misty Peak.

“That’s right, I don’t mind telling you a secret.” Suddenly, Chun Wu lowered her voice. After putting her mouth close to his ear, she still chose to tell Chu Feng with mental messaging, “On the Misty Peak, there are

many mysterious peaks. Even though my master is the guardian of this place, there are several peaks even she cannot climb onto. So, even my master doesn't completely know what sort of special power is concealed in which special places."

"Heh, anything from the Ancient Era is indeed nothing ordinary." Chu Feng nodded, then asked, "Senior Chun Wu, other than this independent space, are there any other special things with this Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation? Why did you say this is the holy land for cultivating martial skills?"

"It's better for you to experience it yourself. Just remember this: you can destroy anything you see in there. No matter if it's someone alive, or an existence undefeatably powerful, don't be afraid. Just trust me.

"Oh, that's right. Most importantly, don't walk too far, and don't forget the path of return. Otherwise, if you can't come back, I can't save you!" Chun Wu said with a mysterious smile.

"Heh, you make it seem so impressive, and now I want to experience this mysterious land!" After hearing all that, Chu Feng was truly impatient. He stepped forth, and entered the ancient tower's door, stepping into the new space.

After entering, Chu Feng discovered there was no sun, nor a blue sky, nor clouds. Everything above his head was foggy. Beneath his feet was sand, and gales were howling in the distance. The feeling it gave Chu Feng was represented by one word: desolate.

When he turned his head around, he still saw the door, and Chun Wu was standing outside the door. She said, as she looked at Chu Feng with a smile, "Remember! What you are cultivating is an Earthen Taboo martial skill! Do not aim for short-term benefits, and you must stop when appropriate!"

"I will remember your instructions." Chu Feng bowed to Chun Wu with complete seriousness.

“You... Hmph, I won't bother with you anymore. Go play on your own!” Chun Wu feigned anger as she curled her lips, then closed the doors. But, before closing the doors, a voice was sent inside.

“That's right. When it's time for the three meals, remember to come back to this place. I will bring you food at a fixed time.”

“Hehe, this little girl is quite nice! Chu Feng, should you consider stopping? After all, you already have three fiancées. You don't need another one!” said Eggy, who was in Chu Feng's body, as she giggled.

“You're thinking too much.” Chu Feng didn't bother caring what she said, and leapt up, into the air, carefully examining this world.

After flying for a while, a lush green mountain range appeared. Above the mountain range, even the sky was different. At that place, there was a blue sky and clouds. When such a scene appeared within such a chaotic desert, it truly stood out.

After circling around the mountain range, Chu Feng saw an endless sea. On the sea, huge waves rolled about, and there was even the roar of sea beasts. It was a dangerous region of water.

It was dangerous because as he flew above the surface, Chu Feng could regularly see beasts killing each other. They were not only violent, they were bloodthirsty. Moreover, those beasts were not only enormous, they were very powerful as well. The weakest were in the Heaven realm, while most possessed strengths of a Martial Lord.

After flying for a while above the boundless sea, Chu Feng saw a green island in the distance.

That island was floating above the sea, and there was nothing special. Yet, it attracted Chu Feng's attention because the waves that surged around the island were very strange. When he looked more carefully, he saw a dozen or so huge water snakes within the water.

Those snakes were truly large—every single one was over a hundred meters long. Not only did they have sharp teeth, there were sparkling scales on their bodies as well, resembling armour. They covered their bodies, making them nearly indestructible.

Moreover, every single one of them emanated the aura of a rank nine Martial Lord. Their auras were even more powerful than the typical peak Martial Lord.

At that moment, those huge snakes at the bottom of the sea were baring their teeth and making deafening roars at the island.

At first, Chu Feng felt confused at such a scene. He didn't understand why they were so angry as they circled an island.

Only when the island started trembling and an extremely powerful aura burst out did Chu Feng understand.

Chapter 876 - Earthen Taboo Firmament Slash

MGA: Chapter 876 - Earthen Taboo—Firmament Slash

aoo— A thunderous roar came from the island, and the serenity changed abruptly. An indescribable huge mouth rose up to the surface from the bottom of the island, and it was slowly widening.

After that mouth opened, a revolting stench came from it. The large teeth within the mouth even terrified Chu Feng.

boom

After that huge mouth widened, it bit down at the water snakes, directly engulfing three. As it chewed, large amounts of blood gushed out without end, instantly dying the sea red.

wuaoo—

The remaining several huge snakes at the bottom of the sea panicked from horror. They first let out a timid sound, then quickly burrowed deep into the ground with frightening speed, aiming to escape.

aoo—

But before they even made much distance, the island opened its mouth again. A boundless suction power burst out, drawing back those sea snakes amidst their terrified cries. All of them entered the island mouth and were engulfed.

At that instant, Chu Feng couldn't help inhaling deeply. He captured all of that in his eyes. How did that even look like an island? It was simply a sea beast—a huge tortoise as big as an island.

Not only was it enormous, it was very powerful as well—a Martial King.

But even so, Chu Feng was not afraid. He didn't escape, and instead, spread his legs, entering a fighting stance as he stood in the air. Then, his left hand held an illusory bow, his right hand pulled an illusory arrow, then as his arms moved back and forth, his hand opening and closing, countless golden arrows became a horrifying rain of arrows that flew down the sky, straight towards the huge tortoise.

whoosh whoosh whoosh...

When the golden arrows rushed down from the sky, its might could truly force ghosts and gods to evade them. They were extremely frightening, and before they even dropped down, the sea beneath was already stirred up in a mess as it surged about.

boom rumble rumble However, just as the golden arrows were about to collide, the huge tortoise seemed to have detected them. With the move of its body, it controlled the boundless sea water. Like pillars, they rose into the sky, instantly breaking Chu Feng's attack.

Afterwards, the huge tortoise slowly raised his enormous head, and cast its incomparably huge eyes which let out a bloody glint towards Chu Feng.

Those eyes unrestrainedly showed fierceness. However, it did not attack Chu Feng, nor was Chu Feng afraid. Instead, he flashed it a light smile, and made a provocative gesture at the sea tortoise.

aoo—

It seemed to understand that gesture as it made a furious roar in protest, but in the end, it put away its gaze, and burrowed its head back into the sea. Then, with rumbles, the surrounding waves rolled to and fro, and up and down. The huge tortoise didn't attack Chu Feng, and instead, swam away.

Shortly after it left, the blood drifting around the surface started to condense and change, becoming a dozen or so sea snakes!

They looked the exact same as the ones engulfed by the huge tortoise before, but they acted as if nothing had ever happened. They truly resembled the ones before, and after roaming around in the water, they went their own ways and swam into the distance.

“This is truly not simple at all. It really is a holy land for cultivating martial skills!” A faint smile was on Chu Feng face because he now knew the importance of this place.

This space was independent, so one could say everything Chu Feng saw in here was fake. No matter if it was the mountains, or the sea, or the creatures in this world, they were all fake.

Everything here was created by the powerful formation. They wouldn't harm Chu Feng, but they would stop his attacks, and also dodge his attacks. Even if they were destroyed, or destroyed by other beings, they would be revived.

It was because their value in existing was to be attacked by others. They were the perfect existence for practicing martial skills.

After understanding the mysteriousness of this place, Chu Feng felt even more curious as to who the master was, since he was able to lay such a powerful formation.

But this place was already a mystery, so how could Chu Feng know who the master was?

Since he didn't know, then he didn't bother thinking about it. Chu Feng started to close his eyes and review the method of cultivating the Firmament Slash.

EARTHEN TABOO—FIRMAMENT SLASH.

CREATED BY GREAT EMPEROR FIRMAMENT AT TWO THOUSAND YEARS OF AGE.

SUMMON THE AURA OF THE FIRMAMENTS TO CAST
DESTRUCTION UPON THE WORLD.

IT IS THE HIGHEST QUALITY WORK OF EARTHEN TABOO
MARTIAL SKILLS.

THOSE WHO WISH TO CULTIVATE THIS MUST BE GREATLY
VIGOROUS.

THEY MUST POSSESS A BODY OF KING-LEVEL MARTIAL POWER.

THOSE BELOW MARTIAL KINGS ARE FORBIDDEN FROM
CULTIVATION.

OTHERWISE, THE BACKLASH WILL BRING UPON THEMSELVES:

A CHRONIC ILLNESS IF SUPERFICIAL;

IMMEDIATE DEATH IF SEVERE.

The Firmament Slash was very complicated, but in simpler terms, it was to use special techniques combined with King-level Martial power to create something called the Aura of Firmament. When this Aura of Firmament was released, it would create terrifying destruction—that was the Firmament Slash.

However, putting aside the fact it was very difficult to create the Firmament Slash, even if he were able to, there still remained the high physical requirement, since the Firmament Slash harmed the physical body greatly. That was especially so in the instant it was released as it would strike the body with heavy force.

If his physical body weren't strong enough, he wouldn't be able to receive the force of the Aura of Firmament. Even if he could create it, before it struck his enemy, he would have already killed himself.

But to Chu Feng, that was not a problem. His physical body had always been strong, and now, since he was an actual Martial Lord, his body was strengthened once again. The lightning armour would not only raise Chu

Feng's cultivation by one rank and raise his fighting strength, it was even able to reinforce his physical body.

So, with Eggy's assistance, and the protection of the lightning armour, Chu Feng's physical body was sufficient to endure the Aura of Firmament. At least, he could endure it once within a short period of time. Although he would still receive a backlash, at least he could bear through it.

As for King-level Martial power... Chu Feng wasn't a Martial King, so he simply didn't have that. That being said, though he didn't have any, his Royal Armament did.

Royal Armaments were created by King-level Martial power. Thus, they not only had the power, they could summon it as well. Therefore, as long as he had the Silver Dragon Spear, that was not an issue either.

Right now, the only issue Chu Feng had was

how

to create the Firmament Slash.

That... was truly very difficult. Extremely, extremely difficult. Not to mention a typical Martial Lord, even an ordinary Martial King, without several years of cultivation, should not even think of creating it. As such, it could be seen how difficult it was.

But before Chu Feng even started, he had already roughly found the steps. What he required now was only practice. Practice his steps to control it—to control the Aura of Firmament.

It could even be said with Chu Feng's comprehension strength, he would have no problem successfully cultivating the Firmament Slash. What he needed was only time.

Moreover, Chu Feng already had a feeling regarding the power of the Firmament Slash. If he failed, then whatever. If he succeeded, however, then Chu Feng would even be able to put up a fight against Martial Kings.

Chapter 877 - Something Happened to Chu Feng?

MGA: Chapter 877 - Something Happened to Chu Feng?

Without feeling the passing of time, Chu Feng had entered the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation for two full months already.

In those two full months, Chun Wu, Zi Ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei would come over and bring Chu Feng food every day.

Although they were never able to see him, the food they sent would usually be cleanly finished off. That also let them know that Chu Feng was doing very well. So, they didn't think much of it.

However, in the past three days, all the food they sent hadn't been picked up. As they looked at the food accumulated for three full days, Chun Wu, Zi Ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei all couldn't help but worry.

Putting aside the fact that the space within the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation was very huge and there was the risk of getting lost after entering, an Earthen Taboo martial skill was very difficult to cultivate. Attempting to do so at Chu Feng's current realm was simply suicidal. So, after the third day, the four of them couldn't continue holding themselves back.

“Senior Chun Wu, let's go together to search for Junior Chu Feng!”

“Yeah! Senior Chun Wu, three whole days have passed! We are truly worried for Chu Feng.”

At that moment, within Chun Wu's palace, Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, and even Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang had come. They were asking Chun Wu to let them into the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation so they could search for Chu Feng.

“This...” Chun Wu was in a very difficult situation as she faced their requests. She said very helplessly, “Actually, I am very worried about him as well, but my master had said if Chu Feng wants to enter the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation, he can, but none of you are allowed due to your cultivations.

“Even though everything inside the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation is illusory and won’t attack us, no one can guarantee that it won’t go astray one day. If it does, not to mention you, even with the cultivation I have, there’s no doubt I will die inside.

“Right now, Chu Feng has entered but has yet to return. It’s quite possible something wrong happened when he was cultivating the Taboo martial skill, and it’s also quite possible something wrong happened to the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation. After all, regardless of its profoundness, it’s still only a formation. No one can guarantee a formation that has existed for several tens of thousands of years will continue working safety.

“Besides, there has been a few times where issues regarding the formation arose.”

“Senior Chun Wu, just let us enter! No matter life or death, it will be unrelated to you. It’s just that I cannot leave him alone!” Zi Ling begged with a face of sincerity. She, who was usually strong, now had sparkling tears flowing from her eyes.

“Senior Chun Wu, we’re begging you!” Su Rou, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi all begged as well.

“Right now, my master is concocting in seclusion. I truly don’t know whether something has happened within the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation. For your safety, I cannot let you enter. However, I myself can enter and look for Junior Chu Feng,” Chun Wu said.

“Why are you all here? I could hear you talking from far away! Has something happened?” Just at that moment, a voice suddenly rang out outside. When they looked over, they discovered it was Qiushui Fuyan. Qiushui Fuyan had returned.

Moreover, for some reason, there were even four beautiful people behind her—Yan Ruyu, Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and Qiu Zhu. Those four had followed Qiushui Fuyan here.

“Senior Qiushui, you’ve returned! This is really great!” Chun Wu acted as if she saw her savior when seeing Qiushui Fuyan. She immediately rejoiced.

It was because Qiushui Fuyan was a Martial King! Judging by her cultivation, even if something truly happened inside the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation, she would be able to take care of it.

So, Chun Wu, without hiding anything, told her everything that had happened.

“This Chu Feng is too overconfident! The Earthen Taboo martial skill is a legendary martial skill! In the entire Eastern Sea Region, there has been no one who’s cultivated it, but judging by the Mortal Taboo martial skill, one can imagine the cultivation difficulty required by the Earthen Taboo martial skill. Why does he dare to even touch it with the cultivation he possesses?”

Qiushui Fuyan’s complexion changed greatly after she heard what happened. As she felt condemning feelings, she walked straight towards the exit.

Chun Wu and the others quickly followed when they saw that. Originally, they even wanted to lead the way for Qiushui Fuyan, but later on, they discovered she simply didn’t need their guide.

She led the way and easily walked towards the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation with no problems. None of the people who guarded the checkpoints dared to stop her.

When they saw that, Chun Wu and the others felt confusion. They weren’t confused as to why the guards didn’t stop her. That, they could understand. After all, Qiushui Fuyan was their master’s friend. It was something

everyone in the Misty Peak knew. She had always walked where she wished, so who dared to stop her?

However, in Chun Wu and the others' memories, Qiushui Fuyan never liked walking randomly in the Misty Peak. She shouldn't have ever come to the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation, yet how did she know its location?

Even though they were confused, no one asked her because what they were more concerned about was Chu Feng's safety.

Finally, with Qiushui Fuyan leading the way, they soon arrived at the entrance to the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation.

After opening the door, they saw that the food sent by Chun Wu and the others was still accumulated at the entrance—not a single bite was taken.

So, without saying anything more, Qiushui Fuyan strode forth and entered. But just as she entered, she returned around and yelled, “What are you entering for? If there's really something wrong here, you are only looking to die by entering!”

“Senior Qiushui, we really can't cast our worries away! Please let us come with you!” Zi Ling said.

And when Qiushui Fuyan saw their faces full of anxiousness and their moist eyes, her heart was shaken. She didn't say much either, and with the wave of her sleeve, a boundless Spirit Formation surged out, enveloping Zi Ling and the others. Then, she leapt into the air, and brought along with her the Spirit Formation that wrapped around them.

Qiushui Fuyan had quite an in-depth understanding of the geography of this place. She actually knew there was a sea and many sea beasts here. Moreover, she knew they were relatively powerful and it was the best place for martial skill cultivation. As such, she flew towards that sea.

boom boom boom boom boom...

However, before she was even near, they were able to hear bursts of explosions endlessly erupting at the sea. At that moment, Qiushui Fuyan's tense heart was finally at ease. A hint of peace emerged onto her anxious face.

But she did not stop there, and instead, continued flying in the direction of the explosions.

Finally, they arrived at the origin of the noise. However, after they saw everything in the distance, almost everyone's expression changed greatly. Even Qiushui Fuyan herself couldn't help deeply inhaling. She cried out, "This guy!"

Chapter 878 - Horrifying Slash

MGA: Chapter 878 - Horrifying Slash

At that moment, atop the sea, violent gales arose and explosions resounded endlessly.

Fierce energy ripples were akin to sharp blades as they cut open space itself and split the sea. There were violent explosions upon the waters, and with uncontrollable shock waves bringing about havoc, the Martial Lord sea beasts who unintentionally passed by were instantly blown into pieces. Its power was very frightening.

The origin of all that was actually a weak body—Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng was wearing lightning armour, he was holding the Silver Dragon Spear Royal Armament, and even on his back, there were two black wings made by black flames.

With all of that, Chu Feng's cultivation had risen to rank six Martial Lord. His fighting strength was even more terrifying; the aura he exuded would even force rank nine Martial Lords to evade him. He could simply be said to be invincible against all Martial Lords. As he stood there, he didn't even look like a person, but more like a god.

At that moment, Chu Feng was waving the Silver Dragon Spear in his hand and unceasingly sending out ferocious attacks. As the Royal Armament was waved about, silver dragons made created by white light continually shot out from the Silver Dragon Spear. Their teeth were bared, their claws were brandished, and they were spitting out clouds and mist as they shot towards the sea surface, attacking something.

The thing floating in the sea stirred up gales and waves. It was very horrifying. Not only was its roar deafening, its appearance really did catch the eye—it was a huge tortoise as big as an island. Not only did it have a

terrifying appearance, its strength was extraordinary—a rank one Martial King.

So, Chu Feng, with the cultivation of a rank six Martial Lord, was fighting a super-huge tortoise, with the cultivation of a rank one Martial King.

“Has Chu Feng gone mad? He’s challenging this huge tortoise?! That’s the overlord of this sea! Before, when we cultivated in this place, we’ve always avoided it and never dared to go near it!” Dong Xue’s face was one of astonishment when she saw that.

“No need to worry. It doesn’t matter how powerful that tortoise is. It will only block Chu Feng’s attack with its power due to the restriction of the formation. It will not attack Junior Chu Feng,” Chun Wu explained, but was also frightened by Chu Feng’s actions.

Fear was always created in people’s hearts from powerful things. Although they knew the huge tortoise was restricted by the formation and wouldn’t attack them, they still stayed far away. It was for no other reason but because it was too powerful. If it lost control, then they were dead. However, Chu Feng was doing the exact thing

they

didn’t dare to do.

“Haha, as expected from my Junior Chu Feng! His strength is really too powerful. Although he’s only a rank six Martial Lord right now, his fighting strength allows him to even fight against a Martial King! This is truly admirable.” Zhang Tianyi was excited. He felt proud to have such a powerful brother like Chu Feng.

“It doesn’t matter what his strength is, he won’t be able to defeat a Martial King. He only dares to do this right now because he knows the tortoise won’t attack him. If it could, he would already be dead. No matter how strong Martial Lords are, they are still only Martial Lords. How can they even put up a fight against Martial Kings? Even peak Martial Lords can’t,

let alone him.” But just at that moment, Dong Xue curled her lips, refuting Zhang Tianyi’s perspective.

Ever since coming out from the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, she and Xia Yu had tried to get closer to Chu Feng many times, but it was all useless. So, after confirming he wouldn’t bother with them anymore, they too didn’t look for unhappiness themselves.

However, due to their personalities, of course they would resent Chu Feng. Actually, they chose to come here not to find Chu Feng, but instead, to check whether he was dead or not. One had to know, in their hearts, they wished Chu Feng were dead.

However, after seeing that scene, they were not only disappointed, they were shocked. Chu Feng was becoming stronger and stronger. He had already left them far behind, and in their eyes, that was not anything good.

“You’re saying Chu Feng is inferior to a peak Martial Lord?” Dong Xue’s words naturally evoked the displeasure from the crowd. Zi Ling led the way and questioned Dong Xue.

“Hmph. Junior Chu Feng is indeed strong, but that’s only because he’s relying on special techniques. Without the Royal Armament, and without that special technique, can he defeat those with superior cultivation?” Dong Xue curled her lips. Although Zi Ling was a Divine Body, her current cultivation was very weak. Naturally, she was not afraid of her.

“Shut up!” Just at that moment, Qiushui Fuyan suddenly shouted furiously. Although her words were directed at everyone, her unkind gaze was cast towards Dong Xue.

When she saw that, Dong Xue’s heart trembled. Her initially proud face paled from fright. She lowered her head, silent.

Suddenly, Chu Feng stopped his insane attacks. He stood in the air, and closed his eyes.

At the same time, the fabric of space around Chu Feng started trembling slightly. The weak power in the air then became strong, and the quivers of space trembled more intensely. Even cracks in space appeared, and an extremely powerful aura was even going to shatter that space.

With such a change, boundless Martial power gathered towards Chu Feng like a hurricane. As they faced such immense Martial power, even Qiushui Fuyan's eyes lit up. She, as a Gold-cloak World Spiritist and a Martial King, could feel that the surging Martial power was of the King level.

To create such a tremendous martial skill was not even something she, a Martial King, could do. Yet, right now, Chu Feng had done it.

At that instant, Qiushui Fuyan's eyes did not shift. She was tightly staring at Chu Feng because there was a question in her heart. That question was,

Chu Feng wouldn't truly have cultivated this Earthen Taboo martial skill, right?

When she thought of that question, she simply didn't dare to continue thinking. Putting aside the cultivation difficulty of an Earthen Taboo martial skill, two months of time simply did not allow for such an impossible feat.

boom

However, just at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly opened his eyes. At the same time, a ferocious aura appeared within his gaze, which then shot towards the huge tortoise.

wuaooooo—

When it saw Chu Feng's fierce gaze, the huge tortoise's blood-red eyes glittered and it actually let out a timid low growl. At the same time, it exuded a boundless aura from its body as it quickly started moving. As the waves around it surged, the tortoise was planning to escape.

ji ji ji ji...

But it was already too late. Before the huge tortoise was able to escape, a blood-red gaseous mass shot out from Chu Feng's body.

That was a very odd gaseous mass. It looked like a sharp blade, yet resembled a water snake. Not only were they innumerable, they even made an ear-piercing shriek. It was even frightening quick, and with just a blink, it had enveloped everything, sealing the huge tortoise within.

Then, at that moment, Chu Feng's lips moved slightly as he said four great words, “

EARTHEN—TABOO—FIRMAMENT—SLASH!

”

boom

After that shout, akin to an order from a lord, the strange and horrifying gaseous masses gathered in the direction of Chu Feng's gaze with its destructive might.

Finally, after a huge explosion, a blinding slash appeared above.

When that slash emerged, the destructive aura burst out as well, and thus, instantly engulfing a portion of the sea.

Chapter 879 - Unfinished

MGA: Chapter 879 - Unfinished

When the destructive slash exploded, it was as if there were nothing that could stop its destruction. Blood-red energy ripples spread out everywhere, as though it were a huge pool of blood, and also as if it were a bloody mouth. Amidst the ear-piercing howls, it engulfed everything.

That sea region had become hell.

gulp

There was not a single person who

wasn't

shocked upon seeing the strange and horrifying blood-red ripples. Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and the others even paled from fright, and couldn't help gulping.

They had never seen such a horrifying martial skill. No matter the atmosphere it exuded, or its power, both aspects were horrifying. If they hadn't personally seen it, they definitely wouldn't believe such a slash was cast by Chu Feng, a Martial Lord.

In reality, not only them, even Qiushui Fuyan, who was quite experienced, couldn't help deeply gasping. She said with an extremely astonished tone, "He's actually succeeded. In two short months, he cultivated a legendary Earthen Taboo martial skill!"

"Senior Qiushui, you're saying Chu Feng used an Earthen Taboo martial skill just now?" Xia Yu and Dong Xue both widened their mouths in shock.

There was actually a Mortal Taboo martial skill free to cultivate on the Misty Peak, but since it was too difficult, even they weren't successful in

their attempts.

As for an Earthen Taboo martial skill, that was a martial skill from the legends. It was said its cultivation difficulty was a dozen times a Mortal Taboo martial skill.

They couldn't even control a Mortal Taboo martial skill, yet Chu Feng grasped an Earthen Taboo martial skill. How could they

not

be shocked?

“Have either of you seen a martial skill with such power?” Qiushui Fuyan did not give them a direct reply, but her question had indirectly told them the answer.

“Are you two deaf? Didn't you hear what my Junior Chu Feng said just now? Before using that slash, he clearly yelled ‘Firmament Slash’. Is there any room for doubt?” Zhang Tianyi coldly mocked. He was already quite displeased with Xia Yu and Dong Xue.

At that instant, the two of them were speechless. With everything that had happened, they had no choice but to admit Chu Feng had grasped an Earthen Taboo martial skill within a short two months.

However, that fact was too astounding. If it were known, it would definitely create quite a commotion amongst the population once again.

aooo—

Just at that moment, within the berserk blood-red ripples, another furious roar rang out. Although that voice was quite a bit weaker, it was undoubtedly from the huge tortoise—it hadn't died yet.

hmm

Indeed, as the blood-red ripples gradually dissipated, they were able to see the huge tortoise slowly appearing within their sights. The enormous

monster truly hadn't died yet.

Although it hadn't died, on its indestructible shell, there were several cracks that appeared. From those cracks, large amounts of blood kept on flowing out, dyeing the sea water red. Even though the huge tortoise hadn't died yet, it was still heavily injured.

“Ah!” Suddenly, Chu Feng, in the sky, coughed out a mouthful of blood. Then, his body started swaying and he nearly fell down from the sky.

“Chu Feng!” Qiushui Fuyan was the first to react. She leapt forth and came up to Chu Feng, supporting him.

After she did, the lightning armour on Chu Feng's body as well as the wings made by black flames started disappearing. As such change occurred to him, not only did Chu Feng's aura return to rank five Martial Lord, it was several times weaker than before.

Even, at that instant, Qiushui Fuyan could feel all the bones in Chu Feng's body shattered, and his skin all cracked. Nearly half of his physical body was damaged. From that, even though it could be seen that Chu Feng had successfully cast the Earthen Taboo martial skill, he had indeed paid a huge price.

“Senior Qiushui, this... Earthen Taboo martial skill is truly difficult!” After Chu Feng saw Qiushui Fuyan, he first bitterly smiled, then his head went limp and he lost consciousness.

“You... The Earthen Taboo martial skill, something even a Martial King doesn't dare to easily touch, was successfully cultivated within the short span of two months. Yet you're still saying it's difficult? What about us then?” Qiushui Fuyan felt quite helpless at Chu Feng's words before he lost consciousness.

“Senior Qiushui, is Chu Feng fine?” At the same time, Zi Ling and the others went up. As they looked at the pale and unconscious Chu Feng, they felt very worried.

“Don’t worry, he’s fine. To use the Earthen Taboo martial skill with his current cultivation, a backlash like this is already very light. There’s no need for you to worry. He’ll be back to normal after a few days of resting.” Qiushui Fuyan smiled, then led Chu Feng out of the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation.

Chu Feng went unconscious for several days. When he woke up, there was still a bit of pain on his body, but it was not as bad.

“Supreme genius, you’ve finally woken up?” Just as Chu Feng awoke and before he even got hold of his bearings, a gentle voice entered his ears.

Turning his head to the side, he saw Qiushui Fuyan walking towards him. However, at that moment, she did not use her veil to cover her appearance. Her beautiful complexion was revealed before him.

Although Qiushui Fuyan had already entered the middle-ages, she still looked like a lady in her mid-twenties. Moreover, the experienced and mature aura around her made her even more enchanting; the former number one beauty of the Eastern Sea Region indeed lived up to her name.

“Senior, don’t joke with me...” Chu Feng smiled as he scratched his head.

“What joke do you mean? In two months, you cultivated a legendary Earthen Taboo martial skill. The title of ‘Supreme Genius’ is completely deserving!

“To be honest, even Huangfu Haoyue back in the day was far inferior to you,” Qiushui Fuyan said with great praise.

“Cultivated? How have I even cultivated it? I’ve merely just started.” However, Chu Feng shook his head at Qiushui Fuyan’s praise.

“Just started? You haven’t completely grasped the Earthen Taboo martial skill?” Qiushui Fuyan felt a bit surprised at those words.

“Of course not. This Firmament Slash is really too difficult. There are in total nine slashes, and every single slash has double the power of the

previous one. However, the pressure it puts on the body doubles as well.

“Due to my current physical body, I can only use the first slash. If I were able to use the complete ninth slash, how would that huge tortoise merely be injured? It would have been turned into dust already,” Chu Feng said.

“From what you said, the power in the Earthen Taboo martial skill truly isn’t something a Mortal Taboo martial skill can be compared to. It is truly terrifying.” Qiushui Fuyan was shocked after hearing Chu Feng’s words.

“Yeah! But sadly, I, right now, am still unable to grasp it completely. Moreover, when using it, the preparation time is too long. It’s very difficult to use it in battle,” Chu Feng said.

“Don’t worry. Completely grasping this Earthen Taboo martial skill is only a matter of time with the aptitude you have. You don’t need to rush,” Qiushui Fuyan consoled with a smile when she saw Chu Feng a bit downcast.

“Senior Qiushui, were you able to find Senior Huangfu?” Chu Feng asked.

Qiushui Fuyan shook her head, but then very quickly said, “Although I haven’t found Huangfu Haoyue’s whereabouts, I have discovered one thing in my journey. I’m sure you will really want to know this as well.”

Chapter 880 - The Scheme of the Immortal Execution Archipelago

MGA: Chapter 880 - The Scheme of the Immortal Execution Archipelago

“Senior Qiushui, what is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s related to the Crippling Night Demon Sect. I wasn’t planning to tell you because nothing good will stem out of this. I was afraid you’d be rash.

“However, you are still a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. After some contemplation, I decided it was better to tell you,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Senior Qiushui, what happened?” Chu Feng felt a bit uneasy, and subconsciously knew that they were in a bit of trouble.

“The battle between the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Crippling Night Demon Sect has completely spread far and wide. Both sides are fighting back and forth, and both sides have been wounded. However, since the Crippling Night Demon Sect has always been hidden, the ones suffering have always been the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“As I was searching for Huangfu Haoyue, I inadvertently stumbled upon a meeting between the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Inferno Divine Bird clan.

“Both sides typically don’t have any dealings with each other. However, the Immortal Execution Archipelago has sent an alliance invitation to the Three Great Monstrous Clans, inviting them to deal with the Crippling Night Demon Sect together. The Inferno Divine Bird clan is one of the Three Great Monstrous Clans.

“When I saw them together, my first thought was the possibility they had already allied together. These two enormous powers were going to fight

the Crippling Night Demon Sect together.

“So, I secretly snuck in and eavesdropped on their conversation.

“Their plans matched my expectation. They had truly allied, and they were planning a counterattack towards the Crippling Night Demon Sect,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“What are they planning to do?” Chu Feng suddenly stood up. He could not continue just sitting there, because regardless what others said, he was still a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. He couldn’t just do nothing as the Crippling Night Demon Sect was in danger.

“There are a limited number of experts in the Immortal Execution Archipelago. At present, battles are erupting frequently so all Martial Kings from the Immortal Execution Archipelago are overseeing a single region of land, guarding important territories.

“The Crippling Night Demon Sect knows that well, so they don’t attack any territories guarded by Martial Kings. They send experts to attack places with no Martial Kings. Although it’s a bit despicable, it has made the Immortal Execution Archipelago suffer greatly.

“Right now, the Immortal Execution Archipelago is planning to use that tactic to counterattack. They’ve intentionally let out news that Murong Xun and some experts left the Immortal Execution Archipelago, thus attracting an attack from the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“The sect has always kept a close eye on the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s Martial Kings. After confirming none have been sent, they are definitely going to ambush Murong Xun.

“However, they will not know there are two Martial Kings from the Inferno Divine Bird clan hidden within the group led by Murong Xun.

“Those two Martial King Monstrous Beasts are really not simple at all. They are the two Protectors of the Inferno Divine Bird clan. Although they are only rank one Martial Kings, they possess a bloodline power only

Monstrous Beasts have. They also have an extremely strong combination technique, and a typical Martial King cannot defend against that.

“If your Crippling Night Demon Sect is truly going to send experts, then it would be somewhat fine if they send two Martial King. However, if they only send one, it will be suicidal.

“And, if your Crippling Night Demon Sect hasn’t discovered this will be a trap, they will definitely only send one.

“So, it’s best that you notify them and tell them to avoid falling into the trap,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Crap!” Chu Feng instantly furrowed his brows tightly, then said, “They can contact me, but I can’t contact them, nor do I know where they are. I simply can’t get in touch with them.”

“If that’s true, then this is quite a bit more troubling.” Qiushui Fuyan shook her head.

“Senior Qiushui, do you know where Murong Xun and the others are preparing to go? And where on their path is the most suitable place for an ambush?” Chu Feng asked.

“The reason I hesitated in telling you is because I was afraid you would be rash. This is a trap! Are you going to jump into that trap in order to save them? You know that you’re the one the Immortal Execution Archipelago wants to kill the most!” Qiushui Fuyan instantly knew his plans when she heard Chu Feng’s question.

“But Senior Qiushui, as a man, I should put the word ‘loyalty’ at the forefront of my mind. If I had never learnt of this, then there would really be nothing I could do. However, since I have learnt of this, I cannot ignore it. I’m sure if the Crippling Night Demon Sect knew I was in danger, they would definitely come and save me.

“Right now, I already have a certain amount of strength to protect myself. Even Martial Kings may not be able to do much to me. At least, they

shouldn't even think of killing me.

“Besides, I'm not throwing myself into a trap. I just want to stop the Crippling Night Demon Sect before they make a move,” Chu Feng explained.

“Chu Feng, don't be so stubborn! First of all, you aren't even that close to the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. It's not worth it to risk your life for them.

“In addition, even if you don't think for yourself, you should at least think for Zi Ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei, right?”

“Do you know how worried they get every time you head out? Of course, everything would be fine if you return peacefully. However, if something truly happens to you, do you think they will continue living?” Qiushui Fuyan said strictly.

At that instant, Chu Feng's face expressed his conflicting state of mind. Of course, it wasn't that he didn't know such logic, but he still said, “Senior Qiushui, I know you are thinking for my sake.

“However, you also don't want me to be an unloyal and unrighteous person, right? I'm sure even if Zi Ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei know about this, they'll definitely support me.”

“Ahh, whatever, whatever. I can't be more stubborn than you. But this journey is a very dangerous one. In order to guarantee no accidents, I'll just come with you,” said Qiushui Fuyan, in the end, with quite a bit of helplessness.

Chu Feng was elated when he heard she was going to go with him. He quickly said, “Thank you, Senior Qiushui Fuyan. You truly treat me quite well.”

Qiushui Fuyan was a Martial King, and the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church. Although she was only a rank one Martial King, her

strength was definitely not weak. With her, Chu Feng's confidence was boosted greatly.

After deciding, Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan didn't dally much. After saying their farewells with Zi Ling and the others, they left immediately. After all, that was a huge matter—saving lives.

During the journey with Qiushui Fuyan, Chu Feng heard that Murong Xun and the others left the Immortal Execution Archipelago's headquarters to head towards another region to pick up something important. It was an iron called Ancient Adamantium.

It was rumoured to be a type of iron that came from the Ancient Era. Although it was not a cultivation resource, it was extremely valuable—it was a main component in creating Royal Armaments.

Although there weren't any Royal-cloak World Spiritists in the Eastern Sea Region, thus no one could create a Royal Armament, they were still able to create imitations of Royal Armaments—the Incomplete Royal Armaments

There were many Ancient Adamantium Ingots, and if they were made into Incomplete Royal Armament on a large scale, that would greatly raise the total strength of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Moreover, he learnt from Qiushui Fuyan that the rumours spread by the Immortal Execution Archipelago were still true, despite being a trap. The Immortal Execution Archipelago had indeed dug up large amounts of Ancient Adamantium Ores, and Murong Xun was indeed heading over to pick them up back to the Immortal Execution Archipelago's headquarters in order to create Incomplete Royal Armaments.

However, they also took this chance to release rumours. They wanted to set up a trap for the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

As such, no matter what he had to do, Chu Feng decided he was not going to let the Immortal Execution Archipelago's scheme succeed.

Chapter 881 - Good Show

MGA: Chapter 881 - Good Show

The land where the Ancient Adamantium Ores were dug up was called the Gale Plains. Since there was a mining area from the Ancient Era within the Gale Plains, it was one of the most important territories of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. It was said the one who oversaw this area was the Sixth Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's Nine Immortals.

The Sixth Immortal was the same as the Seventh and Eighth Immortal—he was also a rank one Martial King. However, his fighting strength far surpassed those two. It was said with his strength, he could even put up a fight against a rank two Martial King.

That meant even though the Sixth Immortal was a rank one Martial King, due to his power, the Crippling Night Demon Sect was not going to directly attack the Gale Plains just to avoid any unexpected situations.

And since the Crippling Night Demon Sect also wanted to get their hands on the Ancient Adamantium Ores, they were most likely going to ambush Murong Xun and the others when they left the Gale Plains with the cargo. Not only would they obtain the ores, they would even be able to capture Murong Xun. That was truly hitting two birds with one stone. Yet, how could they possibly know a huge trap was what awaited them?

However, after Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan left the Teleportation Array and arrived at a potential ambush location, they received very bad news: several days ago, Murong Xun had already led the Immortal Execution Archipelago experts and headed towards the Gale Plains.

If everything went according to plan, Murong Xun and the others had very possibly already arrived at the Gale Plains and picked up the Ancient Adamantium Ores, and were returning right now.

That truly made Chu Feng anxious because if the Crippling Night Demon Sect had truly come, it was most likely they had already set up a trap. At that very moment, they could have already fell into the Immortal Execution Archipelago's ploy.

“Chu Feng, don't worry. Even if just for your sake, I won't do nothing.

“The Immortal Execution Archipelago has invited two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan, but they definitely would have never expected me to come here and help. If the Crippling Night Demon Sect has truly entered the trap, it isn't too big of a deal. We can just destroy their trap.

“The flames of the Inferno Divine Bird clan are very powerful, but I will show them the most powerful flames are the Burning Heaven Church's Burning Heaven Flames,” Qiushui Fuyan said as she saw Chu Feng's agitated emotions.

“Senior Qiushui, I truly apologize for dragging you into the battle between the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago.” Chu Feng felt very grateful for Qiushui Fuyan's words. At present, the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect were truly in a calamity, and even though accepting Qiushui Fuyan's assistance would make her an enemy of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Chu Feng could not refuse.

After all, if the Crippling Night Demon Sect had truly fallen into the trap, he could not save them with his own strength. However, if Qiushui Fuyan helped, then they more or less had some strength to turn the battle around.

“Silly boy, what are you talking about? The Immortal Execution Archipelago hasn't had their eyes on my Burning Heaven Church for just one or two days. We are already enemies, and sooner or later, there will be a conflict between us. Rather than later, why not sooner? After all, I'm the only one remaining from the Burning Heaven Church. What can they do to me if I do what I want?” Qiushui Fuyan faintly smiled. Her face was calm, lacking even the slightest bit of fear towards the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Chu Feng couldn't help but smile after hearing her words as the shame in his heart dropped quite a bit. She was very correct. Even if not for his sake, Qiushui Fuyan was, in reality, already an enemy of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"There are people coming." But suddenly, Chu Feng frowned. In order to find the Crippling Night Demon Sect, he had spread out his Spirit power, thus his detection was very sensitive. Even though there was still some distance between him and those people, he still discovered their appearance.

Qiushui Fuyan also detected those people. However, she did not panic. Instead, she made a light smile, and said, "I know these people. Since they've come from the Gale Plains, perhaps we can acquire some information."

"Senior Qiushui, you know these people?" Chu Feng asked.

"Mm, they're from the Lovers Terrace. Don't say anything. I'll go ask them," Qiushui Fuyan said.

"Mm." Chu Feng nodded, and at the same time, used the Transformational Mask and changed his appearance. At the same time, he also lowered his cultivation, and followed behind Qiushui Fuyan like a servant.

Qiushui Fuyan intentionally lowered her speed, and flew forth without a hurry. Indeed, shortly after, several people were also flying towards them.

They were five elderly people. They wore common clothings, and their cultivations were at the peak of the Martial Lord realm. Although Qiushui Fuyan covered her face with her veil, they still recognized her. So, after seeing her, they quickly flew over, clasped their hands a hundred meters away, and asked in a probing manner, "Is the person ahead Lady Qiushui of the Lovers Terrace?"

"Long time no see, everyone," Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile.

“Ahh, it truly is Lady Qiushui!” The five elders were quite happy after they heard her voice. Since they had already confirmed her identity, they came over and one even said, “Lady Qiushui, are you planning to head towards the Gale Plains?”

“Indeed.” Qiushui Fuyan nodded.

“I would advise you not to go. Right now, the journey to the Gale Plains is not too peaceful,” that person said.

“Why isn’t it peaceful? Has something happened?” Qiushui Fuyan asked, feigning ignorance.

“To be honest, the reason we’re here is because we were captured,” that elder said helplessly.

“Captured? What do you mean?” Qiushui Fuyan asked.

“A few days ago, there was someone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago who came to the Lovers Terrace. With the excuse of inviting us, they forced us there. We were brought directly to the Gale Plains, into the territory of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“At first, we were still quite worried. We were worried whether we offended the Immortal Execution Archipelago and they were going to harm us.

“However, later on, there was an unending stream of scattered cultivation experts who were also captured by the Immortal Execution Archipelago. There were even many small sect heads brought into the Gale Plains. Moreover, they treated us quite well with food and drinks. Other than restricting our freedom, they were respectful in all ways. They seemed to mean no harm.

“We asked them why they brought us here, but they didn’t tell us. They only said they invited us here to witness a good show.

“And today, they’ve finally released us, and we’ve also finally learnt what their ‘good show’ is.

“So it turns out that the Immortal Execution Archipelago has allied with the Inferno Divine Bird clan and they’ve set up a trap together. They’ve lured the Crippling Night Demon Sect and want to capture their experts all at once.

“Right now, they have already been caught and they are being killed by the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Inferno Divine Bird clan. To this so-called good show, none of us had the heart to enjoy it, so we left,” the elder narrated in detail.

“Lady Qiushui, right now, the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Crippling Night Demon Sect are still fighting one another. Do not head over. Otherwise, if they learn of that, who knows whether they will think we’ve started to associate with the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“If they drag us into their fury while they’re in a rage, that would not be good at all.”

“Yeah, yeah! Quickly join us and leave! Let’s quickly leave this disaster zone!” the four others urged.

When he heard that, Chu Feng tightly clenched his fists as his heart was submerged within anger. No matter what, he didn’t expect the Immortal Execution Archipelago would be that despicable. Not only did they lay a trap, they even looked for a crowd beforehand and wanted to humiliate the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“Chu Feng, let’s go.” In reality, it was not only Chu Feng who was enraged. Even Qiushui Fuyan couldn’t continue staying here. She grabbed Chu Feng, then disappeared instantly. With the quickest speed possible, they flew towards the Gale Plains.

At that moment, they left the five elders standing on the spot. Their expressions were frozen as they looked at each other, saying

simultaneously, “Just now, Lady Qiushui seemed to have said... the young man by her side was Chu Feng?”

As they spoke, their complexion changed greatly. They suddenly realized the calamity they had made, and without saying anything more, they fled with their lives.

Chapter 882 - Public Humiliation

MGA: Chapter 882 - Public Humiliation

There was a large number of people gathered ten thousand miles away from the Gale Plains.

Their cultivations were not weak—most were peak Martial Lords. Although they couldn't be called as peak experts, they were still slightly famous people who occupied their own spot in the Eastern Sea Region.

At that moment, they were watching a battle—a battle between the two strongest forces in the Eastern Sea Region: the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

At that moment, the surface of the plains was splattered with blood. There were even some limbs lying around. Only a small portion of the people there retained a complete corpse; however, at that moment, none exhibited any signs of life.

Those people, other than some from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, were mostly from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Moreover, they were all Martial Lords.

Above the sky, there were two battlefields. One was the interweaving of fire and water—their battle covered the sky and sun, and might born from their clashes was extremely terrifying. In that battlefield, there were four people fighting back and forth, endlessly switching from offense to defense.

Two of them wore a fiery-red robe. They were clearly young men, yet there were beautiful feathers on their heads. On their bodies, there were also many precious ornaments. Their decorations made them appear neither male nor female, but more like two humanoid monsters.

In reality, those two

weren't

human—they truly were monsters, because they were Monstrous Beasts. They were the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan.

The ones exchanging blows with those two Protectors were two old men. One of them had long red hair, blazing like an inferno, while the other had long blue hair, soft like water. At that moment, they were controlling immense volumes of water and fire, and fighting the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan. They were the great and famous Water King and Fire King from the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

The battlefield of four Martial Kings was extremely intense. No matter the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, or the observers invited by the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they didn't dare to approach them, fearful of being swirled into the uncontrollable shock waves. After all, those four were too strong. Even a single remnant shock wave would be sufficient to kill a Martial Lord.

Other than that battlefield, there was another one, and it was similarly eye-catching. Similarly as well, there were four people, and they were all rank eight Martial Lords. However, they were not fighting two-on-two, but one-on-three.

The reason it was so fascinating was because they were the publicly acclaimed peak geniuses in the Eastern Sea Region. The young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago—Murong Xun—as well as the disciples of the Crippling Night Demon Sect's Three Protectors—Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming.

At that moment, they were exchanging blows, like they did at the Depraved Valley. The difference, however, was that Murong Xun now did not have a Royal Armament. At that moment, he was holding an Incomplete Royal Armament. As for Xuan Xiaochao and the others, they were the same.

But even though Murong Xun only held an Incomplete Royal Armament, his fighting strength was still very strong. He alone actually forced back

Xuan Xiaochao and the others, and on their bodies, there were even injuries of varying degrees. Even as all three of them fought a single person, they could still not defeat Murong Xun.

“Everyone, do you see this? These are the trash of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“They only know how to bully the fewer with more, and bully the weak as the strong. In these days, they have not used any few number of these despicable methods to ambush my Immortal Execution Archipelago. They are truly the epitome of shamelessness.

“Today, my Immortal Execution Archipelago wants to let the world know if the Crippling Night Demon Sect does not have any advantage in numbers or strength, they are no match for us.” Suddenly, a clear voice rang out—it was from an enormous warship.

On that colossal warship, there were several thousand experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, all standing orderly. Moreover, at the forefront of the warship, there was an old man sitting who had white hair on both sides of his head, and black hair for the rest.

That old man’s eyes were akin to an eagle’s. They were mighty even with the lack of anger, and at that moment, he was actually sitting on ten peak Martial Lords. If one looked carefully, they would discover those ten peak Martial Lords were the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers.

At that moment, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers were all bloody and bruised. Even though they were very furious, they could not rid themselves of that person’s pressure. In battle, they could only fall one after the other, and allow that old man to sit on their bodies as they endured such humiliation.

But that could not be blamed on them, because the person who sat on them was a Martial King. Moreover, not a normal Martial King, but the Sixth Immortal who oversaw the Gale Plains.

Just in case, he too had temporarily left and followed Murong Xun and the others. So, even though the Crippling Night Demon Sect had sent two

Martial Kings, the Water King and the Fire King, they were no match for the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

As the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan were suppressing the Fire King and Water King, the Sixth Immortal commenced a massacre. He completely slaughtered the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, leaving behind only the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, Fu Fengming, the Water King, and the Fire King.

“Why isn’t that Sixth Immortal making a move to finish off the Crippling Night Demon Sect? Instead, he’s allowing them to continue fighting. Does he not fear a change in circumstances?” The Immortal Execution Archipelago was clearly able to end the battle, yet they didn’t. When they saw such a scene, some observers felt confused.

“You are truly foolish! Can’t you tell? Why else do you think the Immortal Execution Archipelago detained us and said there was a good show? This, right now, is the good show they want to show us.

“He wants them to fight, and let the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan kill off the Water King and Fire King, then let Murong Xun kill off the Three Protectors’ disciples.

“With that, not only would their strength be shown, it would even emphasize the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s powerlessness. They want to tell the entire world that if they fought on equal ground, the Crippling Night Demon Sect would be no match for the Immortal Execution Archipelago,” explained someone who understood what was happening.

“Hahaha, you shameless fools from the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Right now, I will not do anything! I give you a fair confrontation, and as long as you win on either battlefield, I will allow all of you to leave safely! However... I’m just afraid you won’t be able to use this chance!

“Oi oi oi, Water King Fire King, what are you two old things doing? Back in the day, weren’t you two so mighty? Are both of you old now? Or that you’ve always been useless, and can only scare others with the facade of the Crippling Night Demon Sect?

“And you three brats, aren’t you all a bit too useless? At least the Water King and Fire King are in a fair match, but why can’t the three of you even defeat a single person? Why are you all so useless? The Three Protectors’ disciples don’t really seem to be all that impressive, huh?” The Sixth Immortal felt even smugger when he heard the crowd’s discussions. What he aimed for was this effect. He wanted to humiliate the Crippling Night Demon Sect in public.

“Hoh. The Crippling Night Demon Sect has always been a bunch of shameless people. They only know how to ambush the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s younger generation with the old dogs who’ve cultivated for many years. They are simply cowards, don’t you think?” As Murong Xun held a large golden blade and fought Xuan Xiaochao and the others, there was no end to his sneering and mocking as his sinister face also filled itself with arrogance.

Chapter 883 - Chu Feng Has Come

MGA: Chapter 883 - Chu Feng Has Come

“Murong Xun, that’s quite a proud smile you have there. Have you forgotten when my Brother Chu Feng pushed down your fiancée Ya Fei and your sister Murong Wan?” You Tonghan did not back down as Murong Xun mocked him, and instead, counterattacked by reminding him of Ya Fei.

“You’re looking to die!” Murong Xun was enraged when he heard that, because that was a pain that would eternally remain in his heart. It was humiliation he could never erase in his entire life.

At that instant, he was like a dog that went insane as he continuously brandished the golden blade in his hand. Golden half-moon blades of light appeared endlessly as they slashed towards You Tonghan.

bang bang bang Before such attacks of madness, You Tonghan was thrown into a passive state. Even though Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming did their best to help him, they could not stop Murong Xun’s attacks.

puchi

“Ah!”

Finally, a golden blade of light passed through their defences, and You Tonghan instantly cried out.

When they looked at him, Xuan Xiaochao’s and Fu Fengming’s expression changed greatly. They were able to see You Tonghan’s face splattered with blood—his lower jaw was forcibly cut away, and even his tongue was chopped. He, at that moment, was in quite a pitiful state.

“Hahaha, you wanted to insult me, huh? These are the consequences of insulting me!” After cutting off You Tonghan’s tongue and lower jaw,

Murong Xun roared with laughter and started to ridicule them again.

“Murong Xun, I will kill you!” Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming, good brothers of You Tonghan, could not tolerate that. Both of their eyes were blood-red and their fury soared. Putting forth their full strength, they attacked Murong Xun.

“AHH—” As for You Tonghan, he was incomparably furious. He, who could not even speak, let out a horrifying roar. As he waved the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand, he too wanted to attack Murong Xun.

whoosh whoosh whoosh The attacks from the furious three were not to be underestimated. When powerful martial skills were added onto the three Incomplete Royal Armaments, their weapons truly became three bloodthirsty fierce beasts. With bursts of gales, howls, and their horrifying might, they surrounded and attacked Murong Xun.

Even a typical rank nine Martial Lord would be defeated by such attacks, and from that, it could be seen that their strength was quite powerful.

“Hmph.” Yet, Murong Xun snorted disdainfully at such ferocious attacks. The golden blade in his hand waved and when a boundless pressure erupted, a golden blade of light also swept over.

With a boom, their attacks blended with one another. As the uncontrollable ripples were wreaking havoc, Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming all cried out in pain. When their vision was clear once again, all three of them were heavily injured, blood everywhere on their bodies. They lost their ability to fly as they fell down from the air. Then, in the end, like three piles of mud, they crashed onto the ground, and also lost their ability to move.

“My gods, Murong Xun alone actually won against three!”

“He’s too strong! Those three are not ordinary rank eight Martial Lords, they are the direct disciples of the Three Protectors! They are the geniuses chosen from several tens of thousands of people! Yet, even when they had joined hands, they were still no match for Murong Xun!”

“Powerful. He’s too powerful. Murong Xun is deservedly the number one genius in the Eastern Sea Region!” The crowd cried out when they saw that as they were completely convinced by Murong Xun’s powerful strength.

As for the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they were ecstatic. They even raised their fists and loudly shouted at the same time:

“Number one genius!”

“Number one genius!”

“Number one genius!”

“Number one genius!”

“ ... ”

In an instant, the three words “number one genius” exploded. They were even more deafening than thunder as they spread through the air.

As he heard such cheers, Murong Xun laughed smugly, and he loudly shouted, “In the Eastern Sea Region, of the same generation, who even stands a chance against me, Murong Xun?”

Arrogance was transparent in his words. He had truly reached the extremity of arrogance. But even so, there was not a single person who refuted him. Instead, they all nodded their heads, expressing agreement because the strength he displayed was worthy of the title of the number one genius.

“Number one genius, huh? How about you give

me

some pointers?” However, just at that moment, a mocking voice rang out from the distance.

Such a sudden shout attracted everyone's attention. Even the Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan and the Water and Fire King fighting intensely in the sky temporarily stopped. They cast their gazes in the direction of the voice. They wanted to see who exactly was challenging Murong Xun at a moment like this.

When they looked over, they could clearly see a person appearing from the horizon. Many World Spiritists could feel it was a rank five Martial Lord. Yet, they didn't understand why a mere rank five Martial Lord dared to provoke Murong Xun in such a way. Where did his courage come from?

That person was also very quick. His minuscule body endlessly grew larger within their line of sight, and after they saw his appearance, not a single person

wasn't

stupefied.

“Chu Feng? It's Chu Feng!” At that instant, they were all dumbfounded. All of them roundly widened their eyes and their mouths. Their tongues were truly tied in a knot as they felt immense shock.

Currently, in the Eastern Sea Region, who didn't know Chu Feng?

Chu Feng had not only killed experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he even took away Murong Xun's Royal Armament. Not only that, he even took away Murong Xun's fiancée. Not only that, it was said he even violated Ya Fei and Murong Wan! They were Murong Xun's fiancée and sister!

Chu Feng's very actions had laid an irreconcilable hostility between himself and the Immortal Execution Archipelago. He could even be said to be the person the Immortal Execution Archipelago dreamt of killing.

He was already a heavily wanted criminal in the Eastern Sea Region. The reward for his capture moved innumerable people's hearts.

Yet, right now, Chu Feng so openly appeared in front of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. How could they

not

feel shocked?

“Chu Feng!”

In comparison to the mere shock others felt after seeing Chu Feng, Murong Xun on the other hand tightly clenched his fists. An indescribable fury and bloodlust surged forth. When he saw Chu Feng who was coming closer and closer, he truly wanted to pounce up to him and bite him to death.

But he could not, because if he did, everyone would feel that the rumour he violated his fiancée and sister was true. He had to endure, at least he had to endure

right now

. He had to act as if nothing happened. He had to have a bearing of a young master.

Other than Murong Xun's overflowing hatred, the Sixth Immortal and the others from the Immortal Execution Archipelago felt indescribable fear and uneasiness. All of them carefully swept their gazes over their surroundings with nervousness.

They all felt the reason Chu Feng dared to so daringly challenge Murong Xun was likely because he was prepared. It was very possible that the Crippling Night Demon Sect had sent reinforcements.

But after careful examination, they discovered other than Chu Feng, there were not even any signs of anyone else. So, they couldn't help but feel their worry decrease slowly.

Then, replacing it was unspeakable excitement because they felt Chu Feng had come here to die.

Chapter 884 - Who's a Genius

MGA: Chapter 884 - Who's a Genius

“Chu Feng, you truly have quite the nerves!” After confirming Chu Feng had come alone, the Sixth Immortal first sneered, then said with an extremely furious tone, “You killed members of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, took away my Immortal Execution Archipelago’s Royal Armament, and yet, you still dare to appear in front of us! Are you not afraid of dying?”

However, Chu Feng completely ignored the Sixth Immortal’s words. After coming over, he flew down, and amidst the shocked gazes of the crowd, he came up to Xuan Xiaochao and the others.

Chu Feng first took out six pellets—for pain killing and healing—and fed them to Xuan Xiaochao, Fu Fengming, and You Tonghan.

“Mm—”

However, when he fed the pellets to You Tonghan, one of his hands tightly grasped Chu Feng’s wrist. He, who could not speak, was making odd sounds. At the same time, he stared at Chu Feng with a pleading gaze.

Chu Feng understood what he was trying to say. He nodded, then patted You Tonghan’s shoulder. Afterwards, he looked at Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming, then said, “Brothers, I understand. I will avenge all of you.”

After speaking, Chu Feng suddenly rose up. After he was in the air, he first looked around with his fierce gaze, then stopped turning around at Murong Xun. He said with a calm voice, “Murong Xun, you said you’re the number one genius in the Eastern Sea Region. Today, I, Chu Feng, will challenge you, a rank eight Martial Lord, as a rank five Martial Lord. If you win, I’ll return your Immortal Execution Archipelago’s Royal Armament.

“However, if you lose, release everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. How about it?”

“You are truly arrogant. You, a mere rank five Martial Lord? You think I would be afraid of you?” How could Murong Xun, who was itching to kill Chu Feng, be afraid of him? Without even thinking, he agreed. But then, he quickly shouted, “Since you overestimate yourself and dare to challenge me, I’ll add another condition. I just don’t know if you dare or not.”

“Add what? Tell me,” Chu Feng said with a calm tone.

“Whoever loses must kneel and beg for forgiveness. They must also, in front of everyone, call the winner ‘grandfather’ ten times, and say he’s a ‘grandson’. Do you dare?” Murong Xun loudly shouted. His tone was filled with fury, because he truly hated every fibre of Chu Feng.

“I’m willing to do that, but I’m just afraid you won’t stick to your word.” As Chu Feng spoke, he cast his gaze towards the Sixth Immortal because he did not believe the Immortal Execution Archipelago would truly let them go after his victory.

“Don’t worry. The Immortal Execution Archipelago stays true to their word. As long as you win, I will allow all of you to safely leave,” the Sixth Immortal said with a smile.

He had absolute confidence in Murong Xun, so he felt it was impossible for Chu Feng to win. He felt the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect were undoubtedly going to die today. Since victory was grasped within his hand, he didn’t mind letting everyone here watch a longer spectacle. He would let everyone know that Chu Feng wasn’t any genius, and that he was simply no match for Murong Xun.

“Murong Xun, go ahead. However, some advice: don’t be too careless because I will give you a fierce lesson.” Chu Feng cast his gaze towards Murong Xun after the Sixth Immortal’s agreement.

“

You

want to give

me

a lesson? You must have forgotten how pitiful you were back then in the Depraved Valley,” Murong Xun said with a cold smile, because back then, he had indeed beaten Chu Feng quite painfully.

However, Chu Feng was not angered in the slightest. Instead, he said with a smile, “What cultivation did I have back then, and what cultivation did you have back then? Right now, my cultivation has increased, but what about you?”

“I, Chu Feng, before twenty years of age, am already a rank five Martial Lord. You, on the other hand, are already over thirty years old, yet you’re still a rank eight Martial Lord. Back then, when you defeated me, that was merely the elder bullying the young, the strong bullying the weak. What is there to be proud of? What is worthy to be proud of?”

“You...” When Chu Feng refuted him in such a way, Murong Xun was instantly speechless. He didn’t know what to do amidst the anger.

“Yeah! Chu Feng’s right! We’ve only saw the difference in cultivation, but forgot the difference in age. We’ve forgotten about their time in cultivation! They are over ten years apart, so their time in cultivation is also over ten years apart. Yet, right now, Chu Feng already dares to challenge Murong Xun. I must say that he’s truly quite courageous, and he does possess this strength.”

“That’s right. When Chu Feng went famous, he had just shortly become a Martial Lord. Yet, at that time, Murong Xun was already a rank eight Martial Lord. Right now, with the passing of time, Chu Feng is a rank five Martial Lord. His speed of improvement in cultivation can even be called divine! Yet, Murong Xun is still only a rank eight Martial Lord. He could be said to be walking on the spot.”

“Both of you are right. No matter the time in cultivation, or speed of improvement, Chu Feng is indeed superior to Murong Xun.

“I’ve even heard two months ago, Chu Feng had appeared in the Winter Plains and killed the head of the Stone Sword Sect as well as a rank eight Martial Lord from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. If that’s true, it means Chu Feng truly has the strength to defeat a rank eight Martial Lord.”

“That means even though Murong Xun, a rank eight Martial Lord, can defeat Xuan Xiaochao and the others, also rank eight Martial Lords, when compared to Chu Feng’s insane fighting strength, the difference is truly enormous!

“Not only that, it’s said Chu Feng also grasps three Secret Skills and the World Spirit he made a contract with is from the Asura Spirit World! Even the Royal Armament he got from Murong Xun had completely approved of Chu Feng with Absolute Submission! These are things Murong Xun hadn’t done before!”

“Yeah! This means the distance between the two is really too big. Putting aside strength, just in terms of aptitude, Chu Feng and Murong Xun are on two completely different levels! Chu Feng is indeed far above Murong Xun, and

Chu Feng

is the deservedly supreme genius, the number one person in the Eastern Sea Region’s young generation!”

At that instant, the crowd burst with discussion. Even though they had lowered their voices, and some even sent mental messages, it couldn’t escape the ears of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. When they heard all that, everyone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago had twisted faces as they were all furious.

They were not only furious at their discussion. In the end, they were furious towards Chu Feng. It was Chu Feng who did so many shocking

actions that made Murong Xun completely ordinary.

As for Murong Xun himself, he was enraged. He didn't expect just a few simple words from Chu Feng pushed himself onto the very front of criticisms, making everyone feel he was inferior to Chu Feng.

However, Murong Xun was no ordinary person. His fury was not revealed, and he instead sneered. He continued clawing at Chu Feng's weak point, not letting go. He loudly said, "Chu Feng, you only talk about today, but not of the past. However, it was a fact that you were stepped beneath my feet. In my perspective, you think it's shameful so that's why you don't dare to mention what happened back then, right?"

"Hoh." However, Chu Feng still gave a light smile at Murong Xun's humiliation techniques, then said, "Murong Xun, since you enjoy mentioning the past, how about I tell everyone how I took your Royal Armament deep within the Depraved Valley, and how I greatly made love to Ya Fei and Murong Wan?"

Chapter 885 - Murong Xun Displaying His Might

MGA: Chapter 885 - Murong Xun Displaying His Might

“You’re looking to die!” Murong Xun was enraged when he heard this. He truly could tolerate it no longer. He threw out a palm, and started attacking Chu Feng.

When that palm attack was sent, gales crossed with one another, and howls rang out everywhere. Countless bursts of Martial power gathered from all directions, and condensed to create golden images of a palm.

That palm not only contained horrifying power, there were also many. As they densely filled up the sky, they were like an army of locusts as they surged towards Chu Feng.

This was not an ordinary attack—it was a rank six martial skill. Although it wasn’t too high of a level, in Murong Xun’s hands, it became extremely fierce. The power it contained was enough to destroy a part of this world, and there would be no problem killing tens of thousands of commoners with that strike.

However, Chu Feng merely smiled at his attack because Murong Xun was not calm enough. His agitation announced the world one fact: Chu Feng not only took away the Royal Armament from his hands, Chu Feng had also truly violated his fiancée and sister.

Thinking that if this were to be publicly announced, it would not only make Murong Xun lose face, it would even regain face for the Crippling Night Demon Sect, Chu Feng felt endless excitement. He was extremely happy, and even loudly said, “Immortal Execution Archipelago! You laid this trap and invited a crowd just to disgrace the Crippling Night Demon Sect. You’ve truly done quite some work this time!

“And today, I, Chu Feng, won’t put your efforts to waste. I will let the world know that your Immortal Execution Archipelago’s young master, the so-called number one genius of the Eastern Sea Region, is useless.”

As he spoke, an extremely powerful aura erupted from Chu Feng’s body. Then, he spread open his arms—left hand pulling an illusory bow, right hand pulling an illusory arrow—and as his arms pulled and released, countless swishes rang out. A myriad of golden arrows were shot out—that was the rank five martial skill, the Bow of Hundred Transformations.

boom boom boom boom

Although the Bow of Hundred Transformations was merely a rank five martial skill, in Chu Feng’s hand, its power was extremely frightening. When they collided into Murong Xun’s countless golden palms, they were not in any inferior standings.

“Heavens! Chu Feng’s actually able to fight against Murong Xun as a rank five Martial Lord!”

When they saw the dazzling golden radiance endlessly exploding in the sky, the observers were all astonished. Although their attacks were fairly equal, they could tell that their ranks were different. Murong Xun was using a rank six martial skill, while Chu Feng was using a rank five martial skill.

Chu Feng, a rank five Martial Lord, used a rank five martial skill that was able to fight off the rank six martial skill used by Murong Xun, a rank eight Martial Lord. How could the observers even remain calm?

That was sufficient to prove one point: Chu Feng’s fighting strength was indeed as insane as rumoured. It was simply unimaginable, and worthy of admiration.

“You do have a bit of skill.” Murong Xun’s complexion changed slightly when he saw that. He frowned a bit, and in his eyes filled with fury, a hint of seriousness emerged.

Recalling back then, when he met Chu Feng, since his cultivation was far superior to him, he had no need to use any techniques and just by pressure alone, he was able to suppress Chu Feng. So, he couldn't feel Chu Feng's fighting strength at all, which led him to constantly look down on him.

Yet, after the exchange today, he felt something was off. Although he didn't use his full strength in the martial skill just now, he did not hold himself back. Yet, Chu Feng was able use a martial skill a whole rank lower than his own to fight against him. That was evidence of Chu Feng's strength—it was not a mere rumour.

Murong Xun was no fool; instead, he was extremely smart. He could be counted as the peak amongst the younger generation.

So, even though he hated Chu Feng completely, he was not blinded by hatred. Right now, he didn't dare to be careless in any way. He knew he had to put forth his full strength, because he could not afford to lose. If he lost, he would not only shame himself, he would shame his entire Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“Chu Feng, I would quite like to see how you'll take this next one!”

After being aware of Chu Feng's power, Murong Xun suddenly shouted. Then, he leapt, explosively back. His left hand in a fist, layers of purple ripples were emerging and layers upon layers of powerful strength condensed within his fist.

His right hand opened up, and again there were outlines of a golden palm appearing. Their might was not only frightening, the energy contained within them was even inestimable powerful.

“This aura... It's the Immortal Execution Archipelago's rank nine martial skills, Fist of Soaring Purple Aura and Palm of Golden Wisdom!” When they saw that, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago all had changes in their expressions. They couldn't help shouting in surprise.

“What? He's using two rank nine martial skills at the same time? Murong Xun's aptitude is this high?” After hearing those words, the observers felt

greatly shocked.

Rank nine martial skills were already difficult to cultivate, and they were not something ordinary Martial Lords could control. However, to a genius like Murong Xun, it wasn't a big deal. It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say he could pick one up casually.

But using two rank nine martial skills at the same time was extremely difficult. As the saying went,

A single heart cannot be used for two things

, let alone two rank nine martial skills!

So, when Murong Xun displayed that technique, it was sufficient proof to his outstanding aptitude in cultivation.

“Today, I'll let you experience what a combined technique is.”

After channeling the two rank nine martial skills, Murong Xun, who had shot backwards, suddenly pounced towards Chu Feng. When he was near, he attacked.

boom With the simultaneous attack of a fist and a palm, an explosion burst out. Two powerful techniques respectively became a purple stream of light and a golden image of a palm.

Both of them were incomparably powerful, but when they were cast, they gradually combined and in the end, they became a huge palm bursting with purple light, yet filled of golden lines as well.

That huge palm was too horrifying. As it streaked through the air, rumbles rang out in the sky and it even tore into space itself, becoming afterimages of darkness.

“My gods, we've really underestimated Murong Xun too much! He didn't just use two martial skills at the same time, he even combined them together to increase their power!” When they saw the combined martial skill, everyone was shocked once again.

Even to the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan, and the Water and Fire King from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, a hint of surprise flashed into their eyes. For a technique like that, not only were there extremely high requirements for cultivation, the most important part was its extremely high requirements for aptitude.

Speaking honestly from the soul, even they, four Martial Kings, found it difficult to combine two rank nine martial skill into one. However, Murong Xun had done it. They had to admit that Murong Xun indeed deserved the title of genius, because he truly was powerful.

“Murong Xun is this powerful? It seems that he really is far above us.” At that instant, even Xuan Xiaochao and the others, who did not accept the fact Murong Xun was strong, now frowned and were made aware of the distance between themselves and him.

Chapter 886 - A Humiliating Counterattack

MGA: Chapter 886 - A Humiliating Counterattack

“Heh, you do have a slight bit of skill, and that suits my intentions perfectly. Otherwise, it would be a bit too boring.”

In reality, not to mention others, even Chu Feng himself felt that Murong Xun’s attack was not to be underestimated. The combination of the two martial skills into a rank nine martial skill had ascended. It was very powerful—something a normal rank nine martial skill was no match for.

Regardless of Chu Feng’s level of arrogance, he had to admit that Murong Xun’s strength had far surpassed typical rank eight Martial Lords.

However, in spite of that, Chu Feng was still not afraid at all. He overlaid his palms, and with a thought, he suddenly shouted, “Immortal Shield—Triple-layered Door!”

dong, dong, dong

After Chu Feng spoke, three deep bell sounds rang out. Along with the emergence of such a sound, three enormous and firm huge doors appeared above Chu Feng.

Each one was a hundred meters tall. Not only were they large, their shape was very overbearing as well. When they appeared, there were also some white clouds and mist that accompanied them, as if they came from paradise.

In the end, with extremely quick speed, the three doors fell and landed in front of Chu Feng. The three became a line that stopped the path of the combined technique.

“A rank nine martial skill instantly created! Chu Feng is this practiced with martial skills?!”

When they saw the three doors descending from the sky, the people who were initially dumbfounded by Murong Xun’s combination martial skill couldn’t help deeply gasping. They could feel that Chu Feng too had cast a rank nine martial skill.

Yet, Chu Feng had cast such a powerful martial skill with just a thought. That had truly surpassed everyone’s imagination, because that was even greater proof of Chu Feng’s control over martial skills.

boom boom boom

Amidst the shock they felt, Murong Xun’s combined technique had arrived. After three frightening explosions rang out, the rank nine martial skill Chu Feng made, the Immortal Shield—Triple-layered Door, was destroyed and shattered.

Most importantly, even though Murong Xun’s technique had been weakened quite a bit after Chu Feng’s defense broke into pieces, it did not dissipate. Instead, with a still horrifying might and blinding purple light and golden lines, it continued in Chu Feng’s direction. Moreover, it was extremely quick—it had already arrived before him.

“Scatter.” Chu Feng did not use any martial skills in a situation like that. Instead, he waved his sleeve as a boundless might was cast out, expelling the remnants of the combined technique.

However, the remnants were too powerful. Even though he had dispelled them, he was still struck by the remaining shock waves. Although he was not injured, he was still blown back by them, and only stabilized himself after a few steps.

“You, a ‘supreme genius’, don’t seem like much! You can’t block my attacks when I use just a bit of a technique.” Murong Xun couldn’t help but make a smug grin as he saw his attacks were effective.

“Heh, a combination technique, huh? Interesting. As they say, do unto others as they do unto you. How about you too receive my combination technique?”

Suddenly, a strange smile was worn on Chu Feng’s face. Then, his left hand formed a fist, his right hand spread to form a palm, and two extremely powerful bursts of might started gathering within that fist and palm.

When they saw the golden lines and purple light appearing from Chu Feng’s hands, everyone who watched was astounded, especially the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Their face greened immediately.

At that moment, the martial skill Chu Feng prepared to use was the exact same as Murong Xun’s before—the Fist of Soaring Purple Aura and Palm of Golden Wisdom.

Those two rank nine martial skills were the core techniques of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Not only were they not publicly spread, only the high echelons of the Immortal Execution Archipelago could cultivate them.

However, at that very instant, Chu Feng not only grasped those private martial skills, he was even casting them in tranquility. He was simply slapping the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s face in front of the crowd.

“Take this well!

“Haa—”

Chu Feng abruptly shouted, and cast the two martial skills at the same time. It was the exact same as Murong Xun’s before—the two martial skills quickly combined into one, and their power multiplied as well.

The only difference was the combined technique Chu Feng sent was a bit louder. Although those two martial skills were combined, there were some odd waves.

Some people analyzed that it was possibly because Chu Feng's combination technique wasn't perfect, so that was why it was too loud, and also why waves had appeared.

However, if they knew it was the first time Chu Feng combined two techniques, they would definitely not think he was weak. Instead, they would definitely be stunned because due to its difficulty, no one had truly ever successfully combined two techniques on their first try.

Moreover, they didn't know there was something special hidden within the combined technique Chu Feng cast.

“Bastard, you kill the members from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and you even dare to cultivate martial skills from my Immortal Execution Archipelago! Do you truly know no shame?”

When Murong Xun saw his own martial skills being used against himself, he gnashed his teeth in anger. However, he didn't dare to be careless. He quickly called forth Martial power and used a powerful defensive martial skill to defend.

After all, Chu Feng was the first who did that, so now, he had to do the same. As long as he could use a rank nine martial skill to stop Chu Feng's combined technique, he could prove to the world that his strength was above Chu Feng's.

hmm Murong Xun's Martial power surged and very quickly, he made a shining protective barrier. It was different from the Three-layered Door Chu Feng used before—it didn't protect a single direction, but instead, enveloped him completely. It could block attacks from all directions.

However, there are disadvantages for all advantages. Although it was also a rank nine martial skill, its defensive strength was clearly inferior to Chu Feng's Three-layered Door. So, in order to avoid being defeated by Chu Feng, he even used a small technique: as he cast that martial skill, he imbued Spirit Formation power into it, and laid a simple but powerful defensive Spirit Formation.

When those two combined into one, its defensive strength was greatly increased. It was even much firmer than the martial skill Chu Feng used before.

Chu Feng's technique was very quick. Almost at the same time Murong Xun finished creating his barrier, it had arrived. After a huge explosion, violent energy ripples became ferocious beasts that swept in all directions, engulfing everything.

“Heavens! This is?!”

However, when the ripples faded away, the observers all had a great change in expression. All of them widened their mouths in shock, and as they looked at Murong Xun, their eyes were full of shock and confusion.

In their perspective, Murong Xun's defensive martial skill was very powerful—even more powerful than the one Chu Feng used before. Even if he couldn't completely block Chu Feng's combined technique, he would, at most, be forced a few steps back like Chu Feng.

However, at that moment, it was completely different from their expectation. Murong Xun was not only blown a thousand meters away, his hair and clothes were in a mess. He simply looked exhausted, as if he had passed several years inside a gale. Otherwise, he wouldn't look so pitiful from such a blow.

“How has this happened?” That was everyone's question. The same attack, the same defense. Even if Murong Xun were inferior, he shouldn't be in such a bad state, right?

“I've got it! I know what happened!” Just at that moment, the Water King from the Crippling Night Demon Sect cried out. At the same time, his eyes as he looked at Chu Feng were filled with respect.

Chapter 887 - Comparison of Techniques

MGA: Chapter 887 - Comparison of Techniques

“I see. That boy called Chu Feng didn’t just combine two rank nine martial skills, he even combined a third martial skill—some sort of sound wave. That’s why it made the technique seemed so oddly loud. It made it seem like it was unstable, but it was actually all created by the martial skill.” Just at that moment, one of the Protectors of the Inferno Divine Bird clan spoke. It too seemed to see what had happened.

“What a skillful technique. In stealth, he merged a third martial skill into the two rank nine martial skills, and even we didn’t know about it. It seems that this boy called Chu Feng is truly not simple at all. Since he’s an enemy, no matter what, he must not leave today.” At the same time, the other Protector of the Inferno Divine Bird clan nodded. Moreover, strong killing intent emerged into its eyes.

After hearing their words, everyone understood why Murong Xun was in such a pathetic state even though they both used the same attack. It was all because of Chu Feng, who built on the existing technique and added in a sound wave martial skill amidst the two rank nine martial skills.

Although the sound waves didn’t deal much damage to Murong Xun, they made his clothes chaotic. They had to admit that Chu Feng’s techniques were truly quite skillful. At least, this counterattack towards Murong Xun was really too beautiful.

“Chu Feng, you despicable bastard! You dare to use such lowly methods! Today, I will cripple you!” Murong Xun was completely enraged. With the flip of his palm, the Incomplete Royal Armament he put away earlier reappeared within his hand. After it appeared, Murong Xun’s aura instantly soared.

“Don’t make it seem like you will let me go even if I did nothing to you. Regarding what kind of person you are, Murong Xun, do you not know yourself?” Chu Feng coldly smiled, then flipped his palm as well. He did not bring out the Royal Armament, and instead, took out his own Incomplete Royal Armament, the Dragon Marking Sword. Afterwards, without saying anything more, he fought Murong Xun.

dang dang dang dang dang dang...

bang bang bang bang bang bang...

The two, with Incomplete Royal Armaments in their hands, didn’t use any martial skills. Relying only on their own reactions and the most direct attacks, they started meeting force with force.

A large golden blade, and a long golden sword. When those two armaments clashed together, not only did they make ear-piercing sounds, they also brought out dazzling sparks. Every collision made a horrifying energy ripple which then spread in the air.

However, in the battle between two tigers, there would always be one wounded. No matter how close their strengths were, there would always be one stronger and one weaker.

At first, everyone even felt that in close combat with the Incomplete Royal Armament, Murong Xun would be the one with an advantage.

After all, what they were putting forth not only included cultivation aptitude, but it included more so fighting experience. In such a distance, for every single strike and move, there was no space for error. Otherwise, it would be disastrous.

Murong Xun had been cultivating for so long, and he had been in innumerable battles. Not to mention the younger generation, even many in the older generation were defeated by his hands. So, that was why they felt his fighting experience was bountiful, and he would gain an absolute advantage in close combat.

However, they quickly realized they were wrong. The Dragon Marking Sword in Chu Feng's grasp was handled very skillfully, and it was extremely fierce. The profound sword strikes, the unexpected attacks, and the unpredictable patterns. In many areas, he was superior to Murong Xun.

In the close combat battle between two geniuses whose cultivations were three ranks apart, the strong and the weak was quickly decided. And, the strong was actually Chu Feng, who was three ranks weaker.

"I truly wouldn't have dared to imagine this! If I hadn't personally seen it, I truly wouldn't have believed such a genius appeared in the Eastern Sea Region!" The eyes of the Water King lit up. He was deeply attracted by Chu Feng's performance. He was convinced by his strength.

"Before, the Earth King and the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers praised this Chu Feng incessantly. I still had my doubts, when after seeing him today, he truly surpasses my expectations. His aptitude is indeed outstanding. He really is a rare genius.

"Moreover, he even dared to appear and save us when we fell into such a state of despair. He ignored the safety of his own life and jumped into this perilous hellhole. I can tell that he's a very loyal child. It is truly our fortune to be able to recruit a young person such as him." The Fire King also nodded in praise.

"This child must be protected. Even if we use everything, we cannot let him die for us and destroy his great future," the Water King hiddenly sent.

The Fire King also nodded again, and returned, "My thoughts exactly. Such an excellent younger generation is the hope for our Crippling Night Demon Sect's glory. Later on, if the Sixth Immortal or those two birds from the Inferno Divine Bird clan dare to interfere, I will use the Forbidden Flame Mysterious Technique, and put forth everything for an opportunity to let Chu Feng, Xuan Xiaochao, and the others escape."

boom boom boom

Chu Feng did not know anything about their praises, and at that moment, he was using the skillful combination of the Dragon Marking Sword Technique and the Dragon Marking Sword to heavily oppress Murong Xun. As he did so, he did not forget to also mock him. “Murong Xun, aren’t you a bit too weak? Why do you only know how to retreat? You don’t know how to attack? This is too boring. Can’t you give me a bit of pressure?”

“The grand number one genius is only a trash like this? Other than bullying those with weaker cultivation, what else can you do?”

“You...” Murong Xun already felt greatly annoyed and displeased when the observers’ discussions and mocking words entered his ears. Yet now, Chu Feng, without holding anything back, started provoking him. That truly made him so angry even his heart and lungs were about to explode. He was itching to kill Chu Feng immediately and tear his corpse into a million pieces.

However, Murong Xun was no simple person. He was backing away right now, but that was because his attacks were indeed inferior to Chu Feng in head-to-head combat. On the other hand, however, he was doing the exact same thing Chu Feng’s did. A sinister technique was stealthily being channeled.

So, he did not refute Chu Feng, nor did he conceal his own fury. Instead, he emphasized his emotions and made his fury appear on his face, letting everyone see it.

Murong Xun was furious on the surface, but sneering inside. He thought sinisterly, “Keep feeling smug. I’ll immediately show you how deception is everywhere in a fight. A true fight is not only a contest of strength, but also intellect.”

As time dripped away, Chu Feng’s attacks became fiercer and fiercer. Bursts of golden swords of light were like a serpent as they were not only continuous and elegant, they were extraordinarily overbearing.

Some people even felt that watching Chu Feng fight was a type of enjoyment because his attacks were not only powerful, they were oddly beautiful as well.

“Mortal Taboo—Illusory Sword Technique!”

But out of nowhere, just as they were wholeheartedly watching that fight, Murong Xun suddenly shouted.

At the same time, the golden blade in his hand glittered with radiance. Its might multiplied, and an extremely horrifying aura exploded. It shot towards Chu Feng, who was close by.

Chapter 888 - Rage

MGA: Chapter 888 - Rage

“Crap! This Murong Xun intentionally retreated so he could secretly channel a Mortal Taboo martial skill!”

Nearly everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect had a great change in expression. They were drenched in sweat from terror, because from such a distance, the power of a Mortal Taboo martial skill was very horrifying. Chu Feng had nearly no chance to escape.

“Beautiful!” In contrast to their expressions, however, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and the two Protectors of the Inferno Divine Bird clan, brightened up and felt Murong Xun’s counterattack was magnificent.

“White Tiger Slaughtering Technique!”

But out of nowhere, just as they thought a disaster had fallen upon Chu Feng, he suddenly shouted and at the same time, pushed his palm forth. A tiger’s roar then rang out.

A white claw shot out of Chu Feng’s hand, and with terrifying might, collided into Murong Xun’s Illusory Sword Technique.

boom rumble rumble rumble—

When those two horrifying attacks clashed, they instantly transformed into a ferocious energy wave. The wave brought about chaos and swept through everything, immediately engulfing Chu Feng and Murong Xun.

At that instant, no matter if they were from the Immortal Execution Archipelago or the Crippling Night Demon Sect, all of them tightly furrowed their brows. Their nervousness reached the apex.

The wave of energy was really too horrifying. Chu Feng and Murong Xun were at the very center, so one could imagine the power they were up against.

Even though both of their attacks became an energy wave, and as such, the power from both the Illusory Sword Technique and the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique had been diminished greatly, an ordinary person could absolutely not survive from such a wave.

swish Just at that moment, a person suddenly shot out from the wave and landed onto a warship from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. It was Murong Xun.

However, at that moment, not only were his clothes in disorder, blood was everywhere on his body—he had been heavily injured. The hand grasping the Incomplete Royal Armament was injured especially horrendously: not only were his eerie white bones revealed, there weren't even any signs of his flesh and blood. It was truly an unbearable sight to behold.

hmm

After Murong Xun escaped from the wave, it started to disappear. At that instant, everyone was able to get a clear view of Chu Feng's position before he disappeared within the wave. A jade-green barrier had appeared, and Chu Feng was standing within it. His clothes were not only undamaged, he didn't even have the slightest of wounds.

“Heavens! Both of them were clearly struck by that wave, yet Murong Xun is the one wounded bloodily right now while Chu Feng is uninjured at all! What exactly happened?”

After seeing Murong Xun's pitiful state, then back to Chu Feng, whose clothes were unruffled, everyone was astonished. They couldn't think of a reason for such a scene.

“Murong Xun, you think yourself to be skillful, but you don't know I had already captured it all within my eyes when you were channeling your

Mortal Taboo martial skill. Before you even made your move, I had already thought of a counter.

“Although my White Tiger Slaughtering Technique is a Secret Skill, I have not mastered it yet. There is still a gap between it and your Illusory Sword Technique. The reason I used it wasn’t to break through your Illusory Sword Technique by overwhelming power, but instead to destroy it, causing your Taboo martial skill and my Secret Skill to become an energy wave.

“In the instant the wave spawned, I had already used the Black Tortoise Armour Technique. As such, no matter the power of the wave, it would not harm me in any way.

“You, on the other hand, were different. You simply did not anticipate I too would send an attack in the instant you sent an attack, nor did you expect I would turn your Illusory Sword Technique into an energy wave.

“That’s why you simply could not react when the wave was created, nor did you have time to arrange any defensive measures. You could only face the wave, created by your Illusory Sword Technique and my White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, head-on.

“You want to play tricks with me? I’ve let you know what a true trick is.

“How is it, Murong Xun? Does it feel good to be injured by the martial skill you yourself sent?” Chu Feng wore a smile on his face. He explained to Murong Xun and everyone else in detail the process of what had occurred.

Chu Feng’s very action was undoubtedly slapping his face in front of everyone. He was telling all of them that Murong Xun thought he was being clever with his trick, but in reality, Chu Feng had already seen through all of his preparations.

“Huu—”

After everything that had happened, other than the Immortal Execution Archipelago, everyone else couldn't help deeply inhaling. They were thoroughly convinced by Chu Feng's tactic.

The gap of three ranks between Chu Feng and Murong Xun was one thing, but after several confrontations, Chu Feng had always been superior to Murong Xun. He could not gain any sort of advantage from Chu Feng's hands, as if his mind were read completely. He simply had no chance to speak of, and could only suffer again and again.

When the fight had progressed to its present state, there was not much meaning in continuing because everyone could tell that no matter aptitude, or strength, or strategy, Chu Feng was above Murong Xun.

Right now, the person with the title of the Eastern Sea Region's number one genius was fated to change, because so long as Chu Feng existed, Murong Xun could not be worthy of such a title.

Right now, the person who truly deserved to be called the Eastern Sea Region's number one genius was Chu Feng.

At least, in many people's eyes, that title could not belong to anyone else other than Chu Feng.

“Sixth Immortal, didn't you say the Immortal Execution Archipelago always stays true to its word?”

“You're preparing to release them? Or, are you only willing to release them when I beat your young master into a cripple?” Finally, Chu Feng cast his gaze towards the Sixth Immortal.

“This...” The Sixth Immortal's expression changed when facing Chu Feng's question. He had no clue how to respond.

He never would have expected Murong Xun to lose. He simply didn't expect Chu Feng to suppress Murong Xun to such a pitiful state.

Looking at the current circumstances, Murong Xun was indeed no match for Chu Feng. Even if the contest continued, they would gain only more humiliation. There was simply no need to persist.

Yet, the Immortal Execution Archipelago had made so many painstaking preparations for today! How could they so easily release Chu Feng and the others?

However, there were so many people watching this. If he truly did not release them, that would mean he went back on his word. It was not good for such a thing to circulate amongst the populations.

Yet... they could not kill everyone who wasn't a part of the Immortal Execution Archipelago just to conceal that secret.

After bringing them here, the Immortal Execution Archipelago did not continue restricting the observers' freedom. That led to many people who didn't wish to watch such a "good show" to leave.

So, it was impossible to hide what happened today. Sooner or later, it was going to spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region. He could not release them, yet he could not

not

release them. It was truly an extremely difficult conundrum.

"I have not been defeated yet!" Murong Xun suddenly shouted. At that moment, blood was all over his body, his complexion was ashen, but in his eyes, there was strong rage and bloodlust. The power of his bloodlust even twisted space itself nearby.

One had to admit that when they looked at Murong Xun, he did seem a bit scary. Everyone could feel the rage and bloodlust he felt—it was truly the last straw for the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

However, Chu Feng was not afraid of Murong Xun, regardless of the anger he felt. Not only that, he even strode forth in the air, and as he walked

towards Murong Xun, who was in a warship floating in the air, he said with a smile, “Murong Xun, oh Murong Xun. It seems that you are truly unwilling to give up until you are completely defeated. Since it’s like this, then I won’t hold myself back. This time, I will beat you until you beg for forgiveness.”

Chapter 889 - Vicious Demonic Technique

MGA: Chapter 889 - Vicious Demonic Technique

Chu Feng's long hair fluttered to and fro as his robe followed suit. As he stood in the air, he was akin to a lord who had never been defeated. As he slowly stepped forward, the several thousand Martial Lords on the warship greatly changed their expressions. All of them couldn't help backing away as they were deterred by Chu Feng's might.

“Chu Feng, don't think you're already invincible! If I truly want to kill you, you stand no chance!”

But who would have thought as he faced Chu Feng, who arrived with a powerful bearing, Murong Xun wasn't just fearless, he even let out an explosive shout.

“HAA—”

After that shout rang out, Murong Xun's eyes instantly became blood-red. Moreover, a boundless blood-red aura burst out from his body, and like a chain, passed through the several thousand Martial Lords standing behind him.

“Ahh—”

When those chains pierced through their bodies, all of them made painful screams. They were kneeling on the ground, rolling around, hugging their heads, and howling—they were feeling great agony.

As they shrieked in pain, layers and layers of power could be clearly seen surging out of their bodies and entering Murong Xun's body through the blood-red chains.

When such power channeled into him, Murong Xun started recovering. The clearest sign of that was when his boney hand, which lacked any flesh or blood, started returning to its original state. There wasn't even a hint of a scratch, as if he were never wounded in the first place.

Moreover, Murong Xun's weak aura also started to recover. Not only recover, it even started to soar. In just a blink, his cultivation rose to a rank nine Martial Lord's. That powerful aura could nearly be compared to a Martial King's.

“AHH—”

However, even though Murong Xun's aura had risen unbelievably, the experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, bored by the blood-red chains, were quite appalling.

For all several thousand people, they not only had pales faces, in just that instant, they had aged dozens of years. Their skin shriveled, lacking any vigor. They, who were at a robust age, now became old elders. All of them turned feeble and weak.

“Heavens! What happened?”

“Evil practices! This is definitely an evil art! Forcibly absorbing the power of others to forcibly increase one's own cultivation—this is a demonic technique!”

“This is truly infuriating! The young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago cultivates such a demonic technique like this! And even uses it on his own clan's forces! This is an action of a demon! The heavens will not allow such an act to go without retribution!”

Everyone could tell what was happening. Clearly, Murong Xun had used a special demonic attack and stripped away the several thousand Martial Lords of their cultivation and life, thus strengthening himself.

On the journey of cultivation, although there was no absolute righteousness, it was unacceptable to increase one's own cultivation by

destroying another's future. It was even something to be despised.

That was why, at that very instant, other than the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, nearly everyone else felt furious. They were furious at Murong Xun, who, in order to defeat Chu Feng, used such a despicable and cruel method. It was truly shameless and ruthless.

“YOUNG MASTER WILL WIN! YOUNG MASTER WILL WIN! YOUNG MASTER WILL WIN!” But out of the blue, the experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago who had a portion of their cultivation and life sucked away dragged their weak bodies up, raised their arms, and cheered. They loudly cheered for Murong Xun, who took away their most important things!

Looking at how they acted, it was as if they simply did not blame Murong Xun for what he did to them, and instead felt it was an honour.

The observers were truly dumbfounded when they saw such a scene. What they did was no longer loyalty, but asininity.

“Don't worry! In the future, I will compensate all of you for today's sacrifice! After returning to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, I will reward you even more!” Murong Xun satisfiedly nodded his head at his subordinates' actions, then cast his gaze bursting with bloodlust at Chu Feng, then said, “Chu Feng, bring out the Royal Armament. Today, I will personally take back my Royal Armament from your hands!” Suddenly, Murong Xun leapt. With a horrifying atmosphere, he rose from the warships and dashed towards Chu Feng.

“Heh, with just this little strength, you are still not worthy for me to use the Royal Armament.” However, even though Murong Xun forcibly raised his cultivation by one full rank, Chu Feng still did not see him as a worthy opponent.

“Lightning Armour.” With a thought, four colours of lightning surged within his eyes. At the same time, bursts of lightning surged out of his body and became an armour of lightning that enveloped Chu Feng's body.

After it appeared, Chu Feng's cultivation also rose. From a rank five Martial Lord, he became a rank six Martial Lord.

aoo—

After increasing his cultivation, an azure dragon appeared beneath Chu Feng's feet. The Black Tortoise Armour Technique around his body remained, and with a tight clench over the Dragon Marking Sword, and with his cultivation of a rank six Martial Lord, the power of two Secret Skills, and the might of an Incomplete Royal Armament, he fought Murong Xun.

boom boom boom boom boom

Two figures of extraordinary demeanor clashed together. In an instant, all sorts of rumbles rang out endlessly, and there was no end to the uncontrollable shock waves that were created.

Murong Xun was thoroughly enraged. Even though he was not weak at all with the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand, he still kept on sending out fierce martial skills and put everything on the line to kill Chu Feng.

As for Chu Feng himself, with the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique and the Black Tortoise Armor Technique—the two Secret Skills' powerful defensive strength and skillful movement—and also with the masterful attacks from the Dragon Marking Sword, he made a fool out of Murong Xun as he circled around him. He was completely in the advantage.

“Chu Feng, stop dodging and evading! Could it be you don't dare to fight me straight on?” Murong Xun's attacks all met air when Chu Feng toyed with him. That made him gnash his teeth in anger, and he was simply about to go insane.

“White Tiger Slaughtering Technique!” However, immediately after Murong Xun spoke, Chu Feng suddenly attacked. A White Tiger Slaughtering Technique struck out, and it gave Murong Xun nearly no space to react. Instantly, it destroyed all of Murong Xun's attacks.

“Ahh—” Finally, unable to defend against such a strike, Murong Xun took on the attack with his entirety. Amidst a cry, he was shot several miles away, and landed into the crowd of the observers.

“Huaa—” At that moment, the observers quickly scattered. As they looked at the pale-faced and bloody Murong Xun, who was lying in the air and even lost half of his arm, they all gazed with cold eyes. Not a single person went up to help him.

Chapter 890 - The Holy Daughter Appears

MGA: Chapter 890 - The Holy Daughter Appears

“Ahh, this Murong Xun uses such sinister demonic techniques to absorb so many experts’ cultivation and life, yet he is still no match for Chu Feng. His time has truly gone. His current title of number one genius is fated to leave.”

“Yeah! The distance between them is really too big, and that’s not only in terms of strength and aptitude. In many other places, Murong Xun is far inferior to Chu Feng!”

At that moment, not only was there no one who helped Murong Xun, there were even many who discussed secretly amongst themselves, jabbing at his pains and criticized everything about him.

That made Murong Xun, who already had a stomach filled with anger, even more enraged. He roared, “You dare to talk about me like this? Who the hell do you think you are?!”

“You trash! I didn’t invite you here to slander my Immortal Execution Archipelago! I give you a good treatment, but you reject it. What use do you have now then? Go die!”

Murong Xun suddenly roared. The blood-red aura was akin to a fierce beast as it, amidst a strange sound and horrifying might, burst out from his body again, instantly engulfing all the observers at that location.

“AHH—”

At that instant, all sorts of painful cries rang continuously. Those who were enveloped by the blood-red aura all felt so much pain they wished they were dead as their howls reached even the heavens.

The demonic technique Murong Xun used right now wasn't simply just absorbing a portion of their cultivation and life. It was

completely

refining their life and cultivation—he was killing them.

As they were absorbed so heartlessly, all of them, from undamaged bodies, became persons of blood as they were horrifically mangled. In the end, they became pools of blood—they were all cleanly engulfed by Murong Xun, and died without a complete corpse.

“This damned Murong Xun, he's actually this cruel...”

When they saw such a scene, nearly everyone's expression changed greatly. Their feelings of anger sprang up coincident with indescribable uneasiness and fear as all those emotions flooded their hearts because they knew, today, they were going to face a disaster.

“Immortal Execution Archipelago, attention! Kill all these outsiders who ignore our kindness. Leave none alive!” the Sixth Immortal ordered. Indeed, as the saying went, “whatever one worries is whatever will happen”—the Sixth Immortal worried about killing the observers, and that was the exact thing that happened.

“Yes sir!” Everyone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, after hearing his words, revealed their killing intent. They cast their gazes full of bloodlust towards the fearful-faced observers who were scattered outside the battlefield.

“Run! The Immortal Execution Archipelago are planning to silence us!”

At that instant, the observers had already confirmed death was nearing them. As they cursed the Immortal Execution Archipelago's various vile acts, they escaped for their lives. They wanted to search for a chance of escape within the chaos.

However, how could the Immortal Execution Archipelago give them that chance? Seeing that typical Martial Lords could not catch up to those observers, the Sixth Immortal emanated his aura of Martial King to deter everyone. He was personally going to kill those who were witness to Murong Xun's usage of demonic technique.

He was going to kill them all in order to prevent them from spreading this news!

“Some Immortal Execution Archipelago this is! You aim to silence them after your wicked acts are revealed? Is this the famous upright clan that rids evil and guards righteousness?”

But just as the Sixth Immortal prepared to eradicate them all, a woman's voice suddenly rang out. At the same time, a white-clothed beautiful figure soundlessly appeared before the observers, and stopped the Sixth Immortal and the others' path.

Most importantly, after she appeared, she emanated an aura no weaker than the Sixth Immortal's. It was the aura of a rank one Martial King, and naturally, that person was Qiushui Fuyan.

“Who are you?” the Sixth Immortal loudly questioned as he tightly furrowed his brows at her sudden emergence. His expression changed slightly when he faced this rank one Martial King, and did not make any rash movements.

In reality, the Sixth Immortal was not the only one who had such a reaction. Almost everyone's expression changed greatly as they couldn't help but cast their gazes at that woman.

At this moment, of nearly all Martial Lords, Chu Feng was invincible. Even Murong Xun was no match for Chu Feng, and likely even if all Martial Lords from the Immortal Execution Archipelago attacked at the same time, they would still do nothing to Chu Feng.

So, in terms of Martial Lords, even though the ones from the Crippling Night Demon Sect and in addition to the observers from many parts of the

Eastern Sea Region were inferior in number to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, their strength was superior.

On the other hand, in terms of Martial Kings, the Immortal Execution Archipelago not only had the Sixth Immortal, they also had the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan. Yet, the Crippling Night Demon Sect only had the Water King and Fire King. No matter strength or numbers, they were inferior to the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

And since a Martial King's strength was superior to all—it was simply not an existence a Martial Lord could fight against—everyone felt for today's battle, the Immortal Execution Archipelago grasped the ticket to victory. If they truly decided to kill them all, then the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the observers would all die.

Yet, right now, another rank one Martial King appeared, and judging by aura, that person's strength was very powerful as well, an existence no weaker than the Sixth Immortal.

If that woman was from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, then the absolute disadvantage they had would not only equal out, there was even the possibility of it becoming an advantage.

That person's appearance was of utmost importance. It was related to the outcome of this battle.

So, who that woman was and which side she stood on became the most crucial part. That was why everyone looked at her without shifting their gazes.

Qiushui Fuyan did not directly respond to their gazes and the Sixth Immortal's question. Instead, she raised her hand, and slowly lifted her veil. She showed her beautiful appearance that did not diminish over the years right in front of everyone.

“Yo-you're Qiushui Fuyan?!”

After the Sixth Immortal saw her complexion, his expression changed greatly. His calm face could remain collected no longer.

He had thought of countless possibilities, but her being Qiushui Fuyan was one he didn't think of.

“What? Qiushui Fuyan? Which Qiushui Fuyan? The Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church? The former number one beauty of the Eastern Sea Region?”

“Rubbish! How many Qiushui Fuyans can there be in the Eastern Sea Region? Both this shocking appearance, and powerful strength, confirms without a doubt that this is the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church!”

“But, but... hasn't everyone from the Burning Heaven Church relocated to the Holy Land of Martialism?”

At that instant, not to mention the Sixth Immortal, nearly everyone's faces changed greatly. They were all dumbfounded, and with faces full of shock, they examined the lithe Qiushui Fuyan. They felt this was not reality, that this was inconceivable.

No one would have thought they would still see the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church whose name was known throughout the world.

However, when she appeared so alive before their eyes, they could only feel shock and nothing else.

Chapter 891 - Commencing a Massacre

MGA: Chapter 891 - Commencing a Massacre

“I’ve got it. As expected, our master guessed correctly. Lady Qiushui is Qiushui Fuyan. You didn’t go to the Holy Land of Martialism, and had always remained in the Eastern Sea Region.”

Finally, the Sixth Immortal’s expression was slightly relieved. He sneered, seeming to understand what had happened in the past, then quickly said, “If I’m not mistaken, you’ve come here today likely for Chu Feng.

“But, Qiushui Fuyan, there has never been any enmity between my Immortal Execution Archipelago and your Burning Heaven Church. If you side with a brat like Chu Feng, you will make an enemy out of us. You must carefully think about the interests and detriments!”

“Since you know the reason I’ve come, why the useless question?” Qiushui Fuyan faintly smiled at the Sixth Immortal’s words, then added, “Also, don’t threaten me, because I have never been afraid of your Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“In the end, the Immortal Execution Archipelago is merely a force that used all sorts of despicable methods to rise in position amidst the power-struggle chaos, and you were only able to because there was no one powerful in the Eastern Sea Region. Who gave you the courage to dare to threaten me?”

“You...” The Sixth Immortal was not lightly angered at all. He didn’t think Qiushui Fuyan would give no face at all by humiliating the Immortal Execution Archipelago in public.

“Everyone, the ‘good show’ is over. I’m sure all of you have also seen the true appearance of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“This force that raises a banner of righteousness is in reality the most despicable power. In comparison to the Crippling Night Demon Sect, who are outright and dares to claim responsibility for all the things they’ve done, the Immortal Execution Archipelago is truly unworthy to be the Eastern Sea Region’s ruler.

“Everyone, go your own ways, but don’t forget to tell the world what happened today. It will also act as a warning for everyone to not blindly join the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and jump into this huge hellhole that does every evil thing imaginable.”

“Thank you for saving us today! We will not disappoint your wishes. We will tell the world today’s truth!”

After Qiushui Fuyan spoke, the observers felt endless gratitude. They clasped their hands, and after thanking together, they leapt forth and used all sorts of ability to flee into the distance. In order to avoid being captured in one net, they did not escape in one direction, but instead scattered and it was every person for themselves.

“Today, no one should even think of leaving!” The Sixth Immortal’s face turned cold when he saw their attempts. His overwhelming bloodlust was let out, and in an instant, black clouds appeared in the clear sky, gales arose, and it was as if the end of the world had arrived.

“You don’t decide if they leave or not.” However, Qiushui Fuyan, who had her eyes on the Sixth Immortal, did not give him a chance to kill them.

She raised her pure-white hand slightly in the air, and after a huge explosion, she willed into existence flames that could touch the sky itself. They became a blazing ocean of fire, submerging the Sixth Immortal within.

“Dammit!” When there was an attack from a rank one Martial King heading his way, how could the Sixth Immortal distract himself by chasing

after others? He quickly flipped his palm and released a powerful martial skill to block Qiushui Fuyan's flames.

aoo— Seeing the Sixth Immortal stopped by Qiushui Fuyan, the Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan also fiercely shouted and became enormous birds with a body ablaze with flames. They looked exactly like the

huge bird seen back then in the continent of the Nine Provinces

After the two Protectors transformed into their original appearances, a sky full of flames gushed out. The flames pressed forth in all directions; they wanted to burn the people who were escaping to death.

“If you want to kill them, you must first pass through us!” The Water King and Fire King, who had rested for quite a while, didn't hesitate as they released their unique power of water and fire. First, they blocked their ferocious flames, then they started fighting the Inferno Divine Bird clan's Protectors once again.

“KILL—” With the eruption of battle, everyone from both sides did not waste any time as all the experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago started bellowing “kill”, and all leapt out from the warships.

Although no one dared to interfere in the fights between Martial Kings—they even had to stay far away from them—they still dared to interfere in the fights between Martial Lords. At that instant, several thousand Martial Lords surrounded Chu Feng. They wanted to suppress Chu Feng with numbers and bully the few with more.

Even though an entire warship of Martial Lords pounced towards Chu Feng, there was also a portion who headed towards Xuan Xiaochao and the others, including the injured Ten Gold-cloak Brothers. They truly prepared to kill all of them.

“None of you are worthy of killing us.”

Due to Chu Feng's assistance with healing, and his own as well, the injuries on Xuan Xiaochao and the others had turned quite a bit for the better. Even You Tonghan's cut jaw and tongue, with Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming's help, were restored.

They were already brimming with anger, and now, there were people who looked for trouble. The three had found their targets to vent their fury.

All of them grasped within their hands an Incomplete Royal Armament. They sent out ferocious auras, and rushed into the battlefield. As if they were cutting fruits and vegetables, they started killing the army of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Even though they were all Martial Lords, the three's powerful strength had been displayed perfectly. Although they were no match for Murong Xun, it was relatively easy to kill those people.

“Formation!”

The young ones bravely slaughtered their enemies, so naturally the old ones could not do anything inferior. Even though the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers were heavily injured, without the suppression from the Sixth Immortal, they acted as if they were revived. They too set out powerful fighting strength, and after laying their unique formation, they attacked with defense, quietly awaiting the arrival of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's army.

Let alone these normal Martial Lord, their formation could even put up a fight against Murong Xun who had a Royal Armament!

Even though there was a large number of people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and they too were in a formation, the ten old men calmly received the arrival of attacks. With flawless coordination, they became fierce beasts. Regardless how many came, they killed them all. The experts' offensive attacks were akin to committing suicide. It was only a one-way path as they all became pools of blood.

If the heavily wounded Xuan Xiaochao and the others, and the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, were so brave and ferocious, then one could imagine how

much more relentless Chu Feng was, who was uninjured and possessed outstanding strength.

At that moment, Chu Feng was simply like a slaughtering weapon. With him in the center, within a circumference of a thousand meters, it was like a bloody colosseum.

Those who stepped within that range would instantly be butchered. Not only instantly killed, even their Source Energy was refined by Chu Feng.

“AHH—”

In an instant, all sorts of painful cries rang out. Blood was like rain as it showered downward. The over ten thousand Martial Lords on the Immortal Execution Archipelago's three warships were unable to kill Chu Feng and the others. Instead, they were like animals as they were slaughtered instead.

Chapter 892 - Decided by One Strike

MGA: Chapter 892 - Decided by One Strike

“You useless people! In order for all of your development, so many cultivation resources were wasted, and so much time was wasted. In the end, what were they for?”

“Everyone, get the hell back here!” Murong Xun’s eyes were full of blood from anger as he looked at his subordinates who were falling one after the other. He couldn’t help but curse at them loudly.

At that instant, none of the experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago dared to go against his words. They no longer went to send their lives away, and instead, put away their attacks and entered a defensive state. Finally, all of them half-knelt orderly in front of Murong Xun, and said together, “We have been incompetent! Young master, please grant us punishment!”

“Punishment? You indeed deserve punishment for wasting so many years of my Immortal Execution Archipelago’s care! You tell me, how should I punish all of you?!” Murong Xun shouted furiously with his eyes roundly widened.

“Young master, please give us punishment! If you want to kill or cut us, we will not give a single word of complaint!” replied the half-knelt crowd in unison.

“Very well. Since you’ve said that, then use your blood and flesh to repay the work my Immortal Execution Archipelago has put into you.”

When he heard their reply, Murong Xun wasn’t moved at all. Instead, a hint of fierceness flashed within his gaze.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

Suddenly, a cold glint reflected off of Murong Xun's blood-red eyes. The boundless blood-red aura once again shot out, transforming into countless blood-red chains, and it pierced through the kneeling crowd amidst howling noises and the squirting of blood.

“AHH—” When the blood-red chains passed through their bodies, the cultivation and life they had accumulated for many years rapidly streamed out. The agony of being squeezed dry and refined made them involuntarily scream.

But in spite of that, there was not a single person who escaped or backed away. Instead, they endured such pain within such resounding screams, and allowed their cultivation and life to flow incessantly into Murong Xun's body. They did not complain in any way whatsoever.

And with over ten thousand people's power channeling into him, Murong Xun's aura once again soared. He had now infinitely neared the realm of a Martial King, and there was even a feeling of making a breakthrough.

However, as Murong Xun's power rose higher and higher, the people bore through by the blood-red chains became more and more pitiful. At that moment, they looked neither human nor ghost. They were akin to zombies, and even the sound they made was as terrifying as a ghost's howl.

“He is truly insane. He is refining such loyal subordinates in such a manner. Is he even human?” Seeing the horrifically developing situation, Xuan Xiaochao and the others came up to Chu Feng as they held their Incomplete Royal Armaments.

“Chu Feng, luckily you were here today. Otherwise, it's likely we would have died already. Right now, Murong Xun has already gone insane, and insane people will do insane actions. Let us join you and fight him together.”

The Ten Gold-cloak Brothers had also come over, but in comparison to Xuan Xiaochao and the others, as the ten of them looked at Chu Feng, their

gazes were rather complicated. They would never forget how weak he was back then in the Depraved Ravine. He was so weak he had to ask them for help; yet, he not only surpassed them now, he even saved them.

“It’s true that this Murong Xun is crazy, but I don’t think he has truly gone insane. His very actions are at most his actual nature.

“Seniors, Brothers, don’t worry. Although his demonic technique is powerful and cruel, it still has a restrictions. It cannot infinitely transfer the power of others to himself.

“Even if Murong Xun refines all of his subordinates until death, the highest he will reach is rank nine Martial Lord. As long as he bound from being a Martial King, I will still be able to beat him into a cripple.” As Chu Feng spoke, he flipped his palm. The Royal Armament Silver Dragon Spear then appeared within his hand.

When it emerged, its unique aura swept through all directions. Chu Feng’s strength increased by many times instantly, and at that very moment, Chu Feng gave others an illusion: even if it were a Martial King, perhaps Chu Feng could even truly put up a fight against him.

“Royal Armament?!” After feeling the might of the Royal Armament, no matter the Sixth Immortal, or the Water and Fire King, they couldn’t help but look at the Silver Dragon Spear in Chu Feng’s hand.

“It is indeed a Royal Armament. With his cultivation, he’s able to grasp this Royal Armament so thoroughly?”

After confirming it was truly a Royal Armament within Chu Feng’s hand, there was praise in the Fire King’s and the Water King’s eyes, there was fury in the Sixth Immortal’s eyes, and in the Inferno Divine Birds’ eyes, there was greed.

bang bang bang bang bang...

Just at that moment, bursts of muffled explosions endlessly rang out. In Murong Xun’s direction, the myriad of bodies had disappeared. In their

place was a mist of blood that drifted in the air, and a shower of blood that rained down.

When they cast their gazes back at Murong Xun, his body had swollen and deformed. From a tall and suave man, he became a fatty who could explode at any moment. Moreover, none of the skin on his body was a good colour—it was blood-red, quite terrifying.

Although his aura was still very powerful, it had remained at rank nine Martial Lord. As Chu Feng said, the power of Murong Xun's demonic technique didn't matter, as there would always be a restriction. He could not

completely

refine and absorb their power.

“CHU FENG, COME! A SINGLE STRIKE TO DECIDE LIFE AND DEATH!”

Suddenly, Murong Xun let out a thunderous roar. His voice was no longer his original tone. With it came endless fury and resentment, akin to a demon's voice.

However, at that moment, what was more horrifying wasn't that voice, but the pressure he exuded as he leapt up and rushed towards Chu Feng.

At that instant, even the colour of the sky above Murong Xun's head changed—it changed into blood-red. It looked as if the person who approached wasn't actually a person, but a demon that was dyed in the blood of countless lives.

As they faced Murong Xun who was in such a state, even Xuan Xiaochao, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, and the others, who were quite fearless, couldn't help deeply gasping. Bursts of slight horror emerged onto their faces, and they subconsciously backed away.

Scary—truly scary. Murong Xun, who had refined the blood and flesh of over ten thousand people, had too terrifying of an evil aura about him. He truly could not be described as human.

“My thoughts exactly.”

But the terror of Murong Xun’s horrifying aura did not matter. Chu Feng remained fearless, and not only that, there was even an excited glint that surged within his eyes.

boom

Suddenly, Chu Feng made his move. His move shattered even space itself in his former position. Even Xuan Xiaochao and the others who had backed quite far away were forced even further back by the remnants. From that, one could see the fierceness of Chu Feng’s might.

As Chu Feng held the Silver Dragon Spear, he rose into the air, and like a comet, rushed straight into Murong Xun who reeked with blood.

When they were not even three thousand meters away, Chu Feng suddenly increased his speed. With a howl of a dragon, Chu Feng’s entire being became a white stream of light.

When the white stream of light streaked through the air, it was like a white dragon, appearing for just an instant. When the white stream of light disappeared, Chu Feng had already come up to Murong Xun. He waved his arm, and the Silver Dragon Spear in his hand became a white light, and with a muffled stabbing sound, large amounts of blood gushed out. Chu Feng’s Silver Dragon Spear had pierced into Murong Xun’s chest and out from his back.

Their confrontation was decided by a single strike.

Murong Xun—lost!

Chapter 893 - Kowtow and Admit Your Wrongs

MGA: Chapter 893 - Kowtow and Admit Your Wrongs

A spear pierced through his chest. With a single strike, Chu Feng had defeated Murong Xun, who had refined the lives of over ten thousand Martial Lords.

Such a scene completely dumbfounded Xuan Xiaochao, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, and the others. They had expected such a conclusion, but they had never expected such progress. It was really too quick. So quick the outcome was decided in an instant.

They too had faced Murong Xun earlier—they knew how horrifying he was. Yet, Chu Feng still defeated him with a single strike. One had to admit that in comparison to Murong Xun,

Chu Feng

was the true monster.

“Young master!”

Amidst the shock Xuan Xiaochao and the others felt, the Sixth Immortal was enraged. After a long roar, he raised his hand, and started an attack towards Chu Feng.

boom However, in the next instant of that strike’s release, it was stopped within a huge explosion—Qiushui Fuyan stopped his attack.

“Qiushui Fuyan, if anything happens to the young master, I will definitely kill you!” The Sixth Immortal’s face turned blue from anger when Qiushui Fuyan persisted in stopping him. He didn’t continue blinding attacking

Chu Feng, and instead, cast the fiercest attack he knew in an attempt to kill Qiushui Fuyan.

“Even if you didn’t plan to kill me, I had never planned to let you go.” Qiushui Fuyan merely smiled lightly at the Sixth Immortal, who was nearing insanity. On her beautiful face, there was not a hint of fear at all. Instead, within her eyes filled with intelligence, there was even a trace of disdain.

hmm After piercing Murong Xun’s chest with his spear, Chu Feng waved his big sleeve, and a boundless golden Spirit Formation emerged. Then, with another wave of Chu Feng’s sleeve, the Spirit Formation shrank rapidly, and transformed into the size of a fingernail. It entered Murong Xun’s body through his wound.

“Ahh—”

After the formation went into him, Murong Xun let out a painful shriek. At the same time, large amounts of blood-coloured aura gushed out from his body. However, this time, they did not become blood-red chains, and drifted away instead.

When such a thing occurred to him, Murong Xun’s swelled body rapidly contracted. Even his powerful aura diminished.

With that Spirit Formation, Chu Feng sealed Murong Xun’s odd demonic technique, which caused the power he stripped away from others to leave his body.

After Murong Xun’s power completely dissipated, Chu Feng flicked his arm and threw the Silver Dragon Spear onto his shoulders like a

shoulder pole

. He then threw Murong Xun onto it, and landed on a warship.

After landing, Chu Feng flicked again, and like a sandbag, fiercely threw Murong Xun onto the ground with a thump.

“Chu Feng, I will tear your corpse into a million pieces!” After being thrown onto the ground, Murong Xun stood up in a stumbling manner. While gritting his teeth, he was like a mad dog as he pounced towards Chu Feng.

“Kneel down.” However, Chu Feng swirled around quickly, and arrived behind Murong Xun. The tip of the spear in his hand swept past, and after two bloody slashes, Murong Xun’s leg tendons were cut.

thud With his tendons severed, Murong Xun’s legs couldn’t support himself and he fell onto the ground.

After Murong Xun knelt, Chu Feng stood in front of him and said, “Kowtow and admit your wrongs.”

“Go to he—Ahh!”

Murong Xun wanted to curse at him, but before he even finished his words, he felt pain from his head. Chu Feng had tightly grabbed his hair, then, pushing down, slammed Murong Xun’s head onto the ground.

bang bang bang...

For a short moment, kowtowing sounds louder than even drumming rang out continually. After a short instant, blood started flowing from Murong Xun’s head.

“Chu Feng, damn your ancestors!”

Seeing his young master subjected to such suffering, the Sixth Immortal was even about to explode. He flipped his palm, and several Forbidden Medicines appeared. Without saying anything, he consumed them all at once.

aooo—

After he ingested those Forbidden Medicines, bursts of colourful auras endlessly soared within his body. At the same time, his power was rocketing. He even exhaled peculiar mist from his mouth and nose.

“Crap.” Qiushui Fuyan’s complexion could not remain calm when she saw the change occurring to the Sixth Immortal. If it were before, when she fought the Sixth Immortal, not only could she face him cool, calm, and collected, she even stood on a bit of an advantage.

But now, the Sixth Immortal ignored the risks to his life and ignored the pain of backlash. He consumed so many Forbidden Medicines, and due to that his strength was incomparable to before. Now, he had surpassed Qiushui Fuyan’s limit.

aooo— Just at that moment, the Sixth Immortal furiously roared again, and threw a punch at Qiushui Fuyan.

That fist truly made the world tremble, and took away the light from the sun and moon. Even though Qiushui Fuyan put down layers of Spirit Formations, and used the strongest defensive martial skills she had, she remained no match for it.

boom

“Ahh!”

Finally, after bursts of rumbles, Qiushui Fuyan let out a cry. She was forced several miles back by the power of that punch.

“Senior Qiushui!” When he saw that, Chu Feng couldn’t help shouting in alarm.

aooo However, after forcing Qiushui Fuyan through the air, the Sixth Immortal was still unwilling to stop. He waved his big sleeve, and a boundless suction power burst out, drawing her back to him.

When Qiushui Fuyan returned, the Sixth Immortal’s fist had been risen again. Moreover, an extremely horrifying aura was being channeled. If that fist were to land, Qiushui Fuyan was most likely going to die.

“STOP!

“If you dare harm Senior Qiushui again, I will slice this Murong Xun into pieces.” Capturing into his eyes the killing intent of the Sixth Immortal, Chu Feng did not hesitate as he abruptly waved the Silver Dragon Spear downward, and sliced off Murong Xun’s left shoulder.

“AHH—

“Sixth Immortal, save me!” Murong Xun could endure the pain of his arm being chopped off, but he could not endure Chu Feng’s bloodlust. He could feel the lack of guarantee to his survival. So, he quickly put away his pride and started shouting for help.

“You...” The Sixth Immortal’s expression changed greatly. Although he was furious, he hurriedly stopped and didn’t dare to move even a single inch.

“You two, stop as well.” Seeing its effectiveness, Chu Feng cast his fierce gaze at the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan.

The two first glanced at the Sixth Immortal, and after a communication through their eyes’ expression, they dashed backwards, left the range of the Water King and Fire King, and returned to their human appearances.

“Lady Qiushui, are you all right?” When such an intense fight was eased, the Water King and Fire King first supported Qiushui Fuyan in the air, then landed onto the warship Chu Feng was on. As for Xuan Xiaochao and the others, they too quickly went there.

“Release my young master, and I’ll safely let you go.” The Sixth Immortal spoke. That was not something he desired, but there was no other choice right now. He could not let Murong Xun die.

Chapter 894 - Mysterious Force

MGA: Chapter 894 - Mysterious Force

“Chu Feng, let’s go.” Xuan Xiaochao and the others were elated when they saw the Sixth Immortal was going to release them. They quickly urged Chu Feng to leave.

Right now, the Sixth Immortal had consumed Forbidden Medicine. His strength was too fierce, and not to mention Qiushui Fuyan alone, it was likely the combination of the Water King, the Fire King,

and

Qiushui Fuyan wouldn’t necessarily be sufficient to defeat him.

However, at that instant, Chu Feng did not reply. He turned his head around and looked at Qiushui Fuyan.

Seeing her pale complexion and white dress splattered with blood, in addition to the frightening bloody wound on her neck and face, Chu Feng remained silent. He slowly closed his eyes.

Chu Feng wanted to prepare the Earthen Taboo martial skill and fight the Sixth Immortal in order to avenge Qiushui Fuyan.

bam However, Qiushui Fuyan hurriedly grabbed Chu Feng’s wrist. After Chu Feng opened his eyes, she shook her head. Clearly, she had guessed Chu Feng’s intentions and didn’t want him to take the risk.

Chu Feng’s heart was instantly moved seeing the hints of pleading in her eyes. Indeed, the Sixth Immortal, in this instant, was too powerful. Chu Feng was not even sure whether his Firmament Slash would succeed. If it failed, then they were going to be in a horrible situation.

“Quickly let my young master go! Otherwise, even if we all die together, I will make your death miserable!” The Sixth Immortal panicked slightly when Chu Feng was still unwilling to let Murong Xun go.

“Even if we all die together? With power such as yours?” However, just at that moment, an aged voice rang out. An elderly figure simultaneously appeared in front of Chu Feng and the others.

It was an old man, nearly two meters tall, yet as thin as a stem of hemp. On his body, one could not feel the slightest trace of aura, as if he were not a cultivator but an ordinary commoner.

However, as he stood there in the air, there was this persistent feeling of abnormality because he had a very terrifying appearance—his tall nose and dark green eyes made him seem like an old monster. If a child saw him, they would wail immediately. If an adult saw him, they would trip from fear.

“Master!” But when he saw that old man appear, You Tonghan rejoiced and quickly went up to greet him.

“We pay our respects to Lord Protector!” Not only did You Tonghan greet him, at that very instant, everyone else from the Crippling Night Demon Sect had faces full of joy as they half-knelt.

Chu Feng too came to his senses after seeing their reaction. Quite evidently, that was You Tonghan’s master, one of the Four Protectors of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, You Mingdeng.

“I pay my respects to Lord Protector!” Chu Feng didn’t hesitate after learning of that. He bent his knee, clasped his fists, and greeted the senior in front of him.

The Four Protectors were the strongest people within the Crippling Night Demon Sect. His strength was absolutely not something the Sixth Immortal stood a chance against. With him here, it didn’t matter how many more Forbidden Medicines the Sixth Immortal consumed—it would all be useless.

“You Mingdeng?” As expected, after recognizing him, the face of Sixth Immortal and the two Protectors all turned green. Who was You Mingdeng? They were definitely no match for someone like him!

“Not bad, I haven’t come too late. Everyone, rise.” You Mingdeng turned around and looked at the crowd with a smile. However, he did not look at Qiushui Fuyan, nor at Chu Feng, as if ignoring them.

Qiushui Fuyan frowned at this small detail, but Chu Feng did not mind it too much. Along with You Tonghan and the others, he too stood up.

whoosh whoosh But just at that moment, the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan rushed and became two streams of light, fleeing into the distance. They wanted to escape.

“Stay here for a while.” You Mingdeng did not even turn his head around as they attempted to escape. With a thought, a golden Spirit Formation emerged and instantly sealed the two Protectors.

That Spirit Formation was really too powerful. No matter how they attacked, it would not shatter. In the end, they could only allow it to drift back and arrive in front of You Mingdeng.

hmm At the same time, another golden Spirit Formation emerged. It enveloped the Sixth Immortal who had yet to escape, and brought him forward towards You Mingdeng.

In front of him, the Sixth Immortal and the others, who were incomparably arrogant before, didn’t even have any strength to escape. They were like a tortoise in a jar, and everyone else from the Crippling Night Demon Sect all had faces of satisfaction.

You Tonghan even went up and asked, “Master, how should they be dealt with?”

“Bring them all back. They will be of great use.” As You Mingdeng spoke, he willed another golden Spirit Formation to appear, sealing Murong Xun who was in front of Chu Feng.

No one presented any objections to his decision. Putting aside the fact that he had the most power at this very moment, his decision was very correct as well.

Just killing Murong Xun and the others would be too good for them. Other than diminishing a bit of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's strength, there was no other meaning to it.

On the other hand, perhaps there would be some use in leaving them alive. That was especially so for Murong Xun. He was the future master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago! It was likely no one in the Immortal Execution Archipelago wanted him to die.

“I'm afraid today, you may not take them away.”

However, just at that moment, a faint chuckle rang out in the sky. At the same time, two people soundlessly emerged, and stood above the Spirit Formation that bound Murong Xun.

Everyone's expression changed greatly when they cast their gazes over. The ones who had come were two young males. Judging by their appearances, they were young men just slightly above twenty years of age. Yet, they were already Martial Kings.

One rank one Martial King, one rank two Martial King.

They not only possessed powerful strength, the clothings on their bodies were very special as well. There were talismans stuck all over, and even on their neck, there was a very long string of beads. They looked like some monks who were practitioners of evil, but due to their long black hair, they were clearly not monks.

However, something everyone felt was the indescribable aura of danger on those young men's bodies. Even Chu Feng, Qiushui Fuyan, and the others couldn't help but take a few steps back. Intuition told them to stay far away from those people.

At that moment, only You Mingdeng remained unmoving, standing in the distance. There weren't many changes to his expression, nor did he attack them immediately. He calmly asked, "You are not from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Why must you interfere in the conflict we have with them?"

"You don't need to care who we are, and we don't want to interfere in this conflict. However, right now, I want them to stay here.

"You can choose to leave right now, and you can also chose to leave a few things behind before leaving." The rank two Martial King indifferently spoke. There was not the slightest hint of respect in his tone, and instead, there was a greatly superior feeling that came from it. He did not put You Mingdeng in his eyes at all.

Chapter 895 - You Are an Outsider

MGA: Chapter 895 - You Are an Outsider

“Go to h...” You Tonghan flew into a rage upon seeing such disrespect toward his master. He pointed at them, preparing to let out a string of curses.

But before he finished speaking, You Mingdeng extended his hand, indicting him to remain silent.

Although You Tonghan felt furious—Xuan Xiaochao and the others also felt furious—since You Mingdeng made a sign for them to remain silent, they naturally didn’t dare to say anything.

Actually, at that moment, You Mingdeng too had quite an unsightly expression, but he didn’t say anything. Instead, after meaningfully looking at those two young men, he waved his big sleeve, and a gale arose, which brought Chu Feng and the others away.

After You Mingdeng left, the rank two Martial King raised his fist slightly, and after three muffled explosions, the three Spirit Formations made by You Mingdeng were easily burst open.

“Thank you for saving us! May I ask for your name? In the future, my Immortal Execution Archipelago will thank you greatly.” At that instant, Murong Xun ignored his own injuries and hurriedly bowed and clasped his hands as an expression of thanks towards those two young men.

“Thanks? What can your Immortal Execution Archipelago give to thank us?” However, absolutely unexpectedly, the two young men did not accept his thanks, and the rank one Martial King even made a mocking smile on his face.

Murong Xun frowned slightly at their reaction, but didn’t say much.

“Eat it. It will ease your Forbidden Medicine’s backlash pain.” The rank two Martial King threw a pellet to the Sixth Immortal.

“This...”

After receiving the pellet, the Sixth Immortal was a bit hesitant because he discovered that the pellet was very odd. There was no medicinal fragrance, and instead, there was a bit of a fetid stench.

It was as though it was made by the blood of humans. Moreover, tiny runes carved on that pellet. Every single one of those runes was very profound. Even though the Sixth Immortal was a Gold-cloak World Spiritist, he did not understand them in any way whatsoever.

The Sixth Immortal was afraid. He didn’t dare to eat it.

“It’s given to you, so eat it. You think my senior will harm you?”

“If he did, he could’ve just killed you with a slap. Why go through all this trouble? Eat it.” The rank one Martial King spoke angrily when seeing his hesitation.

The Sixth Immortal was a bit annoyed at those words. He did not know who they were, and even though they did save him, he had no clue whether they were enemy or ally. If he consumed that pellet, thus allowing them control over himself, which then led him to harm the Immortal Execution Archipelago, what could he do then?

However, just at that moment, the rank two Martial King suddenly cast his gaze over.

When he saw those eyes, the Sixth Immortal’s heartbeat sped up. An indescribable fear surged into his heart, and without saying anything more, he swallowed the pellet.

“Return to the Immortal Execution Archipelago. My two seniors are still waiting for you there.” The rank two Martial King only nodded after seeing the Sixth Immortal’s consumption of the pellet. With no rush, he

headed towards the Teleportation Array. However, he suddenly stopped, turned his head around, and said indifferently, “Remember. Don’t ask us what our name is. If you want to, you can call us ‘master’.”

After speaking, the man lightly smiled, then continued his way.

As for Murong Xun and the Sixth Immortal, they looked at each other, their faces quite distorted. Even the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan had dazed complexions. But, in the end, all of them went in the same direction as the two men.

At the same time, Chu Feng and the others were led by You Mingdeng and brought to a peaceful area.

“Master, I don’t understand. Those two were only a rank one Martial King and a rank two Martial King, but you’re a rank four Martial King! Killing them required no more effort than raising your hand, so why did you need to be afraid of them?” You Tonghan asked with a face full of confusion. His emotions were a bit agitated.

“Insolence!

“Do you speak to your master like this?” However, You Tonghan’s question fetched him You Mingdeng’s berating.

“This disciple doesn’t dare to disrespect Master, but I just don’t understand why they were released in such a manner. They had nearly took our lives!” said You Mingdeng a bit timidly.

“What is the extent of your knowledge? Those two young men were not from the Eastern Sea Region. We cannot afford to offend them,” You Mingdeng said straightforwardly.

“Not from the Eastern Sea Region? Where are they from?” You Tonghan’s face was one of confusion.

“Lord Protector, do you mean those two were from the Holy Land of Martialism?” the Water King asked in a probing manner.

“Their cultivation at such age, their special clothing, their arrogant demeanor, and also their otherworldly aura... They are definitely not from the Eastern Sea Region. Most likely, they’re from the Holy Land of Martialism.” You Mingdeng nodded, his face full of seriousness.

After hearing his words, You Tonghan and the others couldn’t help inhaling deeply. Their complexions became quite odd.

The Holy Land of Martialism—what sort of place was that? They knew very well. It was the cradle of geniuses, the heaven of cultivation experts. It was a place all cultivators wanted to go, and it was even a legend to some.

It was said the natural energy that place contained was many times stronger than the Eastern Sea Region, but similarly, the people from the Eastern Sea Region could not even be compared to the experts at that place.

Yet, right now, in the Eastern Sea Region, someone from the Holy Land of Martialism had appeared, and they even protected their enemy. That made them feel extreme uneasiness. A formless terror had enveloped their hearts.

“Master, putting aside why people from the Holy Land of Martialism have come here, why would they side with the Immortal Execution Archipelago? Why are they helping them?” You Tonghan asked, puzzled.

“That’s the most important piece of this puzzle. Putting aside how they came here, it is a fact that they are here. Moreover, there is a relationship between them and the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“It doesn’t matter how they are related to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, but as long as they help them, I’m afraid the war between us and them cannot continue,” You Mingdeng said.

Everyone went silent because they understood what You Mingdeng was trying to say.

“Senior, do you mean we should surrender? Do you think after surrendering, the Immortal Execution Archipelago will forgive us?”
Finally, Chu Feng spoke.

But after hearing Chu Feng’s words, You Mingdeng’s complexion twisted. When he looked at Chu Feng, his gaze was also a bit icy. He said with an extremely fierce tone, “Chu Feng, it is already your fortune that I saved you. When we, the Crippling Night Demon Sect, are discussing, can an outsider like you not barge in?”

Chapter 896 - No Good Compensation for Being a Good Person

MGA: Chapter 896 - No Good Compensation for Being a Good Person

“What?”

“Outsider?”

“You said who’s an outsider?”

“You’re saying I, Chu Feng, am an outsider?” Chu Feng’s expression changed immediately. It twisted quite a bit, and there was even a bit of fury in his eyes.

In order to save the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, he had hurried over here from the faraway Misty Peak. When they were in a desperate situation, he ignored the risks to his life and went to save them. He even dragged Qiushui Fuyan, who was completely unrelated to his matter, into this trouble. That brought her serious wounds on her body, and she nearly lost her life.

But now, one of the Protectors, who held the highest position in the Crippling Night Demon Sect and had the most power, said he was an outsider. How could Chu Feng

not

be furious?

“Master, what are you saying? How is Chu Feng an outsider? He is a brother of our Crippling Night Demon Sect! Besides, he only came here today to save us! If he hadn’t appeared on time, perhaps we would have

already died! How can you say this to him?!” You Tonghan also stood out at that moment, attempting to give You Mingdeng an explanation.

bam But before You Tonghan even finished speaking, You Mingdeng waved his hand and landed a resounding slap on You Tonghan’s face.

That slap sent You Tonghan several meters away in the air. He even crashed into several trees one meter thick. From that, it could be seen how much strength You Mingdeng put into that slap.

“You unfilial thing, are you doubting your master’s words?” You Mingdeng howled extremely furiously after slapping You Tonghan.

As for You Tonghan, he hurriedly stood up and rubbed his red and swelling face. He hesitated some more, but didn’t say anything.

“Lord Protector...” But in spite of that scene, the Water King still stood out, and wanted to defend Chu Feng.

“All of you, shut up!” However, You Mingdeng did not give them any chances to speak. After he shouted explosively, he released his aura of a rank four Martial King.

That might was really too powerful. Even though You Mingdeng had already held himself back, all of them still felt they were suffocating and their bones would shatter at any moment.

As they were subjected to such pressure, who dared to speak any more? Everyone remained silent—even the Water King and Fire King.

At that instant, You Mingdeng once again cast his gaze towards Chu Feng and icily said, “You ask who I’m talking about? Then right now, listen well. I’m talking about you. You are an outsider.”

“You speak nonsense!” Chu Feng was enraged as he spoke furiously. He didn’t care whether he was a senior or not.

bang But then, out of nowhere, You Mingdeng suddenly gripped Chu Feng’s shoulder, flicked it, pressed Chu Feng onto the ground, then

grabbed Chu Feng's robe, ripping it, thus revealing his sturdy back.

At first, everyone felt confused as to what You Mingdeng was doing, but after he pointed at Chu Feng's back, and said his following words, they understood.

“On your back, I do not see the incomplete black moon, the symbol of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! On what basis are you saying you're a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect?!” You Mingdeng loudly questioned.

“Master, there's a reason the symbol cannot be imprinted on Chu Feng,” You Tonghan hurriedly explained.

“Shut up! The Earth King has told me about Chu Feng, but no matter why, as long as the incomplete black moon cannot be imprinted, that person is not a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect!” You Mingdeng appeared especially heartless, then pointed at Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, you know so many of my Crippling Night Demon Sect's secrets, and you even possess a Royal Armament and Secret Skills. I have already shown you kindness by leaving you alive. I hope you know what's best for you. If you dare to inhibit any malicious intents, I will not be this polite the next time we meet.”

After speaking, he extended his palm, and a burst of suction power surged out. It drew away Chu Feng's badge into You Mingdeng's hand—it was the badge the Earth King gave him.

After putting it away, You Mingdeng looked at the crowd, and shouted with an extremely fierce tone, “From today on, all of you mark your borders clearly with this Chu Feng. Listen up! He is not a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. You are not allowed to associate with him in any way.”

At that instant, Xuan Xiaochao and the others had very unpleasant expressions. They couldn't help but cast their gazes at Chu Feng. They seemed to want to say something, but in the end, they said nothing.

whoosh Just at that moment, You Mingdeng waved his big sleeve, and after a burst of a gale, he had brought Xuan Xiaochao and the others away.

“Chu Feng, are you all right?” After You Mingdeng and the other left, Qiushui Fuyan helped Chu Feng up, who was lying on the floor.

After Chu Feng climbed up, he first looked at her body full of wounds, and the shame in his heart immediately surged forth. He said, “Senior Qiushui, I am truly sorry. In order to help me, you’ve been harmed to this extent.” Chu Feng felt very ashamed.

“A little wound like this is nothing. It is merely an external injury.” Qiushui Fuyan sweetly smiled at Chu Feng’s embarrassed gaze, and forced an appearance that made it seem nothing had happened. Then, she said to Chu Feng, “But this time, at least you know what the Crippling Night Demon Sect is truly like, right?”

“You Mingdeng is not the only who’s like this. Even Xue Xiyue and Fu Liansheng are the same.

“No matter how others from the Crippling Night Demon Sect support you, as long as those three dislike you, you will never gain a footing in the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“However, you don’t need to worry because the Crippling Night Demon Sect has always been like this. If their internal portion was united, they wouldn’t have fallen to this state.

“Actually, You Mingdeng is quite correct. He has truly shown you kindness by leaving you alive, because to a person with his nature, it is truly unimaginable to suppress their desire for your Royal Armament.

“Perhaps he did that because of the things you’ve done for the Crippling Night Demon Sect. However, you are really too outstanding. So outstanding that it threatens their very position in the Crippling Night Demon Sect. He won’t allow you to rise in power—or, at least, he won’t allow you to rise in power in the Crippling Night Demon Sect, because that would impede his goal to sit on the position of sect head.”

After hearing Qiushui Fuyan's words, Chu Feng went silent. How could he not understand what Qiushui Fuyan was trying to say?

In reality, long before today, Chu Feng had anticipated a day like this would occur because from the very start, Qiu Canfeng had hiddenly warned Chu Feng to be wary of You Mingdeng and Xue Xiyue. Of the Three Protectors, only Fu Liansheng could be trusted.

Yet, until this very day, Chu Feng had still done quite a few things for the Crippling Night Demon Sect, especially so today. He had come from quite the distance and risked death in order to save them. Yet, in the end, he was treated in such a manner. If he said it was fine and if he said he was not angry, those were definitely lies.

But even so, Chu Feng could not sever his relationship with the Crippling Night Demon Sect. It was for no other reason but because he still had to save Qiu Canfeng. For Qiu Canfeng, he could only endure, because only after seeing Fu Liansheng and saving Qiu Canfeng could Chu Feng rid himself of his relation with the Crippling Night Demon Sect in reassurance, and do the things he wanted to do.

Chapter 897 - A Clean Cut

MGA: Chapter 897 - A Clean Cut

“Whatever, don’t brood over it too much. As they say, you gain a bit of wisdom when you gain a bit of suffering. Just view this as a lesson. However, right now, this place is not safe. We have to quickly return to the Misty Peak,” Qiushui Fuyan urged, but then murmured, “For no reason at all, why have two people from the Holy Land of Martialism appeared? I feel that they’ve come here with some sort of goal... I just hope it won’t affect us.”

Chu Feng couldn’t help recalling the woman called Tantai Xue after Qiushui Fuyan spoke. He suddenly felt such a powerful woman who wasn’t well-known at all very possibly didn’t come from the Eastern Sea Region. She quite likely also came from the Holy Land of Martialism.

However, Chu Feng was not too worried. Instead, a hint of a smile was worn on his face.

Although it was quite possible a huge turmoil in the Eastern Sea Region would arise due to the arrival of the people from the Holy Land of Martialism, their arrival itself proved Chu Feng could reach the Holy Land of Martialism from the Eastern Sea Region via the Heavenly Road, something he was uncertain of before.

Whether that was fortune or misfortune was still an unknown.

Chu Feng followed Qiushui Fuyan and returned to the Misty Peak. Just in case, they went in other less direct paths to avoid meeting people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Luckily, there were no more incidents and both of them safely reached the Misty Peak.

After they returned, Lady Piaomiao was still concocting medicine in seclusion, and Qiushui Fuyan, due to the battle, gained new insights. She prepared to cultivate in seclusion to make a breakthrough to rank two Martial King.

This was not her first attempt. Before today, she had tried sixteen times, but had yet to succeed. However, this time, she said she had gained many insights and could likely succeed.

As for Chu Feng, he didn't leave the Misty Peak. The world outside was really too chaotic. Even people from the Holy Land of Martialism had appeared, and they even seemed to be on the Immortal Execution Archipelago's side. Right now, the Misty Peak was the only place that guaranteed their safety.

At the same time, Chu Feng had been pondering an issue. You Mingdeng had ordered the Crippling Night Demon Sect to sever their relation with him. How to find Fu Liansheng became a huge problem.

Moreover, Chu Feng, who had seen many acts of deception, no longer dared to be certain whether that Fu Liansheng was truly worthy of trust. If this continued, the hope in saving Qiu Canfeng was really too remote. If he attempted it, not only would it increase the danger to himself, it was likely the ones close to him would be affected as well.

“Chu Feng!” On that day, Chu Feng was still thinking about that question. Zi Ling's sweet and soft voice then suddenly rang out outside.

“Oh? You've come!” Chu Feng flashed a dazzling smile when he opened the door, because not only was Zi Ling in front of him, even Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang had come.

These were the closest people to Chu Feng, and also the ones he cared about the most.

After entering Chu Feng's residence, Zi Ling and the others did not quickly sit. They looked at each other, and from their facial expressions

and eye contact, Chu Feng could tell they seemed to be forcing one another to do something.

Chu Feng couldn't help lightly smiling, and said, "Is there something you want to say to me?"

"Yeah! Big Brother Chu Feng, Zi Ling has something she wants to say to you," Jiang Wushang said as he chuckled.

"That's right, that's right! Zi Ling has something she wants to discuss with you," Zhang Tianyi said, also with a smile.

"You..."

Zi Ling curled her lips at their shameless actions, and couldn't help but cast her gaze toward Su Rou and Su Mei.

But who'd expect them to just stand and giggle on the spot, not saying anything for Zi Ling. Clearly, those two also wanted Zi Ling to be the one to speak.

"Zi Ling, if all of you have something you want to say, then just go ahead. What worries would you have with me?" Chu Feng could instantly tell that they had something to discuss with him, and it was also something that was difficult to speak of.

"Chu Feng, do you know in a few months, the Heavenly Road to the Holy Land of Martialism will open?" Zi Ling asked, seeing that Chu Feng himself had spoken.

"Oh? The Heavenly Road will open? I truly didn't know." Chu Feng felt rather surprised. Ever since coming to the Eastern Sea Region, he'd always had his heart on saving Zi Ling and Qiu Canfeng, so he truly didn't think much of the Heavenly Road.

"The Heavenly Road opens every year, and right now, there's no longer any need to remain in the Eastern Sea Region. We've come here today

because we want you to enter the Heavenly Road with us,” Zi Ling said again.

“Enter the Heavenly Road? You’re preparing to head towards the Holy Land of Martialism this year?” Chu Feng was taken aback. He indeed viewed the Holy Land of Martialism as a goal of his, and the Heavenly Road was also confirmed to be a path he had to walk on because it likely concealed the mystery of his ancestry inside.

However, Chu Feng didn’t think of entering the Heavenly Road so early, because he still had one thing he hadn’t taken care of—he hadn’t saved Qiu Canfeng yet.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, didn’t we say before we would go to the Holy Land of Martialism together? It’s time now,” Jiang Wushang said as well, seeing a bit of hesitation in Chu Feng.

“Junior Chu Feng, there is no benefit in staying in the Eastern Sea Region at this present time. Rather than surviving in this place with fear of danger and ambushes perpetually, why not head to the Holy Land of Martialism and experience the world?” Zhang Tianyi said.

“Yeah! Big Brother Chu Feng, didn’t you and Senior Qiushui already see a person from the Holy Land of Martialism? Although I haven’t personally seen them, I can tell from your descriptions that the people in the Eastern Sea Region are really no match for those from the Holy Land of Martialism.

“We are both of the younger generation. Yet, we’re still in the Heaven realm, while they’re already Martial Kings. From this, it can be seen that the Holy Land of Martialism is the true place for breeding geniuses. We shouldn’t limit our horizons anymore. It’s time to check out that place.” Jiang Wushang’s face was also one of yearning.

“You should know why I have come to the Eastern Sea Region.” Chu Feng’s face expressed his difficult standing.

“Of course we know! However, Junior Chu Feng, that Crippling Night Demon Sect doesn’t care about loyalty, so you truly don’t have to work so hard for them. Just leave them to their own lives,” Zhang Tianyi urged.

“I know Chu Feng is a very logical person. He is certainly also furious that the Crippling Night Demon Sect treated him like this. But, he’s not willing to leave, so he definitely has some sort of trouble we don’t know of. Chu Feng, am I right?” Just at that moment, Zi Ling spoke again.

Chu Feng relievedly nodded his head at her words, then said, “Indeed, I don’t need to care about the Crippling Night Demon Sect anymore due to their treatment. However, I became a disciple to one of the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s Four Protectors, Qiu Canfeng. I promised I would save him, and even though I can sever my relationship with the Crippling Night Demon Sect, I cannot ignore my master, Qiu Canfeng!”

“Does this mean if Qiu Canfeng is saved, you can rid yourself of the Crippling Night Demon Sect?” After Chu Feng spoke, a faint chuckle rang out outside the door.

When they looked over, Chu Feng was instantly taken aback.

Chapter 898 - Sister

MGA: Chapter 898 - Sister

“Senior Qiushui, you...”

After a temporary moment of daze, Chu Feng’s complexion suddenly turned to joy. He said, “Senior Qiushui, congratulations.”

At that very instant, the one entering the palace was no outsider—it was Qiushui Fuyan.

However, not only was her complexion rosy, she was full of smiles. Even her aura was several times more powerful. She had made a breakthrough—she had successfully become a rank two Martial King.

“Congratulations, Senior Qiushui! You’ve succeeded!” At the same time, Zi Ling and the others also sent their congratulations. Although their detection strength wasn’t as strong as Chu Feng’s, they knew Qiushui Fuyan had been successful due to Chu Feng’s reactions.

“After so many times, it’s time that I succeed. Otherwise, I would have disgraced the title of the Burning Heaven Church’s Holy Daughter.” Qiushui Fuyan beautifully smiled, so much it even moved one’s hearts. One could tell she was very happy because of her success.

“However, Chu Feng, I’ve heard your conversation just now. You should have told me about Qiu Canfeng earlier! Do you think I wouldn’t help you?”

“You don’t need to waste so much effort finding that Fu Liansheng. I can help you save your Senior Qiu Canfeng. Even putting aside you, there is a bit of a friendship between me and him. He’s in trouble right now, so I won’t do nothing about it,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

Chu Feng's eyes lit up when he heard that, but then couldn't help but cast his gaze at Zi Ling.

When he was conversing with Zi Ling and the others, though he had mentioned Qiu Canfeng, he had never said he was going to look for Fu Liansheng and ask him to save Qiu Canfeng.

Chu Feng had only told Zi Ling alone the entire story in detail, and now, Qiushui Fuyan clearly knew about the "Fu Liansheng" part, though he had never told her. She definitely didn't overhear it accidentally, but knew it beforehand.

That pointed Chu Feng directly at the reason—quite obviously, Zi Ling had also told Qiushui Fuyan the story, and the reason Qiushui Fuyan came to this place today was by no coincidence. They had planned this out beforehand, and their goal was to convince Chu Feng to abandon the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"Chu Feng, don't blame me! I just don't want you continue risking your life! Besides, Senior Qiushui has treated us so well, so we shouldn't hide it from her," Zi Ling quickly explained honestly, seeing that Chu Feng saw through her little scheme.

"Chu Feng, I asked Zi Ling this on my own accord. Don't blame her.

"As for you, you truly shouldn't have hid it from me. Isn't it just saving Qiu Canfeng? Rather than taking a risk to get into contact with Fu Liansheng, and being beaten up by the Crippling Night Demon Sect, why not just ask me for help? You wouldn't doubt me, would you?" Qiushui Fuyan said.

"Senior Qiushui, it's not that I don't trust you, but you've really given me too much help. I truly don't want to trouble you anymore. Besides, this is truly a bit complicated.

"First of all, my master Qiu Canfeng clearly said to ask Fu Liansheng for help. Other than him, he forbade me from telling anyone else. In the end,

this is something related to the core of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Outsiders shouldn't interfere, and I should listen to him as well.

“Furthermore, my master is imprisoned in an Imperial Tomb. I had personally experienced the danger there, and to be honest, even though Senior Huangfu was so powerful, he was still agitated within the Imperial Tomb. So... I truly don't want you to risk your life just to help me,” Chu Feng said with an apologetic face.

“Even if it's more dangerous, so what? And even if I cannot save Qiu Canfeng, Lady Piaomiao could, right? Would she be inferior to that Fu Liansheng?” Qiushui Fuyan said a bit displeasedly.

“Senior Qiushui, you mean...?” Chu Feng's heart was incomparably excited. He knew what she was trying to say.

“When Lady Piaomiao finishes, I will tell her about this. Isn't it just saving Qiu Canfeng? To her, it is an easy task. You don't need to spend so much effort to get closer to the Crippling Night Demon Sect,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Senior Qiushui, this... Truly, how should I thank you?” The emotions in Chu Feng's heart truly reached a peak after Qiushui Fuyan spoke. Of course he hoped Lady Piaomiao could rescue Qiu Canfeng.

However, Lady Piaomiao had a very odd nature. Even though she had helped Chu Feng greatly, there always seemed to be a barrier between them. That made a certain gap appear in his heart between himself and Lady Piaomiao, and thus she was less close to him than Qiushui Fuyan.

Besides, Qiu Canfeng was a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Who knew if Lady Piaomiao would be willing to save him or not?

However, Chu Feng could tell that the relationship between Qiushui Fuyan and Lady Piaomiao was not ordinary at all. At least, the two of them were very close to each other, and thus they also had a certain understanding of one another.

There was quite a large gap in age between the two; one gave others a feeling of guile, and the other gave others a feeling of liveliness and amiability. They were simply two different people.

However, they were indeed friends. Although nearly undetectable, Chu Feng could still tell their relationship was truly very good. Since Qiushui Fuyan had spoken like that, then Lady Piaomiao was most likely going to help.

If it were before, perhaps asking her for help wasn't the best choice, but at this very moment, it was most definitely the best decision.

As long as Qiu Canfeng could be saved, then he likely had his own plans regarding the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Chu Feng wouldn't need to wade through such muddy waters.

As for the Immortal Execution Archipelago, this common enemy, Chu Feng could just ignore them after saving Zi Ling.

Chu Feng had brutally beaten up Murong Xun, and took away his Royal Armament, and even "slept" with his fiancée and sister. On the other hand, Murong Xun hadn't even touched Zi Ling. He hadn't even seen her.

So, in the end, Chu Feng hadn't suffered much from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and quite oppositely, the Immortal Execution Archipelago had suffered quite a bit due to him.

Chu Feng had no need to take huge risks and continue fighting the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Rather than risking his life in the Eastern Sea Region, why not just leave this disaster zone with Zi Ling and the others?

"Chu Feng, although there are great dangers inside the Heavenly Road, the mystery of your ancestry is most likely hidden inside. I feel that you must enter it.

"As for the risks of the Heavenly Road, I have told Zi Ling and the others about it. However, they've insisted on following. To have lovers and

brothers who are willing to accompany you, I feel that you should not reject their kindness.

“After Lady Piaomiao finishes concocting the pellet and cures the Heaven Gripping Pellet in Zi Ling’s body, I will tell her about saving Qiu Canfeng. Then, I will search for Huangfu Haoyue. After finding him, I’ll heal his injuries and restore his mind. At that time, we can also ask him a few things about the Heavenly Road.

“If this can all be finished before the Heavenly Road opens, there’s no need for any of you to continue waiting here. Just enter the Heavenly Road this year then,” Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile.

“Sorry to trouble you then, Senior Qiushui.” Chu Feng was truly grateful for what she did, because Qiushui Fuyan had already planned out their future.

“Thank you, Senior Qiushui!” At the same time, Zi Ling and the others thanked Qiushui Fuyan.

“Don’t start talking and calling me ‘senior’ here and there. It’s not like I’m all that older than you. If you don’t mind, then just call me sister,” Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile.

Chu Feng and the others, who were in a great mood and felt endless gratitude, didn’t even think before saying in unison, “Sister!”

bang However, as they were amidst such joy, the door that Chu Feng had closed was suddenly kicked open. The amount of force put into that kick was quite powerful, and it immediately shattered the door.

Chapter 899 - The Invasion of an Army

MGA: Chapter 899 - The Invasion of an Army

Such an abrupt situation shocked everyone.

However, when they looked towards the exit, they were shocked even more, because the ones who broke down the door weren't any stranger, but Chun Wu and Xia Yu.

At that moment, their faces were full of panic. One could even say Chu Feng had never seen them with such panicked expressions before. After seeing Qiushui Fuyan, they acted as if they saw their savior. They said, together, "Senior Qiushui, this is bad!"

"What happened? Did something go wrong with Lady Piaomiao when she was concocting the pellet?" Qiushui Fuyan asked upon seeing their anxious expressions.

"No. She's fine, but the situation right now seems to be even worse," Xia Yu said.

"What exactly happened? Tell me in detail," Qiushui Fuyan quickly asked.

"Senior Qiushui, I can't explain this in short. It's best that you follow us." Chun Wu immediately turned around and ran down the peak. Seeing that, Qiushui Fuyan quickly followed, and as for Chu Feng and the others, they too followed.

With Chun Wu leading the way, all of them arrived at the centermost peak of the Misty Peak. On it, there was an enormous palace. Outside that palace, Chu Feng saw Qiu Zhu, Dong Xue, and even Yan Ruyu.

However, they were not the only ones there. On that peak, everyone with high positions was there. All the experts on the Misty Peak had gathered there. They stood orderly, with a battle-ready appearance.

At that moment, Qiushui Fuyan had realized how serious this was. She did not stop, and instead, stepped directly into the palace. As for Chu Feng and the others, they also stepped in.

After they entered the palace, Chu Feng's eyes lit up because there was a very profound formation there. To be more precise, it was a very special Formation Aperture.

On the outside of that Formation Aperture, there were thirty-eight elders sitting cross-legged. They all had snow-white hair, and faces full of wrinkles. Judging by their appearances, one knew they had at least lived for over a hundred years. Their cultivations were not that weak either—they were all peak Martial Lords. With just a step forward in cultivation, they would be able to become Martial Kings.

Chu Feng had never seen those elders before, and as such it could be seen that they had always been guarding this Formation Aperture and didn't take even half a step away from this place.

When looking towards the aperture, Chu Feng discovered it was truly quite mystical. Within it, Chu Feng could see the strength of the formation. After detailed observation, Chu Feng could even see a picture inside—a map.

Typical people would simply be confused by the content of that map, but Chu Feng understood. He could see several symbols within the map.

The Misty Peak, Teleportation Array... Nearly everything within the borders of the Misty Peak was clearly indicated on the map. Even the sea beasts swimming at the bottom of the sea and the birds flying through the air were clearly shown in the Formation Aperture.

It not only indicated all living beings within the borders of the Misty Peak, even the living beings outside were indicated. Moreover, based off of their

strength, they differed in colour.

At that very instant, innumerable living beings appeared in every single direction around the Misty Peak. They were like an army of ants as they flew towards the Misty Peak with extremely quick speed.

Moreover, due to the dark-red colours, Chu Feng knew there were also many Martial Kings within the army flocking forth from every single direction.

“Activate the formation!” Qiushui Fuyan explosively shouted.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh After her words, the thirty-eight elders all opened their eyes in unison, their hands quickly changing as they endlessly cast unique spells, which finally formed a seal. After a light shout, the Formation Aperture started to change.

boom rumble rumble

Chu Feng and the others felt a faint tremble beneath their feet. Casting their gazes to the outside, they discovered several enormous Spirit Formations surging in the sky. It sealed the entire Misty Peak—it was a defensive formation.

“Senior Qiushui, what do we do? It seems that there’s an army coming to invade the Misty Peak.” Chun Wu and the others heaved a sigh of relief after seeing the activation of the defensive formation. However, the fear on their faces did not diminish.

“We are not certain whether they are enemy or ally. I will first go notify your master.” As Qiushui Fuyan spoke, she prepared to head off.

“Northwest direction, there is army invading our borders.”

“Northeast direction, there is army invading our borders.”

“Southwest direction, there is army invading our borders.”

“Southeast direction, there is army invading our borders.”

“ ... ”

However, before Qiushui Fuyan left the palace, the thirty-eight elders surrounding the Formation Aperture all started speaking.

When she turned her head around to look, Qiushui Fuyan's expression changed greatly because only then from the map, a dense body of people entering the borders of the Misty Peak from every single direction. They were nearing the Misty Peak.

whoosh When she saw that, Qiushui Fuyan didn't hesitate. She leapt out and disappeared.

“Stay here, don't go anywhere.” After Chu Feng left those words behind for Zi Ling and the others, he left the palace and went straight for the peak's entrance.

However, Zi Ling and the others who realized that there was something wrong didn't listen to Chu Feng's words. They also followed Chu Feng and ran towards the entrance.

“Heavens, this...” After they arrived at the entrance to the Misty Peak, Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, and everyone else were instantly stupefied.

At that very instant, several miles away, the dense body of people had surrounded the entire Misty Peak.

They were many people there—at least several tens of millions. Most importantly, of that army of people, the weakest were at the peak of the Heaven realm, while the rest were all Martial Lords.

There were simply innumerable peak Martial Lords, and there were even several Martial Kings.

The group with the largest number of people all wore the same clothing. Everyone recognized who they were—they were from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Other than the Immortal Execution Archipelago's army, there were also many people from other forces. Clearly, they were the ones who had allied with them.

Other than humans, there were even many other Monstrous Beasts. Of those, the ones that caught the eye the most were the huge birds swirling around in the sky, bodies ablaze. They were the Inferno Divine Bird clan, one of the Three Great Monstrous Clans.

Other than them, there were also monsters with bodies akin to rock. One could not see their facial features, and could only see their blood-red eyes. The smallest was still over a dozen meters tall, and the tallest were dozens of meters tall. When they stood in the air, they were like a mountain peak that had been plucked into the sky. They seemed indestructible as they deterred the world.

Without even thinking, one could tell they were another powerful Monstrous Beast clan of the Three Great Monstrous Clans, the Boulder Mutation Beast clan.

“Look, there are also things in the water!” Suddenly, Su Mei shouted as she pointed at the surging waves.

Looking over, there were indeed peculiar bodies swimming within the surging waves. Those things seemed like fishes, yet also like beasts. Their blood-red scales throughout their bodies did make them seem ugly; however, their aura was extremely powerful.

Even the Monstrous Beasts that lived in this sea, after seeing them, let out cries and quickly evaded. From that, one could tell how terrifying these blood-coloured odd fishes were.

They were naturally no ordinary sea beasts. They were one of the Three Great Monstrous Clans of the Eastern Sea Region, the Blood-Scale Monstrous Fish clan.

Today, not only did the Immortal Execution Archipelago arrive, even the Three Great Monstrous Clans had come.

Chapter 900 - Horrifying Formation

MGA: Chapter 900 - Horrifying Formation

“Not only the Immortal Execution Archipelago, even the Three Great Monstrous Clans have come?”

“Could it be... Could it be that the Three Great Monstrous Clans have already allied with the Immortal Execution Archipelago?” When she looked at the figures in the sky and in the sea, Dong Xue felt very shocked. She couldn't even help but trembled slightly. One could tell how scared she was.

“Is there even a need to ask? The Three Great Monstrous Clans have always kept a low profile and they've never participated in the battles between humans. Today, they've pretty much sent out their entire battle strength by sending so many experts here.

“Without much thinking, they've definitely already allied with the Immortal Execution Archipelago. It seems that this time, they have truly not come with any kind intentions.” Although Xia Yu did not panic as much as Dong Xue, she still knitted her brows tightly as her eyes were filled with uneasiness.

“It's you! They must have come here to capture you! Get out, don't drag us down with you!” After hearing that, Dong Xue felt even more afraid. She directly pointed all the blame towards Chu Feng as she fiercely shouted at him.

“Senior Dong Xue, this is not the time for internal arguments. Besides, our master is still here. Even though they are large in numbers, we may not need to be afraid of them. You don't need to be so nervous,” Qiu Zhu urged.

“Senior Qiu Zhu is correct. Master is the one who will decide what to do. Who needs you to talk so much?” Chun Wu berated and coldly snorted.

“You...” Dong Xue felt furious at Chun Wu’s words, but her current fear greatly overwhelmed her anger. So, she did not argue with Chun Wu. Instead, she kept on looking behind her, awaiting Lady Piaomiao appearance.

The army outside was really too powerful. Not only were there many people, they were all cultivation experts—over several tens of millions of cultivation experts. They covered up the entire sky; it was really too horrifying.

Even though the people here had seen quite a bit of the world, they had never seen such a formation of people. It would most definitely be a lie to say they were not afraid.

After all, the Immortal Execution Archipelago was the publicly recognized number one force in the Eastern Sea Region.

As for the Three Great Monstrous Clans, they had always been low-profile and rarely associated with humans. They had always just guarded their own land, and it wouldn’t be wrong to say they were cut off from the world.

However, their strength was undoubtable. Right now, the Immortal Execution Archipelago had allied with the Three Great Monstrous Clans and they had come here together. Who could stop them? Even though their Misty Peak’s defensive formations were firm, even though their strength was powerful, the crowd’s hearts were lacking of confidence.

Despite being calm on the surface, nearly everyone’s hearts were drumming. Fear and uneasiness were the emotions echoing within their hearts.

Chu Feng did not mind Dong Xue and the others’ remarks, because he simply didn’t have the mind to bother with them. He was carefully

observing the army that had arrived at the Misty Peak, and what sort of power it had.

There was a total of five Martial Kings from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

One of them was the Sixth Immortal, and Chu Feng could not possibly be more familiar with him. At that moment, he was standing there in perfect condition. Which meant the Forbidden Medicines he consumed back then didn't do much damage to him. At least, his injuries should have all recovered since he was prepared for battle.

There was another who was also a rank one Martial King like the Sixth Immortal. Chu Feng hadn't seen this person before, but judging by the strength of his aura, Chu Feng felt he was very possibly the Seventh Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Back then, Chun Wu's report stated the Immortal Execution Archipelago sent their Martial Kings to the Depraved Ravine, and one of them was this Seventh Immortal. However, for some reason, he hadn't appeared, which was why the battle dragged out, leading to Chu Feng activating the formation and bringing victory for the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Today, he had finally seen the appearance of this Seventh Immortal.

At that moment, by the sides of the Sixth and Seventh Immortal, there were two more elders who wore the robes of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They were quite old, but they were not rank one Martial Kings, but rank two Martial Kings.

Although they were rank two Martial Kings, their auras were a bit weaker than the Third Immortal who fought Tantai Xue back then in the Burning Heaven Church. So, Chu Feng deduced that they were likely the Fourth and Fifth Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's Nine Immortals, only seven remained, and today, four had appeared.

As for why only four and not five, it was because the remaining Martial King from the Immortal Execution Archipelago clearly wasn't one of the Nine Immortals.

That old man also had white hair, but there wasn't a single wrinkle on his face. He appeared especially spirited, and the clothes he wore were also different from the others.

Although they were different, there was still a symbol of the Immortal Execution Archipelago sown into them. The hat on his head was even quite similar to a crown, and on it there was also the symbol of an Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Most importantly, that old man's aura was extremely powerful, even more powerful than You Mingdeng. Since he did not conceal his aura, Chu Feng could tell his strength was far above the four Immortals—he was a rank five Martial King.

With such powerful strength, his special and noble clothing, his overbearing hat, and also the respectful attitude from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, without much thought, Chu Feng knew who that person was.

Most definitely, he was Murong Xun's father, the master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Niekong!

Other than the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, there were also many experts from the Three Great Monstrous Clans.

The two Protectors of the Inferno Divine Bird clan had come, and other than those two, there were also three Martial Kings. Of those, two were rank two Martial Kings, and the last one was a rank four Martial King. They wore clothing made out of golden feathers, and their auras were extraordinary. He had an air that was equal to Murong Niekong, and likely he was the chief of the Inferno Divine Bird clan.

As for the Boulder Mutation Beast clan and the Blood-Scale Monstrous Fish clan, they brought even more Martial Kings than the Inferno Divine

Bird clan and the Immortal Execution Archipelago—they both brought six Martial Kings.

Of those, two were also rank four Martial Kings. Judging by their special and noble clothings as well, different from the other clan members, one could tell that the chiefs from those two clans had also come.

The strongest from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans had all come. That formation was very horrifying.

However, Chu Feng also noticed within that army, there was another person. That person made Chu Feng feel even more uneasy.

It was a young man, and at that moment, he was standing behind all those Martial Kings, beside Murong Xun. His position did not attract much attention, but that man, who Chu Feng hadn't met before, made the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago look inferior in every possible area.

That man's age was definitely less than thirty—he was even younger than Murong Xun.

Moreover, he was not only robust, his face was rather handsome as well. His sharp brows especially made him seem full of courage—much more than Murong Xun.

Most importantly, although his aura was concealed, Chu Feng discovered he was a rank four Martial King. His aura was extremely strong as well, even stronger than the chiefs from the Three Great Monstrous Clans. To have such cultivation at such age was simply unimaginable.